Sisters of the Holy Cross.

St. Mary's Library

Notre Dame, Indiana.

No. 540
b251

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2025

https://archive.org/details/peoplesnaturalhi0000unse

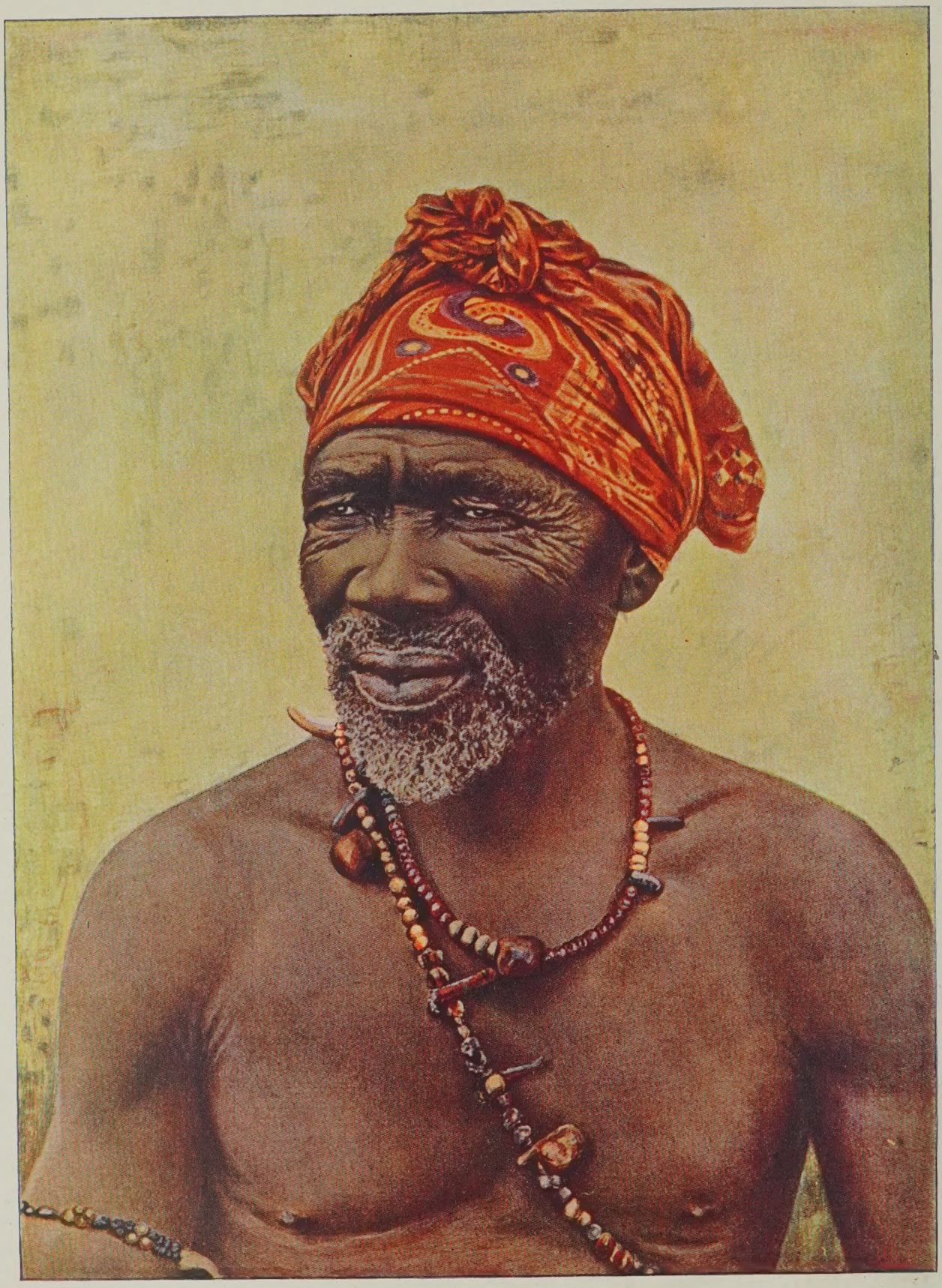


Photo by G. W. Wilson] *[Aberdeen.*

A SOUTH AFRICAN MEDICINE-MAN.

4460
Notre Dame

THE PEOPLE'S

Natural History

EMBRACING

Living Animals of the World
and Living Races of Mankind

EDITORS AND SPECIAL CONTRIBUTORS:

Charles J. Cornish, F. C. Selous, Ernest Ingersoll, Sir Harry Johnston, K.C.B.,
Sir Herbert Maxwell, F.R.S., H. N. Hutchinson, F.R.G.S.,
J. W. Gregory, F.G.S., R. Lydekker, F.R.S.,
F.Z.S., and many other eminent
naturalists

Nearly Two Thousand Illustrations

Vol. V

AFRICA—EUROPE—AMERICA

1903
THE UNIVERSITY SOCIETY
NEW YORK

Copyright, 1901–1902
By DODD, MEAD AND COMPANY

Copyright, 1902
By THE UNIVERSITY SOCIETY

GLAC
P41
1 5
A-4 3 -

CHAPTER XII.

AFRICA: INTRODUCTORY—THE PYGMY OR NEGRILLO RACES—THE PEOPLE OF MADAGASCAR.

a. INTRODUCTORY.

THE peoples of Africa include representatives of each of the three principal divisions of mankind. Africa is the main home of the Negro: its northern and north-eastern regions are occupied by members of the Caucasian group; while the third division, the Mongolian, is represented by the dominant people of Madagascar, who are Malays. To these three groups it is convenient to add a fourth for the Bushmen of South Africa and the pygmies of Equatorial Africa, whose exact relations are uncertain. The study of the African peoples is accordingly complicated, especially since difficulties are introduced by the scarcity of historical evidence, our comparative ignorance of important tribes, the wide extent of nomadism, the continual intermixture of alien races, and the destruction of tribes by war and famine. The typical members of the three groups show definite, distinctive characters. The broad-nosed, thick-lipped, curly-haired, dark-brown native of the Congo is unquestionably a Negro; the intellectual-looking, straight-nosed, thin-lipped, small-chinned, long-haired Berber is as clearly a Caucasian; the Hova of Madagascar is as manifestly a Mongol. But the races as a whole have not kept true; the intermingling of the border tribes and intermarriage with slaves captured in war have resulted in the formation of intermediate races, whose characters are mixed. It is difficult, for example, to know whether the Waganda should be regarded as a Negro race which has been altered by Caucasian immigration, or as a Caucasian race altered by the absorption of Negro blood.

It is accordingly impossible to mark off sharply the boundaries of the different racial divisions in Africa. But in a general way their distribution can be fairly well defined. The Bushmen occur in the extreme south, and range northward along the western side of the continent to about the twentieth degree of south latitude. The pygmy tribes are scattered over the Equatorial belt from the west coast almost to the east coast, while there is said to be one tribe in Southern Morocco. The Negroes are divided into four groups: the Bantu, ranging from the Cape to near the Equator; the Guinea Negroes, in Western Africa, from Senegal to the Niger Delta; the Equatorial Negroes, occurring in a series of disconnected areas across Africa, from the Gabun to Mount Kenya; and the Nilotic Negroes, living in the Upper Nile Basin, on the eastern shore of the Victoria Nyanza, and southward along the Rift Valley to Kilima Njaro. The Caucasian race is represented by two divisions: the more important is the Hamitic, including the Gallas, Somali, some of the Abyssinians, and the tribes

Photo by Dr. Fritsch.
A BUSHMAN.

Photo by Dr. Fritsch.
A BUSHMAN.

JUL 29 '90

Photo by Dr. Fritsch.
A BUSHMAN (PROFILE).

along the African shore of the Red Sea; the second division is the Semitic, members of which live in Algeria, Tunis, Tripoli, the Sahara, Soudan, Abyssinia, and parts of the Nile Valley. Finally, nearly the whole of Madagascar is occupied by Malay tribes known as Malagasi, who almost everywhere show a strain of Negro blood.

b. THE PYGMY OR NEGRILLO RACES.

It has only been during the past forty years that any definite knowledge concerning dwarf tribes has come to us by the discovery of the dwarfs in the backwoods of Loango. A tribe known as the Akoa was shortly afterwards discovered in the Gabun, and another, the Obongo, in the Ogowe. Farther east Stanley discovered the Batwa in the great forests of the Congo; Schweinfurth studied some dwarfs, whom he called Akka, in the Mangbattu country, a part of the Congo Basin close to the Nile Watershed; while from 1844 onward various reports have been published of dwarfs in Abyssinia and British East Africa. These tribes occur scattered along the Equatorial belt of Africa; and there are doubtful records of others living as far north as Morocco, of some extending southward from the Congo and linking the Equatorial pygmies to the Bushmen of the Cape, and of the Wazimba, a race that once inhabited Madagascar.

The Bushmen.

The most southerly of the small light-coloured races is that known as the Bushmen, or Saans; or, as some call themselves, the "Khwai," or men. They are now scattered over the region south of a line from Walfish Bay in lat. 22° S. to lat. 17° in the Zambesi Valley, and thence southward past Lake Ngami and Bechuanaland to the south-eastern coast near Port Elizabeth. In this area the Bushmen are scattered very irregularly. They have been almost exterminated in Cape Colony in punishment for their habit of sheep-stealing; and throughout South Africa their numbers have been greatly reduced. At one time the race was more numerous and more widely distributed. A Dutch ship under "Corporal Thomas Hobma" found them in 1767 all along the west coast as far north as 12° 47′ S. lat. The Bechuanas call the country to the west of them "Baroa"—that is, "the country of the Bushmen"—though it is now occupied by Negroes. There can, in fact, be no doubt that they once occurred throughout the whole of Africa south of the Zambesi, and they may have extended farther northward.

The number of the race now living is uncertain. They are estimated at about 2,000 in German South-west Africa. There are a few in Griqualand and scattered along the Orange River. They are most numerous in the Kalahari, where they number about 5,000. The total number in South Africa has been calculated at about 50,000. But this estimate is certainly exaggerated by the inclusion of many peoples who, though called Bushmen, are either Negroes or Negro half-breeds. Livingstone, for example, described as Bushmen some men in the Kalahari Desert, who, being 6 feet high, were more probably half-caste Bantu. It is difficult to settle the exact limits of the Bushman range, owing to the existence of half-breed races. Schulz has recently declared (1897) that "there are but few families of pure Bushmen surviving at present, and these are fast degenerating through intermarriage with outside

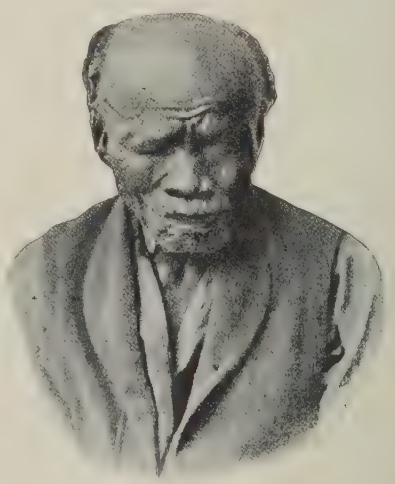


Photo by Dr. Fritsch.
A BUSHMAN (FULL-FACE).

4460

MAP SHOWING THE DISTRIBUTION OF AFRICAN RACES.

Photo by Dr. Fritsch.
A PYGMY WOMAN (FRONT VIEW).

elements, thus justifying the prediction that the Bushmen proper will shortly be an extinct race."

The evidence of Corporal Hobma that the Bushmen were already known in the eighteenth century is sufficient to disprove the theory, advocated by a well-known missionary, Dr. Phillips, that the Bushmen are Hottentots who have become degenerate owing to the confiscation of their cattle by the Dutch settlers. It is true that in language and physical characters the Bushmen are allied to the Hottentots; but the resemblances are due to the fact that the Hottentots are a hybrid race, formed by the intermarriage of the aboriginal Bushmen with the Negro immigrants.

The chief physical characteristics of the Bushmen are as follows:—The most conspicuous feature is their shortness of stature. Fritsch, the author of the most important monograph on the race, states that the average height is 4 feet 9 inches. Some of the Bushmen living in the Kalahari Desert are a few inches taller, ranging from 4 feet 11 inches to 5 feet. Barrow, however, records the average as 4 feet for the women and 4 feet 6 inches for the men, a difference between the sexes which is certainly exaggerated. The colour of the skin is much lighter than that of Negroes; the tint is yellowish or reddish. The head is said by most South African travellers to be short and broad and well rounded, and thus differs from the Negroes, in which the head is long. The forehead is broad and bulging; the cheek-bones are prominent; the eyes are small, deeply set, and slightly oblique, with a sly and roguish aspect. The lips are thick and projecting, while the chin is small and receding. The arrangement of the hair is very characteristic; instead of being evenly distributed over the top and back of the head, it occurs in small isolated tufts, which look like peppercorns scattered over the head; as Schulz describes it, "the hair is tufted in woolly, curling islets on the skull, showing bare spaces of scalp shining between the agglomerated lumps of wool."

Photo by Dr. Fritsch.
A PYGMY WOMAN (SIDE VIEW).

Another well-marked feature in the Bushmen is that the buttocks are very large and projecting, owing to a thick accumulation of fat. This character is no doubt useful, as it acts as a reserve store of food, which can be drawn upon by the body during periods of famine. Similar fatty developments occur in some animals, which live through their period of hibernation on stores of reserve fat, the disappearance of which causes so great a difference in the appearance of the animals that specimens collected at different seasons have been described as distinct species.

The dress of the Bushmen is very primitive. The most elaborate native article of clothing is a *kaross*, or cloak of skins, which is hung over the shoulders. But very often the only garment worn is a flap of skin passed between the legs and tied round the waist by a thong.

Their ornaments are also primitive, and consist of simple beads and rings made from brass wire, belts of leather adorned with shells or teeth, and feathers or the tails of small mammals worn in the hair. The women paint their faces red. The main Bushman weapon is the bow and arrow, in the use of which they are more expert than the average Negro; but as the arrows are not feathered, their range is short. The

arrows are deadly because their iron heads are smeared with a poison extracted from the poison-fangs of snakes or prepared from an insect-larva. The poison is mixed with the gum-like secretion from the Euphorbia, a plant allied to the English spurge. The Bushmen also use long-bladed spears, with which they kill the lion and elephant.

As the tribe is essentially nomadic, its dwellings are of the simplest kind. The only permanent places of residence are caves and rock-shelters. Some sections of the tribe erect small, low, circular huts; but they mainly use open bivouacs and shelters of mats and skins suspended on sticks, under the lee of which they crouch during bad weather. The caves and rock-shelters are adorned with drawings and paintings, which are usually silhouettes, but sometimes accurately drawn in perspective. The subjects are mainly men and animals: as the men are sometimes shown armed with guns, and include red-coated soldiers, some of the drawings date from the present century; others are probably very much earlier. The animals figured are the elephant, rhinoceros, baboon, lion, giraffe, and various kinds of antelope. The drawings are often so accurate that the species delineated can be precisely determined. Thus there are Bushman drawings of the square-nosed rhinoceros in districts where that animal has not been known to occur within historic times. The figures are coloured black, red, brown, or terra-cotta. It has been suggested that these drawings are a kind of picture-writing like that of the North American Indians; it is thought that the Bushmen thus left messages to subsequent visitors to the district. This idea receives a certain measure of support from the fact that many of the pictures are formed of conventional signs, men being represented by pairs of legs or by purely diagrammatic figures.

Photo by Richard Buchta.
AN AKKA GIRL (FRONT VIEW).

As a rule the Bushmen have no domestic animals; some clans in the Kalahari have dogs, and some keep goats; but the Bushmen of other districts will not eat goat-flesh. With this exception the people will eat anything that is edible. Their main food is game. They follow the herds as these migrate with the changes of the rainy season, and kill what they want with their poisoned arrows. Zebra are difficult to stalk; but they are killed by poisoning the pools where they drink with Euphorbia juice. The poison is almost immediately fatal to zebra, though not to men and some other animals. Ostriches are killed by an ingenious use of a stalking-bird. The hunter paints his legs yellow and covers his body with an ostrich-skin; in this disguise he quietly walks up to a flock when it is feeding, which, thus deceived, allows the man to get within arrow-range. When large game fails, the people live on locusts and the bodies and eggs of the white ants. This food-supply is supplemented by wild beans and roots: the latter are dug up with a hardened, pointed stick, weighted by being passed through a hole in a round, heavy stone, fastened near the point. The Bushmen eat putrid meat with impunity.

The social system of the Bushmen is anarchic in its simplicity. The tribe has no chief or political organisation of any kind. Each group is independent, and is not constituted on even a definite family basis. The family tie, in fact, is extremely loose. It has been said that there are no terms in the Bushman language to distinguish between married and unmarried women. According to some travellers, there is no regular marriage rite or system, the girls being simply adopted as wives by the men when they reach a sufficient age. But at least in some sections of the race there is a definite marriage ceremony, for some time after which a man may not

see the face of his wife, and he is only allowed to visit her in the dark. But even among these clans the marriage tie is very loose, and a community of wives prevails.

The true Bushmen have a certain belief in fetish and in a future life. Livingstone records that at a grave on the Zouga (a river that flows into Lake Ngami) the Bushmen "showed by their observances that they regarded the dead as still in another state of being; for they addressed him, and requested him not to be offended, even though they wished still to remain a little while longer in this world." Livingstone also records their habit of appealing for guidance to spirits by throwing dice. But Livingstone used the term Bushman very loosely, and accepted as members of that race men who must have been Negroes, or at least half-breeds. It has indeed been asserted that the true Bushmen have no religious ideas whatever. But this is improbable, as their folklore contains many references to spirits and the existence of men and animals after death. Moreover, the fact that the Bushmen bury a spear beside the dead shows that they have a belief in an existence beyond the grave. They are said to have a proverb, "Death is only a slumber." They believe in two gods, one good and one evil: they pray to the former in times of famine; but before the chase they pray to the caterpillar, which they call *n'go*, from which they extract one of their arrow-poisons.

Their folklore is remarkably rich in fables about animals of the "Uncle Remus" and "Brer Rabbit" type. It also contains many references to astronomical phenomena. Thus, according to one of their legends, the star Arcturus supplies them with rice; they say that light originated by a man being hurled from the earth into space, the Magellanic clouds, the two star-clusters beside the Southern Cross, are believed to be a pair of steinbok, a species of antelope.

Photo by Richard Buchta.

AN AKKA GIRL (SIDE VIEW).

The Bushman language has a very extensive vocabulary. Its most interesting feature is the existence of a number of clicks, sounds that have been compared to those made by coachmen to quicken the pace of horses. To a European these sounds are practically unpronounceable as part of a word. There are six main clicks, which are represented by conventional signs when the language is reduced to writing. The "cerebral click" is compared to the pop of a cork when drawn from a bottle, and it is represented by a note of exclamation; thus the word for "fox" is written "*! kamap*," indicating that such a pop-like sound must be made at the beginning of the word. The "palatal click," represented by the sign ‡ or ¡, may be imitated by pressing the tip of the tongue against the front of the palate and suddenly withdrawing it. The "labial click" is made by rapidly moving the tongue, as in flute-playing, while a word is being spoken. The "lateral click" is compared to the quack of a duck, and the "dental" click is like a loud, sharp kiss.

The Angola Dwarfs.

To the north of the Bushman clans of British South Africa and Damaraland there are several pygmy tribes in the forest region of Angola. The best known of these tribes is the Bakwando, who are described as a small people, with dark yellow skin, big cheek-bones, prominent lips, small legs, and projecting jaws. In physical characters, therefore, as far

as the description goes, these people resemble the Bushmen; but their mode of life is different, for they have no weapons and cannot hunt. They live in sheltered positions along the coast, and creep down to the sea to fish and collect anything edible thrown upon the shore. The Bakabae and Bakise are also dwarf tribes that live on the coast of Southern Angola, and the Bakanaka are a similar people who live farther inland on the eastern slopes of the Sierra de Shella, in the basin of the Upper Cunene.

Westward and northward from the Cunene another tribe was found by Serpa Pinto in the basin of the Kuando. Pogge and Wissmann have described another tribe, the Batwa, who are 4 feet 4 inches high, also living south of the Congo.

Photo by Richard Buchta.

AN AKKA GIRL.

The Obongo.

Still farther northward, beyond the Congo, there are pygmy tribes in the forests of the French Congo. They are best known from the descriptions of Paul du Chaillu and Oscar Lenz. The tribe discovered by du Chaillu is known as the Obongo. Its members live in small scattered communities of from ten to twenty people, scattered through the Ashango country in Loango, about 200 miles from the Atlantic coast; they live also in the valley of the Ogowe.

In physical characters the Obongo present many striking points of resemblance to the Bushmen. The height of adult women was found by du Chaillu to vary from 4 feet 4¼ inches to 5 feet; a young, but adult, man measured 4 feet 6 inches. Lenz gives the mean height at 4 feet 4 inches. "The colour of these people," says du Chaillu, "was a dirty yellow, much lighter than the Ashangos who surround them, and their eyes had an untamable wildness about them that struck me as very remarkable. In their whole appearance, physique, and colour, and in their habitations, they are totally unlike the Ashangos, amongst whom they live. The Ashangos, indeed, are very anxious to disown kinship with them. Their foreheads are exceedingly low and narrow, and they have prominent cheek-bones; but I did not notice any peculiarity in their hands or feet, or in the position of the toes, or in the relative length of their arms to the rest of their bodies; but their legs appeared to be rather short in proportion to their trunks; the palms of their hands seemed quite white. The hair of their heads grows in very short curly tufts; this is the more remarkable as the Ashangos and neighbouring tribes have rather long bushy hair on their heads, which enables them to dress it in various ways; with the Obongos the dressing of the hair in masses or plaits, as is done by the other tribes, is impossible."

The dress of the Obongo is of the usual simplicity of the dwarf tribes. It consists only of pieces of grass-cloth which they buy from their Negro neighbours, or strips of hammered bark. Their huts are low, the highest part, which is near the entrance, rising only 4 feet

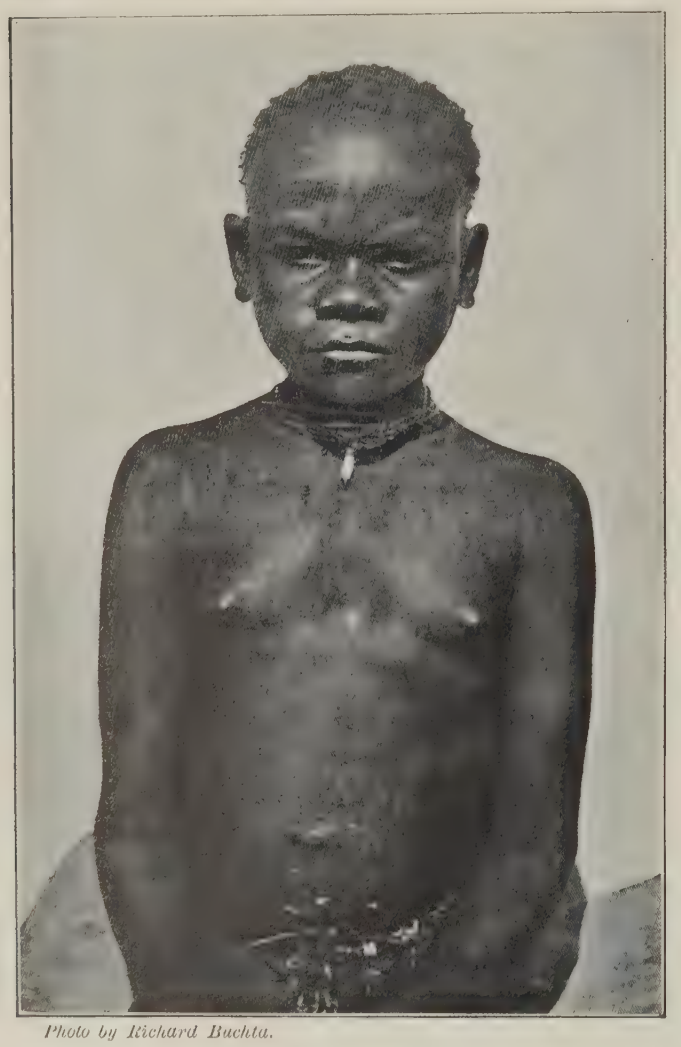


Photo by Richard Buchta.

AN AKKA GIRL.

above the ground. The huts are round or oval in shape; but some of them are said to be oblong. They are made of flexible sticks covered with leaves. The huts are of the simplest construction, the people being nomadic, as they have to follow the migrations of the game on which they live. They are expert hunters and fishermen. They kill game with poisoned arrows and spears, but obtain their main supply by traps and pitfalls. Fish they capture in specially woven baskets, or by poisoning the rivers with the powdered fruit of a palm; this stupefies the fish, which float on the water and are easily collected. The Obongo have no knowledge of handicrafts or agriculture. They are dependent upon neighbouring tribes for their weapons, cooking-pots, and water-vessels, and for plantains or other vegetable food, all of which they purchase with meat.

Lenz, whose opportunities for study of the tribe were much greater than those of du Chaillu, could not observe any sign of religious observances or superstitious ceremonies. The Obongo live in dread of the medicine-men of adjacent Negro tribes; but as the fetish rites of their neighbours are accompanied by human sacrifices, this fear is perhaps not superstitious.

Their mode of burial is remarkable. According to du Chaillu, "the most common habit is to place the corpse in the interior of a hollow tree in the forest, filling up the hole with branches and leaves mixed with earth; but sometimes they make a hole in the bed of a running stream, diverting the current for the purpose, and then, after the grave is covered in, turning back the rivulet to its former course."

The Akka.

The best known of the Equatorial dwarfs are the now famous Akka, whose name was recorded on an ancient Egyptian monument, whose existence was referred to by Homer and affirmed by Aristotle, Pliny, and Ptolemy, and who in recent years have been carefully studied and described by Stanley, Junker, and Schweinfurth. The Akka live in association with the Balia, Aticky-ticky or Tikki-tikki, Batwa, Wambuttu, and Bazungu. These are all pygmy peoples, but whether they are distinct tribes or only clans of one tribe is still uncertain.

Schweinfurth came in contact with the Akka in the Monbuttu (Mangbattu) country in the north-east corner of the Congo Basin. He made detailed measurements and sketches of many members of the tribe; his notes were destroyed by fire, but he remembered sufficient to give a detailed account of the Akka with whom he lived. Other members of the tribe were discovered by Stanley farther to the south and west in the valley of the Ituri River.

Photo by Mr. W. Pocock] BUSHMAN BOYS. [*Capetown.*

By permission of Messrs. Newton & Co., 3, Fleet Street, E.C.
A MALAGASI GIRL.

The most northern of these Equatorial dwarfs is the group described by Schweinfurth and Junker. According to those travellers, the height of the men varies from 4 feet 1 inch to 4 feet 10 inches, the average being estimated at 4 feet 7 inches. This is decidedly above the average of the African pygmies, and is taken as evidence that this group has been altered by intermarriage with the Negroes. Emin Pasha, in fact, regarded 4 feet 7 inches as the maximum for a pure-blooded pygmy.

Their skin is of a dull brown tint, something like that of partially roasted coffee. Their hair is woolly, but so short that it cannot be twisted into a chignon like that of the neighbouring Monbuttu. The head is large and out of proportion to the weak, thin neck on which it is supported. The arms are long and thin. "The look of the Akka from behind is very singular, their body seeming then to form a curve so regular and defined that it is almost like a letter S." The structure of the head, according to Schweinfurth, is strikingly like that of the Bushmen. The leading resemblances between them are "the snout-like projection of the jaw, with an unprotruding chin, and the rude skull, which is almost spherical, and has a deep indentation at the base of the nose." This group of Akka have acquired their dress and many customs, such as circumcision, from the adjacent Negro tribes; and as their height is above the average of the dwarfs, they are probably not so pure as the smaller and less altered Akka discovered by Stanley farther to the south. They retain, however, their mental characteristics, for Schweinfurth tells us that "in acuteness, dexterity, and it must be added in cunning, the Akka far surpass the Monbuttu. They are a nation of hunters. The cunning, however, which they display is but the outward expression of an inner impulse which seems to prompt them to find a delight in wickedness. Nsewue [Dr. Schweinfurth's Akka boy] was always fond of torturing animals, and took a special pleasure in throwing arrows at the dogs by night. During the period in which we were involved in war, and while my servants were almost beside themselves with anxiety, nothing afforded him greater amusement than to play with the heads that had been severed from the slain Abanga; and when I boiled some of the skulls his delight knew no bounds; he rushed about the camp shouting 'Bakinda' (a derisive nickname) 'nova? Bakinda he he koto!' ('Where is Bakinda? Bakinda is in the pot!')."

Batwa and Wambuttu.

The nearest dwarf neighbours of the Akka are the tribes described by Stanley as the Batwa and Wambuttu, who are of greater interest on account of their racial purity. The relations of these two tribes are undecided. Burrows says they are the same people, but Stanley has pointed out striking differences between them. He describes the two races as "utterly dissimilar in complexion, conformation of the head, and facial characteristics. Whether the Batwa form one nation and the Wambuttu another we do not know, but they differ as much from each other as a Turk would from a Scandinavian. The Batwa have longish heads, long, narrow faces, and reddish, small eyes, set close together, which give them a somewhat ferrety look, sour, anxious, and querulous. The Wambuttu have round faces, gazelle-like eyes, set far apart, open foreheads, which give one an impression of undisguised frankness, and are of a rich yellow, ivory complexion. The Wambuttu occupy the southern half of the district described [*i.e.* between the Ituri and Ngaiyu rivers in the North-east Congo], the Batwa the northern, and extend south-easterly to the Awamba forests on both banks of the Semliki River, and east of the Ituri."

Stanley first made the acquaintance of the Wambuttu at the settlement of the Arab chief Ugarrowwa, near the confluence of the Lenda and the Aruwimi. There he had the opportunity of studying a pygmy woman of the large-eyed, round-faced tribe, who had been captured by the Arabs near the sources of the Ngaiyu. "She measured 33 inches in height, and was a perfectly formed young woman of about seventeen, of a glistening and smooth sleekness of body. Her figure was that of a miniature coloured lady, not wanting in a certain grace, and her face was very prepossessing. Her complexion was that of a quadroon or of the colour of yellow ivory. Her eyes were magnificent, but absurdly large for such a

WATER-CARRIERS, ANTANANARIVO.

small creature—almost as large as those of a young gazelle; full, protruding, and extremely lustrous. Absolutely nude, the little demoiselle was quite possessed, as though she were accustomed to be admired and really enjoyed inspection."

In a later stage of his march Stanley found representatives of the second group of pygmies or Batwa, who "evidently belonged to that same race described as the Akka, with small, cunning monkey eyes, close and deeply set." "The colour of the people," Stanley says, "must be best compared to that of the common red clay brick when half baked." The wife of the chief of this section of the race was captured, and stayed for some time at Fort Bodo. Unlike most of the Equatorial pygmies, this woman wore a series of ornaments, including three rings of polished iron rod around her neck, iron earrings, and armlets. Her clothing consisted of a narrow clout of bark-cloth.

Another pygmy met with in the same district was a full-grown man, whose height was 4 feet. He, like the woman, was comparatively well dressed, for he wore a loin-cloth of bark and a cap adorned with a tuft of parrot feathers. He was armed with a knife, spear, and bow and arrows.

The hair of the Batwa and Akka differs from that of the Bushmen in one important respect; for instead of being collected into small tufts scattered over the head, it is uniformly distributed. The whole body among these tribes is exceptionally hairy. Schweinfurth recorded statements that the Akka are clothed in hair, but remarked that this was not the case with any pygmies he had had an opportunity of inspecting. But Stanley states, in respect to this above-mentioned 4-foot pygmy, "that the felt over the body was almost furry, being nearly $\frac{1}{2}$ an inch in length." This statement is in full agreement with the subsequent observations of Stuhlmann, who records the fact that in some dwarfs from the same district "the whole body was thickly covered with fine hairs from about $\frac{1}{3}$ to $\frac{1}{5}$ of an inch in length." The length of this hairy covering appears to vary greatly, since another of Stuhlmann's dwarfs was covered by a whitish fallow-coloured down from $\frac{1}{12}$ to $\frac{1}{8}$ of an inch long. Jephson's evidence is the same: "Over the whole body is a thick felt of stiff greyish hair, which gives them a peculiarly elfish appearance." Burrows, on the other hand, though remarking that the

VARIOUS TYPES OF HAIR-DRESSING, ANTANANARIVO.

HOVA WOMEN SELLING RICE, ANTANANARIVO DISTRICT.

black pygmies are covered with down, says that the red pygmies are less hairy than most Negroes. From Burrows' description of his black pygmies, it is probable that they are hybrids between the redder-coloured pygmies and Negroes.

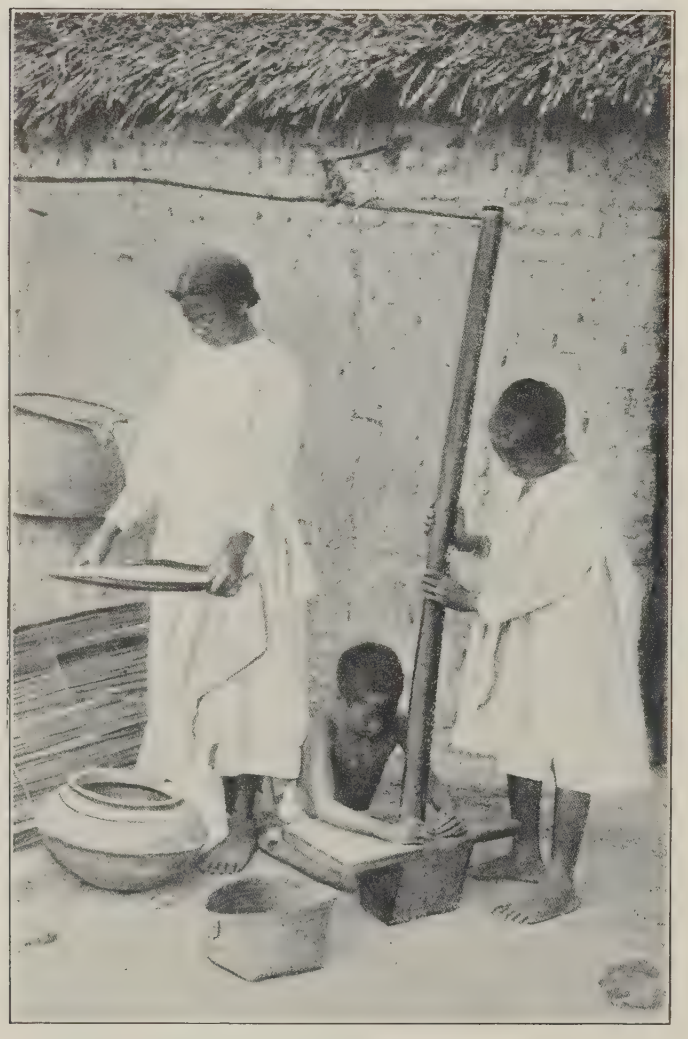
The most graphic general sketch of the life and habits of the Equatorial dwarfs we owe to Stanley, whose account is confirmed by the reports of later travellers. He estimates their height as from 3 feet to 4 feet 6 inches, and the weight of an adult at about 90 lbs. They live in groups of from eight to twelve communities, numbering altogether from 2,000 to 2,500 persons. Their huts are "low structures of the shape of an oval figure cut lengthways; the doors are from 2 feet to 3 feet high, placed at the ends"; the huts are arranged in a rough circle, the centre being left cleared for that of the chief. About 100 yards in advance of the camp, on every track from it, there is a sentry-hut, occupied by a couple of pygmies, who levy toll on all passing caravans.

The main industry of the forest pygmies is hunting; game supplies them not only with most of their food, but with the excess of their own requirements they buy vegetable products, weapons, and pots from neighbouring tribes. They hunt all classes of game, which they kill with poisoned arrows or spears, or by traps and pitfalls. Heavy game is caught in game-pits, which are covered with light sticks and leaves, disguised by a layer of earth. Monkeys are captured in a shed-like structure suspended by a vine; underneath are some nuts or plantains, and the instant the bait is touched the shed falls and the animal is caught within it. The smaller animals are taken by noose-traps, placed along their tracks. Elephants are often killed with poisoned barbs fastened to heavy blocks of wood, which are suspended along a game-track: when a passing elephant breaks the cord by which the barb is suspended, the poisoned weapon falls on to the animal's back.

The poisons with which these weapons are charged, when fresh, are very deadly and rapid in their action. "One man," says Stanley, "died within one minute from a mere pin-hole, which pierced the right arm and right breast. A headman died within an hour and a quarter after being shot. A woman died during the time that she was carried a distance of 100 paces; another woman died within twenty minutes; one man died within three hours; two others died after 100 hours had elapsed. These various periods indicate that some poisons were fresh and others had become dry." The poisons are made from different materials; some are extracted from snake-fangs, and another from the crushed bodies of ants; the chief source, however, is from the root of a species of *Strychnos*.

The only vegetable food of the pygmies are bananas, sweet potatoes, cassava, yams, etc., which they purchase or steal from their neighbours. Like most hunting tribes, they can go for considerable periods on very scanty food, and then gorge when they have plenty. Burrows, for example, says he has known one to eat sixty bananas at a meal in addition to other food, and then ask for more. They are reported to practise cannibalism; but the evidence in support of this assertion is insufficient. It is, for instance, denied by Burrows.

In regard to disposition and character all travellers agree that the Batwa and their allies are intelligent and cheerful. In describing one of them Stanley remarks, "What a cunning rogue he was! How quick-witted! He spoke so eloquently by gesture that he was understood by the dullest of us." While Stanley was discussing arrangements with this pygmy, "the coppery face of the nut-brown little maid was eloquent with sympathy in the emotions of the male pygmy. Her eyes flashed joy, a subtle spirit glided over her features with the transition of lightning. There were the same tricks of by-play; the same doubts, the same hopes, the same curiosity, the same chilling fear, were felt by the impressionable soul as she divined what feelings moved her kinsman. She was as plump as a thanksgiving turkey or a Christmas goose; her breasts glistened with the sheen of old ivory; and as she stood with clasped hands drooping below—though her body was nude—she was the very picture of young modesty."



POUNDING RICE, ANTANANARIVO.

If caught young, the pygmies are said to make excellent and industrious servants. Emin Pasha had one who, according to Jephson, "was most industrious, and never seemed to be idle, and was always cheery and good-natured." Burrows describes them as passionate, vindictive, intensely jealous of their personal freedom, and as "having apparently no ties of family affection." Several travellers have remarked their powers of accurate mimicry and their agility in dancing. Among the primitive Batwa, "their whole idea of dancing is to strut round in a circle, with their legs quite stiff, beating time

By permission of Messrs. Newton & Co., 3, Fleet Street, E.C.

MALAGASI MEN.

with bow and arrow, and adding absurd emphasis to the general effect by their set and solemn countenances" (Burrows). But where they have fallen under the influence of other tribes their dances are less restrained. Schweinfurth described the dancing of one of his Akka as displaying an "agility that was perfectly marvellous. The little man's leaps and attitudes were accompanied by such lively and grotesque varieties of expression that the spectators shook again and held their sides with laughter."

The Batwa appear to have no religious observances; they bury their dead without ceremony and erect no monuments over them. According to Burrows, "they have no regard for time, nor have they any records or traditions of the past; no religion is known among them, nor have they any fetish rites; they do not seek to know the future by occult means, as do their neighbours."

Pygmies in Abyssinia and British East Africa.

The eastward range of the Akka is bounded by the Rift Valley of the Upper Nile, of the Albert Nyanza, and the Semliki branch of the Nile. But nearer the India Ocean there is a tribe of half-caste pygmies living in the high forest-clad plateau extending from the southern provinces of Abyssinia to the great mountain of Settima in British East Africa. The first evidence of the existence of these East African pygmies was obtained by Sir W. C. Harris in Abyssinia in 1842, and was published by him two years later. He reported the existence of a tribe of dwarfs in the province of Shoa, in Southern Abyssinia. He called them the "Doko," and described them as "a pygmy and perfectly wild race, not exceeding 4 feet in height, of a dark olive complexion, and in habits closely approximated to the beasts that perish." He describes their country as "clothed with a dense forest of bamboo, in the depths whereof the people construct their rude wigwams of bent canes and grass. They have no king, no laws, no arts, no arms; possess neither flocks nor herds; are not hunters, and do not cultivate the

A HOVA IN A PILANJANA.

A GROUP OF HOVA.

soil; but subsist entirely upon fruits, roots, mice, serpents, reptiles, ants, and honey. Both sexes go perfectly naked, and have thick, pouting lips and small eyes. The hair is not woolly, and in the females reaches to the shoulders." In the year that Harris's account was published Rigby reported the existence of another pygmy tribe, known as the Berikimo, living in a district six weeks' march inland from Mombasa; according to his information, the members of this tribe are only 3 feet in height. A French missionary, Léon des Avanchers, in 1859 and 1866 published further information about these Berikimo, and stated that they lived beside a lake known as Lake Baro. But his account, like that of Rigby, was based entirely on hearsay evidence. And no European met with any of the tribe until 1893, when the writer came across a party near Lake Baringo, about six weeks' march north-west of Mombasa. The members of this tribe were about 4 feet 6 inches to 5 feet in height; they were of a brownish colour, had rounded heads, protruding jaws, a small receding chin, and long and abundant hair. "They live in the recesses of the forests in small families or clans, scattered over an enormous extent of country. Their culture and habits are quite primitive. Their pottery they buy from the Kikuyu, for they do not know how to make it. They do not cultivate anything, but live on wild fruits, roots, and the produce of the chase. They also collect honey, and keep it in bags made from skins. They do not fish, and have no domesticated animals. Their only weapons are bows, arrows, and knives. Their dress consists merely of loose sheets of undressed skin, hung over the shoulder." Their ornaments are very simple, consisting of iron rings and strings of beads, hung from both lobes of the ear.

These Doko spoke Masai, but have a language of their own, which is said to be so primitive that the people have to supplement it by signs to such an extent that they cannot converse among themselves in the dark. But this report is repeated about other African tribes.

Farther north members of an allied tribe of Doko have been found in Abyssinia by Borelli (1890) and Donaldson Smith (1896), who have personally encountered the race, which was reported by des Avanchers in 1866 under the name of the "Cincallé," or "What a marvel."

By permission of Messrs. Newton & Co., 3, Fleet Street, E.C.

MALAGASI WOMEN POUNDING RICE.

Still farther eastward are the remains of tribes known as the Wasania and Watwa, who live as slaves or helots among the Gallas along the east coast between the Juba and the Tana. These tribes are reported to use clicks in their language. But it is still impossible to say whether they are members of the pygmy or of the Negro race.

It appears most probable that these East African dwarfs are not pure pygmies, but have been altered by Negro intermixture. They are too tall to be pure-bred pygmies. But, according to Mrs. French Sheldon, the "Wanderobbo" of Kilima Njaro are of the dimensions of true dwarfs. She reports that "among those we met there was no man who attained a height of over 4 feet and a few inches, and some were considerably shorter." Exact measurements of members of this tribe would be interesting, as few of the other numerous visitors to Kilima Njaro have met with them.

The name "Wanderobbo" is not the name of a definite race, but of various groups of outcasts living in the Masai country.

c. THE PEOPLE OF MADAGASCAR.

BEFORE beginning the consideration of the African Negroes we may conveniently turn aside to the island of Madagascar, as its dominant people belong to a race which has no representatives on the mainland of Africa. Frobenius has, it is true, pointed to many resemblances to Malay culture in some African tribes; and among the theories as to the affinities of the Fulah there is one which assigns to them a Malay origin. The evidence for this is, however, inadequate. But it is now universally admitted that the people of Madagascar are Malays.

Why Madagascar, which is so close to East Africa and is separated from Malayasia by over 3,000 miles of sea, should be inhabited by Malays is a puzzling problem. But the fact is proved by the physical characters, the language, and the customs of the natives. The influence of intermixture with Africans and Arabs is apparent both on the people and on their language. Hence efforts have been made to refute the theory of their Malaysian affinities. Thus Crawfurd has endeavoured to explain the resemblances between the Madagascar and Malay languages by the influence of occasional castaways, and Wake has laid great stress on some points of personal similarity between the Malagasi and the East Africans.

But the evidence that Madagascar has been peopled by Malays is overwhelming, although the date of the immigration is uncertain. It was, however, no doubt remote, since the Hova

in 1873 published a catalogue of their kings; it enumerated thirty-six, and the list was incomplete. This evidence of tradition is confirmed by philology; for according to Cousins the Malagasi language has been derived from an ancient Malay dialect. The modern languages of Malaysia contain many Sanskrit words introduced by Hindu missionaries centuries before the Christian era. But according to Keane, whose opinion on philological questions is weighty, "the Malagasi language is free from any foreign elements except a few Arabic terms of relatively recent introduction. It follows that the Malay immigrants must have arrived before the Hindus reached the Archipelago—that is to say, at least 2,000, but most probably 3,000 or even 4,000 years ago."

Ethnographically Madagascar can be divided into three divisions: an eastern belt, occupied by the Tanisi, Taisaka, and Betsimisaraka; a central belt, occupied by the Tanala or forest tribes in the north, by the Betsileo and Hova in the middle, and by the Bara in the south; and a western belt, which is the home of the Sakalava, who, according to Sibree, are divided into twenty-five tribes or clans.

The leading tribe during the greater part of this century has been the Hova, who live in the east-central part of the island around the capital—Antananarivo. The name Hova is the name of the citizens or middle class of the tribe, in contradistinction to the serfs and the nobles or Andriana. The real tribal name is Antaimerina, or "people of Imerina," the province in which they dwell. The Hova are the most intelligent race in Madagascar, and are remarkable for their well-shaped heads, high foreheads, and European expression of countenance.

The following description of the Hova by Ellis has been approved as correct by Sibree: "The foreheads were always well shaped, even when the space between the eyebrows and hair, as in some few instances, was comparatively narrow. The eyes were never large and projecting, but clear and bright, and the eyebrows well defined without being heavy. The nose was frequently aquiline and firm; it was, however, more frequently straight, and sometimes short

By permission of Messrs. Newton & Co., 3, Fleet Street, E.C.

A NATIVE DANCE, MADAGASCAR.

and broad, without fulness at the end. Their lips were occasionally thick and slightly projecting, though seldom large and round, but often thin, and the lower one gently projecting (possibly from snuff-taking), with short curling upper lip. Their eyes are dark brown and hair jet black. The style of features seems to mark the Hovas much more distinctly than colour and hair."

This description is said to be applicable to most of the Eastern and Central Malagasi, except that they are darker in colour than the Hova. For example, the Betsileo, who live to the south of the Hova, are described as almost black, and in other respects also approximating more to the Negro type. Thus Shaw describes the Betsileo as larger, more muscular, and taller, the men being on an average 6 feet high. "The forehead is low and broad, the nose flatter and the lips thicker than those of their conquerors [the Hovas], whilst their hair is invariably crisp and woolly. No pure Betsileo is to be met with having the smooth long hair of the Hovas. In this, as in other points, there is a very clear departure from the Malayan type." The Betsileo are said to be quite as skilful and industrious as the Hova, but to have less powers of organisation and concerted action; for they are quarrelsome, and drunkenness is very prevalent.

The Bara, the southern tribe in the eastern belt, is one of the most primitive races in Madagascar. Richardson's description of the tribe is worth quoting, as the Bara have been less altered by foreign and European influences during the past three centuries than the Hova: "Among the Bara the hair is done up into knobs of fat, wax, and whitening, numbering from ten to one hundred and twenty; and on the crown is a chignon of the same materials, about the size of or larger than a cricket-ball; each knob is impacted against the other, and all have the ring of a hard wax ball. On his forehead or temples he carries his large charm or round shell, about the size of a crown-piece, called a *félana*. Round his neck he carries a number of beads of various sizes and a few small wooden charms. In his ears he will have rings or pieces of wood, sometimes sticking in the lobe of the ear, and sometimes hanging down like ear-drops. Hanging round his neck, and resting on his breast, he carries a circular charm about 6 inches long, covered with innumerable small beads, with two or more long ones at the end. The stock of his gun, a flint-lock, obtained from the traders on the coast, is covered with brass-headed nails, varying in number from forty to two hundred and twenty. His spear-heads—for he generally carries two or more—are very bright and well tempered; and in the shaft, or where the shaft is inserted in the head, rings of brass are worked in. His belt and powder-horn, his cartridge-box and tinder-flask, are decorated with brass-headed nails, each one the size of a shilling. Hanging from the shoulder,

Photo by E. Wirth] [*Kokstad.*

A GRIQUA FAMILY.

Photo by G. W. Wilson] [*Aberdeen.*

A FINGO MAN.

and resting on his right side, he carries his scarf of charms. Round his loins he wears a few yards of cloth, coloured or plain. Slung on his gun are a pair of sandals. And thus equipped he stands ready for any fight."

The Ikongo may be cited as one of the tribes which have managed to maintain its independence; for the Hova have not been able to conquer the whole island, as some of the tribes occupy impregnable positions. Thus the people of Ikongo live on the top of a plateau five miles long, with precipitous sides, up which there is only one narrow and difficult ascent; and as the plateau is well watered, and contains large rice-fields, it is self-supporting.

The whole of the western side of Madagascar is occupied by about twenty-five tribes, grouped together as the Sakalava, who before the nineteenth century were the ruling race in Madagascar. The people have been less influenced by European and Arab intercourse than the eastern tribes; and they approach nearer to the African type than the Hova. Some of them, such as the Anti-Mana, probably contain a preponderance of Negro blood. It is stated that this Negro element has been introduced by slavery; but probably it was mainly due to the absorption of survivors from tribes of Negro aborigines. That the original inhabitants of the Hova province were Bantu is suggested by their name of Vazimba, which is identical with that of the Bazimba who attacked Mombasa in the sixteenth century.

Photo by the Trappist Monastery] *[Mariann Hill, Natal.*

WIFE OF A KAFFIR CHIEF.

The culture of the Malagasi is more uniform than their physical characters. Clothing among all the tribes consists mainly of cotton or grass fabrics, or a bark-cloth, prepared, as in Uganda, by beating sheets of bark with a wooden mallet. One striking difference from the East African tribes is the fact that garments of skins and leather are never used. Before the island fell under European influence the national dress was a loin-cloth, reaching with men to the knees and with women to the ankles.

The ornaments worn are rings of brass and silver on the arms, fingers, or in the nose. The Sakalava wear the African ear-plug. Traces of tattooing occur among the Betsileo, who thus adorn the neck and breast. The teeth are generally left untouched, but some of the forest tribes stain alternate teeth jet black.

The original weapons were javelins, arrows, and the Malaysian blow-tubes, all of which are still in use in the interior; but firearms are now practically universal.

The houses are oblong in shape. The walls are of red clay or of timber planks. The roof is of

4460

thatch or shingles; it is a high-pitched gable, and does not rest on the walls, but on a central ridge-pole, supported by three vertical poles. One characteristic feature of the houses is that the timbers of the gable-ends continue upward beyond the ridge, and the projecting ends are carved or decorated by wooden figures. The length of the "house-horns" varies from about 1 foot up to 10 or 12 feet in some of the old palaces.

All the tribes are agriculturists, and most of them have cattle, sheep, pigs, and poultry. The main food of the Eastern Malagasi is rice, which is grown by the aid of extensive irrigation. Amongst other points in which the Sakalava approach nearer to the East Africans than do the Hova is that the sweet potato and cassava replace rice as the national food.

The chief industries are weaving, especially grass mats, basket-making, and metal-working, which includes the manufacture of filigree ornaments. Bamboo is largely used for domestic vessels and appliances.

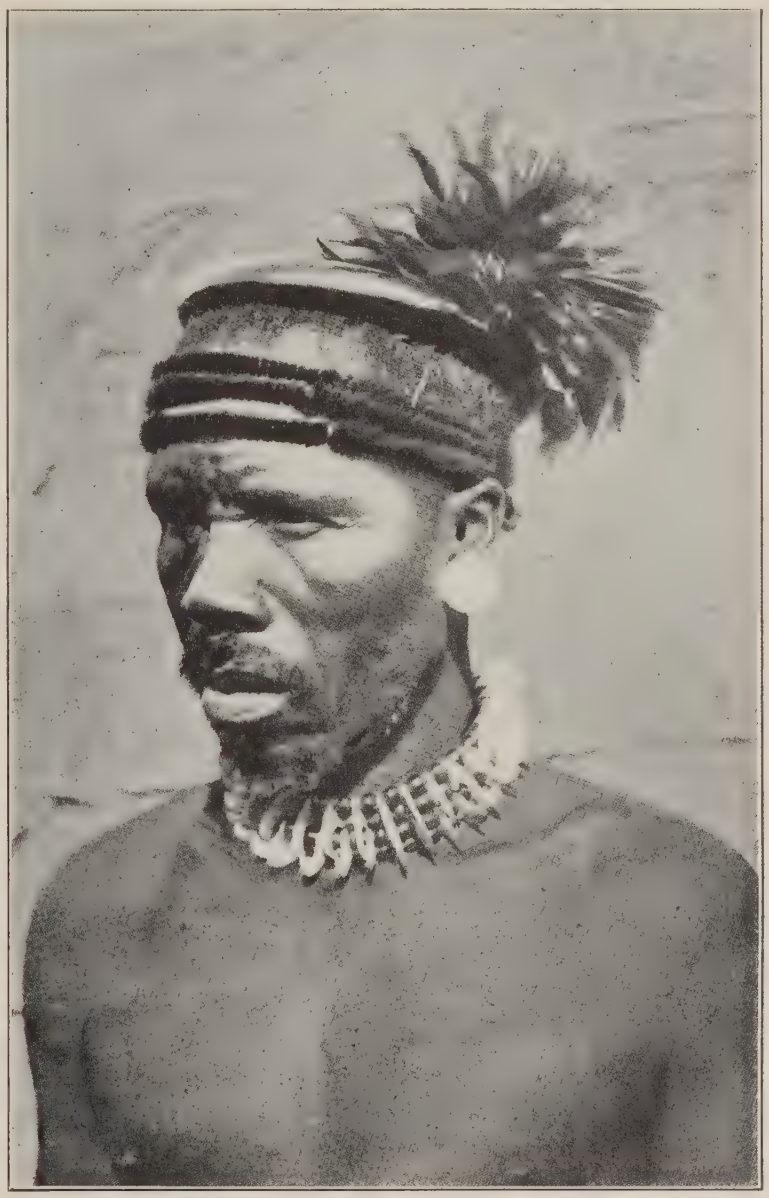


Photo by the Trappist Monastery] *[Mariann Hill, Natal.*

A KAFFIR INDUNA.

The system of internal communications is more organised than on the mainland. People of any importance travel in a palanquin, or *pilanjana*, borne by four porters, who, on level ground, trot at the rate of six miles an hour. Luggage is carried by porters, but not on the head, as is usual in East Africa, but on the ends of a pole resting on the shoulder, as in Abyssinia. The larger rivers are navigated by canoes made from hollowed tree trunks. On the coast the people use boats made of planks sewn together with palm fibre, or canoes which, as in Malaysia, are balanced by outriggers.

The original religion of Madagascar was idolatry and ancestor-worship. Traces of both remain, especially of the latter, in the elaborate funeral rites. The simplest type of burial is met with among the Tanala, who wrap the corpse in matting and throw it into a large pit. Coffins, made either from planks or from a section of a canoe, are used by some tribes, such as the Sakalava, whose customs are especially remarkable, owing to the direct worship of the former kings. The Sakalava funerals used to be accompanied by human sacrifices, the victims being buried in the grave with the corpse, some small relics of which, placed in the hollow tooth of a crocodile, are preserved in a sacred house at Mojanga, on the north-west coast.

Photo by E. Wirth] [*Kokstad.*

KAFFIR WOMEN.

The Hova tombs are vaults of four huge slabs of rock, and over the stone tomb of a king is built a wooden house, provided with money, dresses, and furniture. On poles round the ordinary tomb are placed the skulls and horns of the cattle killed at the funeral feast. It has been stated that the Hova kings are buried in a silver canoe, which, like the canoe-coffin of the Sakalava, may be a reminiscence of a time when canoes played a larger part in the life of the people than they do in Madagascar.

Circumcision was once general, but has fallen into disuse, owing to the spread of Christianity: when the rite is performed, it is done quietly, without the old ceremonies and festivals.

The political organisation of the country before the French occupation was a limited monarchy. The last three sovereigns were queens, whose consorts were nominally prime ministers, but were the actual rulers. Slavery was prevalent until recently, and the nation was divided into three classes—the nobles, the citizens or Hova, and the serfs.

The language, as we have seen, is a primitive dialect of Malay, with some intermixture of Arabic and Suahili. The personal names, which are of cumbrous length, afford an illustration of the system of "agglutination," which differs altogether from that of the Bantu language. The names consist of a string of words united into one. Thus the sacred name of the famous Queen Ranavalona was Rabodonandrian-compoinimerina, which is interpreted by Sibree as "The simple one (or child) of the prince in the heart of Imerina."

THE author is indebted to Mr. Stowell Ashwell, of Antananarivo, for photographs of Malagasi types reproduced on pages 275–278 and 280, 281. Acknowledgement should also be made to Professor Keane, the eminent anthropologist, for the use made of his well-known book, "Man Past and Present."

CHAPTER XIII.

THE NEGRO IN GENERAL—THE BANTU NEGROES.

a. THE NEGRO IN GENERAL.

For the purposes of this chapter we shall accept the term Negro as the name of the dark, frizzly- or woolly-haired peoples who occupy most of Africa, from the Sahara to the Cape. Their range is interrupted by the scattered groups of pygmies in the Equatorial region and the Bushmen in South-western Africa, and by immigrant tribes of other races who occupy North-eastern Africa and extend southward along the coast to and beyond the Equator.

The main physical features of the Negro are his dark-coloured skin, woolly hair, and long massive skull, with receding forehead and projecting jaws. The colour is not black, as is so often stated; for the blackest Africans are some Soudanese tribes, who are hybrids, and the Somali, who are not Negroes at all. The predominant colour is dark brown, varying from dark copper-coloured to yellowish brown or dark reddish brown. The colour in the same individual varies from time to time, according to his condition of health, and as a rule it darkens with age, new-born children being quite light in colour. The hair is generally short; in transverse section it is elliptical and not circular, so that it naturally coils into short curls; it thus appears woolly or frizzled. In most tribes the hair is very short, but in others it grows to considerable length, and is twisted into very elaborate designs. The hair on the lower part of the face is inconspicuous; the beard is sparse or absent, and the moustache represented by a few hairs above the corners of the mouth. The skull and head characters are very typical of the Negroes, though they vary greatly, owing to the influence of intermarriage with other races. The skull as a whole is massive, and the bones are firmly fused together, so that the sutures between them are indistinct. The skull is long and broadest at the back; the forehead receding; the nose is broad-based and the nostrils are widely open, so that it appears wide and flat. The body is well built, and the height averages about 5 feet inches. The proportions of the limbs vary with the mode of life

Photo by Mr. H. E. Fripp.

OVA-HERERO WOMEN.

and habits of the different tribes. Their muscular development is good, and on work which depends only on muscle they excel the average European; but in anything requiring judgment they are easily beaten. The nervous system is not very sensitive, and the appreciation of pain is dull. Operations can be conducted without anæsthetics which would be fatal to Europeans even with their aid. Johnston describes a scene after one of the battles in British Central Africa, in which "operations of the most terribly painful character are being carried on, and the patients are smiling, with an occasional wince or grimace, but meantime plaiting grass with their fingers or watching the application of the surgical implements with positive interest."

Dress varies from absolutely nothing, as in some of the people of Kavirondo, to the complete clothing of the better-class Suahili. As a rule the dress is very simple: children are usually nude; women mostly have a narrow petticoat, covering from the waist to about the knees; men wear a narrow loin-cloth, which they frequently discard. In cold, wet districts, as

Photo by Mr. H. E. Fripp.

OVA-HERERO WOMEN.

in the inland plateaux, a short skin cloak is used, which is hung over the shoulders to protect the lungs. The skins worn by the Negroes are untanned, but are rendered soft by scraping and beating. In South Africa the untanned hide of cattle is the principal material used for clothing. In Northern Africa and along the coast skins are replaced by cotton-cloth. Some of the Equatorial tribes make fabrics of plaited grass. Sheets of fig-bark, hammered until they are soft and supple, are used in Uganda and some neighbouring countries.

The ornaments are as varied as the clothing; they mostly consist of iron and brass rings, worn round the arms or legs, in the ears, nose, or lips. Brass beads hammered from wire and cowry-shells are sewn on the skin garments or on straps; rings of ivory are worn on the muscles of the arm among some tribes, while head-dresses of feathers and fur are common, especially among the warriors. The medicine-man of the tribe is generally fantastically arrayed in assortments of the most eccentric articles available.

The body is decorated by colour-tattooing and scar-tattooing or cicatrisation. True or

Photo by G. W. Wilson] [*Aberdeen.*

A SWAZI GIRL.

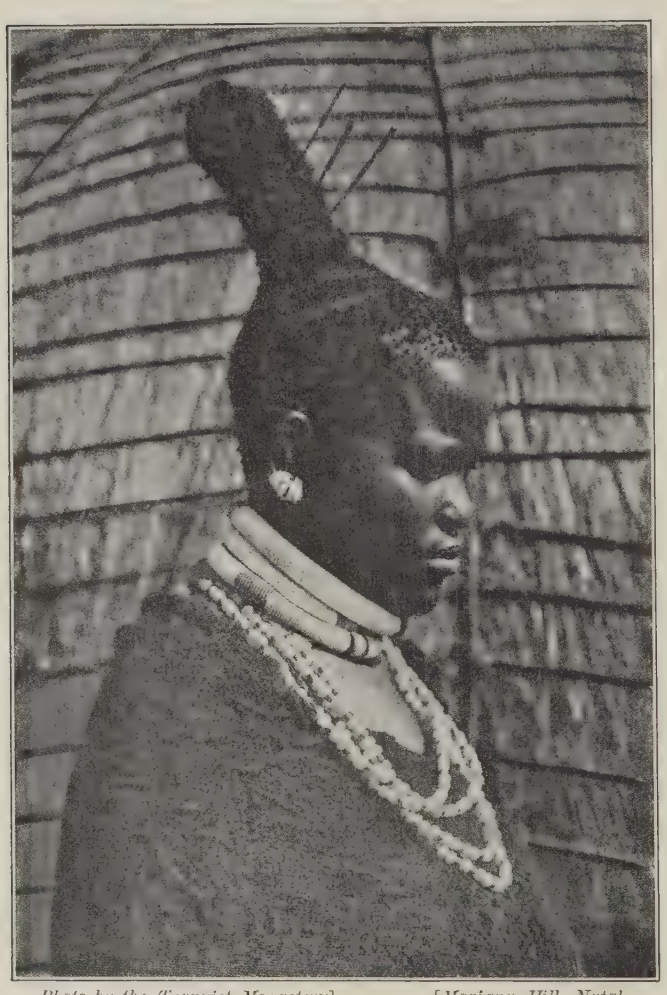


Photo by the Trappist Monastery] *[Mariann Hill, Natal.*

A KAFFIR WOMAN, NATAL.

colour-tattooing is effected by making small cuts in the skin, and then rubbing in some dye or pigment, usually charcoal. Cicatrisation, which is more common, is caused by repeated cuts at the same place, so that the skin in healing becomes thickened, and forms a projecting lump. These scars are usually in simple lines, but are sometimes worked into elaborate designs; in their simplest form they are caste or tribal marks; but where best developed, as among the Bangala of the Congo, their object is personal adornment. The lobes of the ear and the lips are often greatly extended by the insertion of wooden disks, and the teeth filed to points or some of them removed.

The typical Negro weapon is the spear; it varies from the light, barbed throwing-assegai of the Zambesi tribes to the massive, long-bladed, two-edged, heavy thrusting-spear of the Masai. Bows and arrows are widely distributed, and the arrows are often poisoned. Clubs and knobkerries are used for war, civil executions, and hunting.

The dwellings are mostly huts of bent sticks or poles, covered with thatch or laced palm leaves. They are usually small, but the palaces of the chiefs of the more organised tribes may be very large. The huts are mostly beehive-shaped, but may be oval, square, or oblong. The nomadic tribes rely on temporary reed screens or bivouacs, or huts of poles covered by skins. Where the Negroes have fallen under the influence of other races, stone buildings are sometimes erected. The huts are usually built on the ground; but in swampy districts they may be raised on piles, and where white ants are troublesome the food-huts are perched like dovecots at the top of a single pole. The huts are typically circular; but some square or oblong houses occur among the Guinea Negroes and in East Africa.

The food of the Negroes consists mainly of vegetable products; the chief cereals are the native grains eleusine and sorghum or dhurra, and various introduced grains, such as millet, rice, maize, and occasionally wheat; tubers, such as yams, sweet potatoes, and cassava or manioc, and various pumpkins and beans are also largely used. Some tribes live almost entirely on plantains and bananas, and others on the coast are largely dependent on the cocoanut. The pastoral tribes have large herds of cattle and flocks of sheep, and live on meat and milk; and some of them are forbidden by religious scruples from eating vegetable food. Along the great rivers fish is an important article of diet, though some tribes avoid it on considerations which are now religious, but which originally were probably sanitary. Cannibalism is widely spread among the African Negro races, as it is among the Negroes of Papuasia. The use of human flesh as food is almost confined to the Congo and Ogowe Basins; but it is eaten as medicine or fetish over a much wider area; as in such cases it is taken secretly, it probably occurs more widely than is thought. Cannibalism, in fact, probably arose

from superstitious motives. As Sir Harry Johnston says, "Men will eat the flesh of lions to make them brave, and the heart of a brave enemy is cooked and devoured by those who wish to share his courage."

The social organisation of the Negroes is primitive, and usually patriarchal. In many cases the people live in independent families or in isolated village communities, with an elder over each. Groups of villages may unite under a committee of elders or under a chief. Many chiefs may be subject to a principal chief or king, whose power may be upheld by a feudal system or be an absolute despotism. In either case slavery is nearly always an important element in organised states.

The character of the Negro is marked by extreme contrasts, the agricultural tribes differing from the warrior castes of the organised military states. The Negroes are generally described as indolent; but they are capable of great exertion, and where they are protected they will work steadily in their own way. They are certainly usually avaricious, but on an impulse will act with noble generosity; and their selfishness does not debar them from great feats of self-sacrifice and devotion. As soldiers their sanguine disposition renders them naturally brave, but in cases of reverse they are liable to panic; and though usually kind-hearted, in times of excitement they are capable of fiendish cruelty.

The Negro industries belong to a low stage of civilisation. Even as agriculturists their methods are crude. Thus the ground is cleared by fire, is never manured, and is broken up by small iron hoes or pointed sticks. Weaving is carried out among the more advanced tribes, and most of them extract iron by simple hand-forges from grains of oxide of iron collected from stream-beds. Tanning is unknown, except where it has been learnt from Berber tribes, and the pottery is all of the most primitive type. Wood-carving is done with knives, but the designs are crude and the objects made are always simple, except when affected by non-Negro influence.

The religion of the Negroes is typically fetishism, though it may be very slightly developed. Apparently all Negroes have some idea of a supernatural being, even if their ideas be vague; and they apply their word for god to rain,

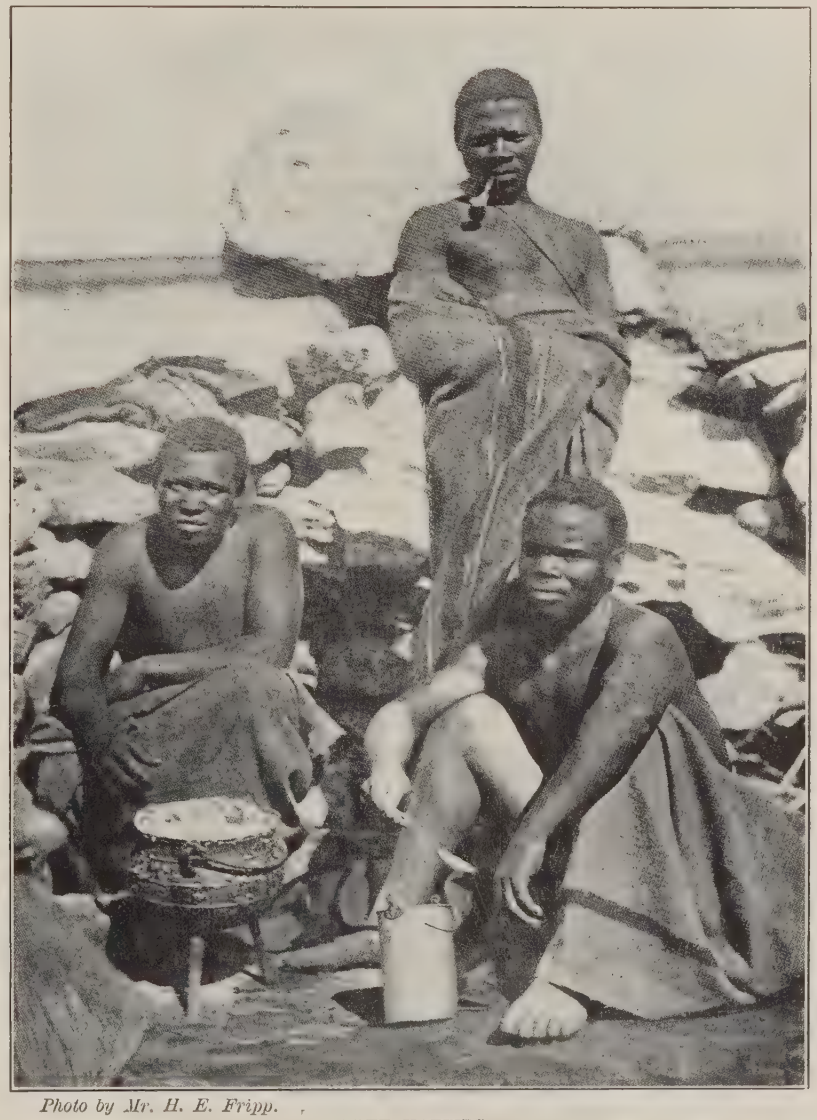


Photo by Mr. H. E. Fripp.

THREE KAFFIRS.

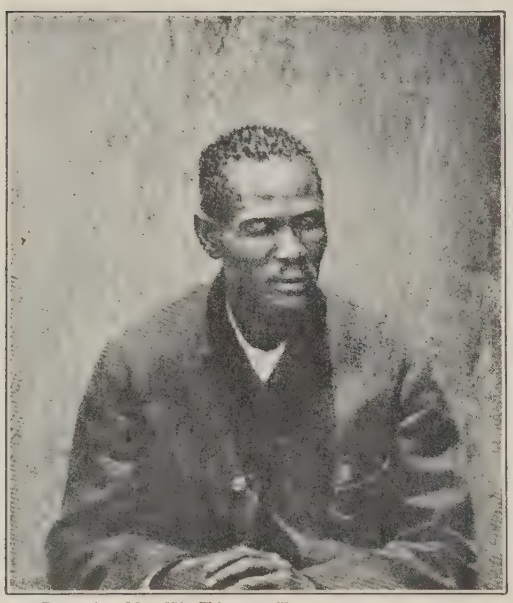


Photo by Mr. W. Ellerton Fry.

KHAMA, CHIEF OF THE BAMANGWATO BECHUANAS.

storms, and other natural phenomena, or to anything unexpected. But all Negroes seem to have a lively faith in the existence of spirits, and generally regard them as very numerous. Negroes refer to these spirits in explanation of otherwise inexplicable events. They believe that every natural agency has its own individual spirit. Fetishism thus originates as a form of Nature-worship, and is based on the attempt to explain natural phenomena by attributing indwelling spirits to all external natural agencies.

Such worship soon leads to the use of material objects as symbols of the various natural agents; and, as Burton says, "Of course the symbol is confounded with the thing symbolised; and the statue or picture, which the enlightened look upon as they would a portrait or memento, becomes amongst the vulgar an object of absolute worship."

Thus Nature-worship gradually leads to the use of fetishes and fetishism. But the Negro respect for fetishes is due to the belief that they are the abode of some spirit who can do its owner good or harm. Fetishism varies greatly in the extent of its influence on different tribes. In East Africa it is less widespread and powerful than in West Africa, where it is general; its priests have great authority, and its ceremonies are accompanied by human sacrifices.

The faith in spirits is the basis of the typical African judicial system—ordeal by poison or torture. The test is theoretically an appeal to the spirits to decide a case when the elders of the tribe have not sufficient knowledge of the facts to give a verdict.

The African Negroes may be divided into four groups. The Negroes living south of the line from the mouth of the Juba on the east coast to the Rio del Rey near the mouth of the Niger on the west coast are grouped together as the Bantu, on account of the general resemblance between their languages. In West Africa, from the Rio del Rey to Senegambia, are the Guinea Negroes, who are continued eastward by the Negroes of the Soudan, these being much affected by Hamitic influences. Between the northern Negroes and the Bantu are a group of Equatorial Negroes, including the Kikuyu, Niam-niam, Monbuttu, and Fans. The fourth or Nilotic group occupies the upper basin of the Nile, and now extends south-east to Kilima Njaro, owing to the southern advance of the Masai.

b. THE BANTU AND HOTTENTOT NEGROES.

1. THE HOTTENTOTS.

At the period of the first European intercourse with South Africa the Hottentots were one of the most powerful tribes in Cape Colony; but they, like their allies the Bushmen, have been steadily losing ground under the pressure of other tribes and European colonists. Now the Hottentots—or, as they call themselves, the Khoi-Khoi—are numerically unimportant, being confined to a few small areas in South-western Africa. Their numbers are estimated at about 40,000, which, however, includes many half-breeds. They occur in Griqualand East, in Griqualand West and British Bechuanaland, in Namaqualand, and sporadically in Cape Colony. They belong to four surviving clans—the Namaqua on both sides of the mouth of the Orange River, the Koraqua of the Vaal River and Upper Orange River, the Griqua of Griqualand West around Kimberley, and the Gonaqua on the western borders

of Kaffraria. Of these four groups the Namaqua are the purest living representatives of the Hottentots. The termination *-qua*, it may be added, is the masculine plural suffix.

The physical appearance of the Hottentots is very distinctive. They have a yellowish-brown complexion,. woolly hair, a long head and triangular face, with a small nose, high cheek-bones, and pointed chin. They are of less than medium height, the average being about 5 feet. The limbs are slim and the bones small, so that the build is rather effeminate; and the body has usually very fleshy, projecting buttocks.

These characters present a combination of those of the Negro races and of the Bushmen, the Hottentots being allied to the latter by their colour, their broad faces, small chins, and prominent cheek-bones. They differ, however, from the Bushmen by the general form of the skull and the character of the hair. The Hottentots are accordingly regarded as descendants of the original Bushman race, modified by intermarriage with the Bantu.

The dress of the primitive Hottentots consists of a string or belt of leather wound round the waist, from which are hung strips of fur and strings of beads and shells, and of a *kaross*, or cloak of untanned skin. Sandals are used on long marches. As ornaments the women wear leg-rings of leather, armlets of ivory and iron, brass or shell earrings, and necklaces of shells, beads, or fragments of ostrich eggs. Their original weapons consisted of the assegai, which had a 6-foot shaft and 6-inch iron blade, various forms of knobkerries or throwing-clubs, bows, and poisoned arrows. The domestic utensils are clay pots and basins, iron knives, horn and shell spoons, and bone needles.

The huts are beehive-shaped, and built of bent sticks covered with mats made of rushes. They are arranged in circular series, or *kraals*, the space inside being kept for the sheep and cattle. The main industry of the Hottentots is cattle-breeding, milk forming an important element in their food. This, however, they supplement by growing maize and yams, spearing fish, hunting, and collecting wild roots and herbs. They are daring hunters, and face lions single-handed and armed only

Photo by Mr. W. Ellerton Fry.
KHAMA'S BROTHER.

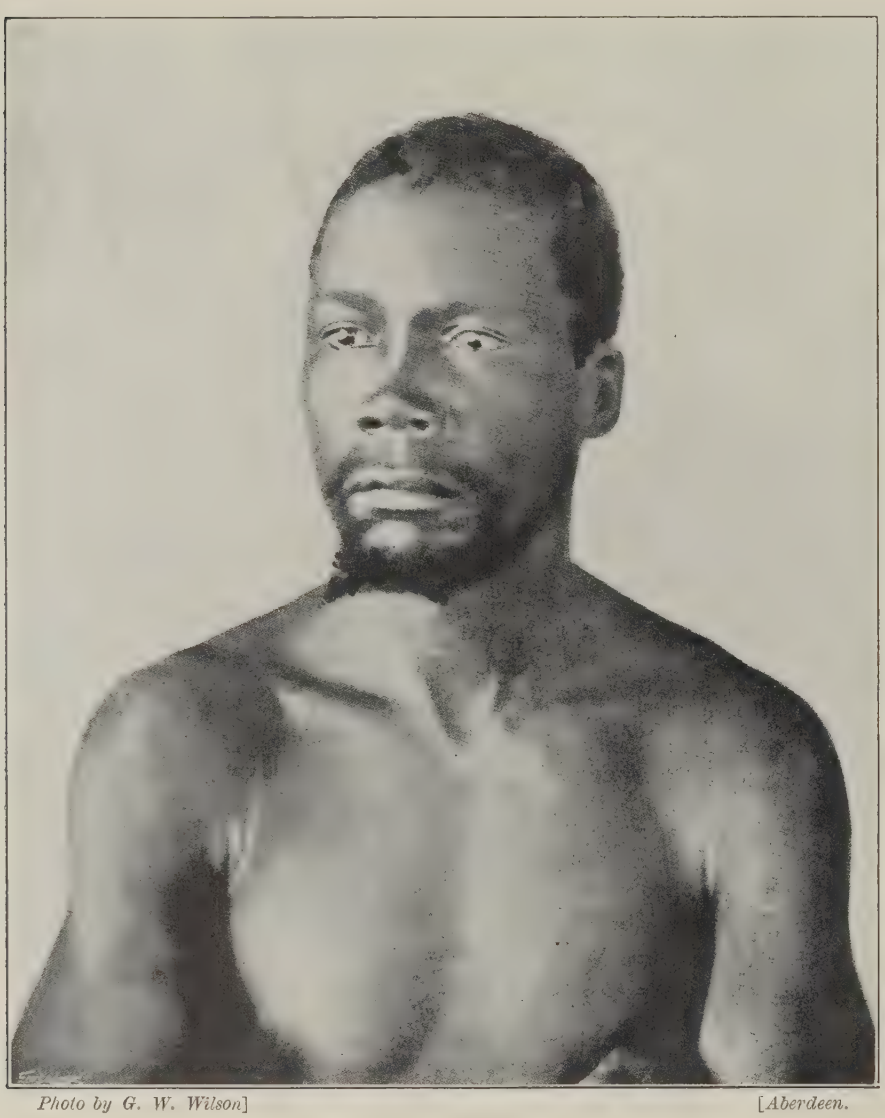


Photo by G. W. Wilson] [*Aberdeen.*

A CAPE KAFFIR.

with an assegai. They formerly smoked *dakka*, a species of wild hemp, now mostly replaced by tobacco.

The customs of the Hottentots are often the same as those of the Kaffirs—as, for example, most of the ceremonies connected with the birth of children; thus they carefully bury the placenta, the mother undergoes certain rites of purification, and the infant is smeared with cow-dung. Circumcision is performed when boys are about nine years of age. Marriages between near blood-relatives are forbidden; the woman's consent is asked, after which the affair is settled by purchase between the bridegroom and his future father-in-law. Polygamy was once prevalent. The burial customs are interesting: the corpse is sprinkled with blood, sewn up in mats, and buried in a sitting attitude facing the east in an excavation made on one side of the grave. In filling up the grave, the earth is therefore not thrown on the corpse.

These rites and the folklore of the Hottentots show their lively faith in a future life and in the existence of spirits. Their folklore is extremely rich in tales of the "Uncle Remus" type. Their language is allied to that of the Bushmen, but it contains only four regular clicks. Its structure is very specialised; for it has a gender, and shows whether nouns are masculine, feminine, or neuter by the aid of suffixes; it also has three numbers. But, as in some other linguistic groups, the meaning of many words varies according to the tone of expression.

2. THE BANTU OF SOUTH AFRICA.

The Ova-Herero.

As we have seen in the last section, the most powerful and most typical race of Hottentots are the Namaqua of the lower part of the Orange River. They have been reduced in numbers by a struggle with a northern race, the Hereros, who are now the dominant people in German South-west Africa. Between these two peoples there was once a buffer tribe, known as the Hill Damara, who were hybrids between the Namaqua and their northern foes; but they were

Photo by E. Wirth. [*Kokstad.*

KAFFIRS IN FIGHTING-COSTUME.

Photo by Deale Brothers] *[Bloemfontein.*

A KAFFIR WEDDING-PARTY.

weak and disunited, and were powerless to resist the southward encroachment of the Hereros. They now linger only in a few mountain retreats. The disappearance of the Hill Damara has left the Namaqua and the Hereros face to face, and during the present century the native history of the region which is now known as German South-west Africa has been the story of the fight for mastery between these tribes.

The Hereros are clearly a Bantu race of northern origin; they invaded German South-west Africa about a century ago, and now occupy the whole country from Ovampoland to Walfish Bay, with the exception of the mountain recesses occupied by the Hill Damara. Their numbers are estimated at about 70,000. Their southward progress was stopped by the Namaqua, with whom the Hereros have waged a long series of wars, with varying fortunes. In the middle of the century the Hereros were defeated and one tribe annihilated; but after 1860, by the aid of some English elephant-hunters and the advice of some German missionaries, the tide of war turned in their favour.

The Hereros are a well-built race, and have been described as showing Caucasian features. The skull is of moderate length; the hair, though woolly, is rather long; the nose is comparatively narrow, the cheek-bones are not prominent, and the lips comparatively thin. The characters of the head therefore show some foreign influence. The original mental peculiarities of the people are masked by the result of a century of desperate war. They are said to be sullen, cowardly, and suspicious, but to be less changeable and emotional than the Hottentots.

The clothing of the tribe is of leather, nudity being regarded with extreme aversion. The clothes of the women are a leather petticoat and a small mantle thrown over the shoulders: both garments are decorated by bead, shell, and wire ornaments. The waist is encircled by a girdle of leather strips; on the legs and arms are rings of beads and wire; while the head is covered with a circular cap, with a series of wing-like ornaments like those on a berserker's helmet. The weapons of the tribe are assegais, bow and arrows, and the knobkerry. The huts are of the beehive-shaped type, and are covered with skins. They are light and portable, for they are moved frequently. The main industry is cattle-raising, but goats also are kept; while

some sections of the tribe have taken to agriculture, and collect wild roots and herbs. They have many superstitions regarding food, and a strong horror of salt: they believe in witchcraft; and, like many of the Equatorial Negroes, have a highly developed tree-cult.

The Ovampo of Northern German South-west Africa are a less interesting race. They are Bantu, and are well built, tall, and intelligent. They are agriculturists in the main, but own some cattle. The tribe numbers now about 100,000.

The Kaffirs.

The name Kaffir is now used by English writers in Cape Colony for any South African Negro. But the name is used historically and ethnographically for the Ama-Xosa or Ama-Kosa, the leading Bantu nation living south of Natal. The word Kaffir is of Arabic origin, and means "infidel." It was applied by the early settlers of the eastern part of Cape Colony to the warlike natives of that region, just as it has been given in India to one of the turbulent hill peoples of the north-western frontier. Kaffraria—which, like the Kaffiristan of India, means "the country of the Kaffirs"—is bounded on the south-west by the Great Kei River, which enters the Indian Ocean near East London, and on the north by the southern frontier of Natal, and thus includes the districts known as the Transkei, Tembuland, and Pondoland. The Ama-Kosa, who inhabit this region, are a typical Bantu race. They are muscular but slim, and well proportioned; they stand about 5 feet 10 inches high. They are dark brown in colour, have woolly hair, a broad nose, and thick lips. Intellectually they are brave, intelligent, submissive to discipline and quick pupils.

They dress in skins or blankets, and adorn their hair with feathers, strings of corals, and metal beads. One section of the nation dresses the hair into a kind of cap: a grass ring is placed over the crown of the head, and the hair is fastened to it by grease; as the hair grows the ring is raised from the head, like a cap.

Photo by B. W. Caney] [*Durban.*

ZULU WOMEN GRINDING CORN.

The chief Kaffir weapon is the assegai, but the men are expert also in use of the knobkerry. They protect themselves with large oval leather shields.

The Kaffirs dwell in temporary conical huts. They were mainly pastoral, and lived largely on milk; but they now grow crops of maize, millet, and yams.

They believe in spirits, and are said to worship those of their ancestors; but they do not apparently believe in any one supreme spirit or god.

Of the sub-groups of the true Kaffirs the most important is that of the Pondo, who live on the borders of Natal in Northern Kaffraria. They are now settled and peaceful; their numbers have accordingly increased greatly, and the tribe is now estimated at over 200,000.

Photo by G. W. Wilson] [*Aberdeen.*

THREE ZULU GIRLS.

Living among the Ama-Kosa is a people whose exact affinities are uncertain. They are the Fingo of Fingoland—*i.e.* the southern part of Kaffraria, just north of the Kei River. In 1835, however, when they first placed themselves under British protection, they were settled by Sir Benjamin d'Urban in their present home, between the Great Fish River and the Keiskamma, and thus saved from the Zulus, who were threatening to "eat them up." They have no proper tribal name, Fingo, imposed on them by the Zulus, simply meaning "Vagabonds."

The Bechuanas.

Bechuanaland is a vast tract of country, bounded to the south by Cape Colony, to the north by the Zambesi, to the west by the Kalahari Desert, and to the east by Southern Rhodesia, the Transvaal, and the Orange River Colony. These are the existing political boundaries of the country, but ethnographically the term includes parts of the adjacent territories, extending

Photo by G. W. Wilson] [*Aberdeen.*

A BASUTO GIRL.

Photo by G. W. Wilson] [*Aberdeen.*

TWO ZULU GIRLS.

eastward across the Transvaal and northward beyond the Zambesi. This country was once inhabited by Bushmen, who have been dispossessed by the invasion of a number of Bantu tribes from the north, who are grouped together as the Bechuanas. At the present time the most powerful tribe of Bechuanas is the Bamangwato, who are ruled by the well-known chief Khama.

The various Bechuana tribes are no doubt closely allied in descent, but in physical appearance they differ considerably. The history of the various tribes is a long record of war and migration, during which the tribal differences have been confused by intermarriage and the influence of different modes of life.

The most remarkable point on which all agree is the maintenance of the totem system. Even on the disruption of a tribe the new clan sometimes adopts a new totem. Thus the Bamangwato tribe was established as an offshoot from the Bakwena, whose sacred animal is the crocodile, or *kwena*. The founder of the Bamangwato was a chief named Kari, the great-great-grandfather of Khama. Kari led off a party of Bakwena, and they adopted as their totem the small *duiker* antelope. Similarly the Bakatla have as their sacred animal the *katla* or monkey, the Barotsi the baboon, and the Batlaro the elephant.

The Bechuanas belong to the same group as the Kaffirs, but they are a smaller, less muscular, less active race, with a darker colour; they are more peaceful, though when attacked they have defended themselves with great bravery and skill. Thus the Barotsi have more than once defeated attacks of British and Boer armies; and on the last occasion, when the Matabili invaded the country of the Bamangwato, they were defeated with heavy loss. The Bechuanas are mild and kind in disposition, but they have on occasions committed massacres equal in cruelty to those of the Zulus and Ama-Kosa. The early travellers described them as intelligent, honest, and most industrious; but some later visitors to Bechuanaland have been less favourably impressed by them. One recent traveller complains that "they are the stingiest, most begging, grasping, and altogether disagreeable set of people that it is possible to imagine. Although

possessing large herds of cows and goats, they will not give a stranger a drop of milk until he pays for it."

The national dress of the Bechuanas is a skin cloak, or *kaross*; women wear in addition two or more skin aprons. They have elaborate ornaments of strung teeth, and beads, and armlets of grass.

The chief weapons of the Bechuanas are the barbed assegai and oval hide shield; but they also use a two-edged dagger and knobkerries, and their wars with the Bushmen have forced them to adopt the bow and arrow. The wooden handles of their daggers are beautifully carved; for in woodwork the Bechuanas are very skilful. They make spoons and cups, engraved with animals and arabesque designs. Their pottery and basket-work are also superior to that of most of the South African Bantu. The huts are conical, with extinguisher-shaped roofs

Photo by B. W. Caney] [*Durban.*

USIPEBU'S WIVES, ZULULAND.

placed on low walls. The roof overhangs the wall considerably, and its outer margin is supported by poles. In some of the huts these poles are connected by a lattice-work, so that the huts are double-walled.

The main foods of the Bechuanas are the meat of cattle and goats, milk, and maize.

Marriage is based on purchase. The efforts of the Cape Government to abolish this system have been resisted by both sexes, and especially by the women, who are flattered by the feeling that they are worth paying for, and fear that they would cease to be considered and cared for if they could be had for nothing. As in the case with most tribes who believe in totems, there are many restrictions on marriage, and the union of cousins is prohibited.

After this brief sketch of the general customs of the Bechuanas, we need only consider the distribution of the principal tribes. The most southern representatives, the Batlaro and the Batlapi, live in the districts of Kuruman and Vryburg, north of Griqualand. To the north

Photo by B. W. Caney] *[Durban.*

A ZULU WITCH-DOCTOR.

of Vryburg, on both banks of the Molopo River, which divides Cape Colony from the Bechuanaland Protectorate, is the tribe of the Barolong; their chief settlement is at Mafeking, and they extend far to the west into the Kalahari Desert. In the same district, but extending eastward into the Transvaal, is the home of the Barotsi, which is still inhabited by one section of that tribe, though most of the existing Barotsi live north of the Zambesi. North of the Molopo River and west of the Transvaal boundary are the Bangwaketsi, and the Bakwena, or crocodile people, in whose territory was Livingstone's mission-station at Kolobeng. North of these are the Bakatla, or monkey people; and beyond them is the territory of the powerful tribe of Bamangwato, with their chief towns of Shoshong and Palapye. Around Lake Ngami is the clan of the Batwana, who are an offshoot from the Bamangwato, and are now said to be blacker in colour.

The Basuto are a section of the Bechuanas, who now occupy the area between the Orange River Colony, Natal, and the eastern extremity of Cape Colony. In the mountain fastness of Thaba-Bossigo they were long able to defeat the attacks of the Boers and British. The country was annexed to Cape Colony in 1871, but after a long war was transferred to the Imperial Government in 1884, and is now ruled by a chief named Lerothodi, guided by a British Administrator. The tribe has given up its old political organisation and tribal divisions, and has settled down to agricultural pursuits. The territory of Basutoland is about 10,300 square miles, and the population was 220,000 at the census of 1891.

Closely allied to the Basuto are the Tonga of Tongaland, the country between Zululand and Portuguese East Africa. The area is about 2,000 square miles, and it is occupied by some 40,000 Tonga, who were subject to the Zulus until they recovered their independence after the Zulu overthrow in 1879. A section of the same tribe lives in Portuguese territory north of the Limpopo, where they were for a time subject to the Swazi of Gazaland. The Tonga once ranged much farther northward than they do at present.

The Zulus.

Between Tongaland on the north and Natal on the south is the home of the important tribe of the Zulus, the most warlike of all the Bantu and the most powerful native race in South Africa before their conquest in 1879.

Physically the Zulus are a robust and well-built race; they are above the medium height, light, active, and excellent runners. The prevailing tint is a dark chocolate brown.

The ordinary dress of the men consists of some strips of fur tied round the waist, while the women wear a short skin petticoat. But the gala and royal dresses are very elaborate.

Photo by G. W. Wilson] [*Aberdeen.*

A ZULU GIRL.

The Zulu weapon is the assegai, a light thrusting-spear, of which several are taken to the field by each warrior. The body is protected by a long ox-hide shield, which is coloured according to the regiment of the owner.

The Matabili.

In the territory of the British South Africa Company the most important tribe is the Matabili, which occupies the southern part of the region, now known as Rhodesia, around Buluwayo.

In physical features the Matabili are of the Zulu type. The men are powerfully built, muscular, and about 5 feet 10 or 11 inches high. According to Selous, "the Matabili girls are very pleasant to the eye, having most good-tempered-looking faces, and fine, upright, well-developed, dark chocolate-coloured figures." In political organisation, dress and domestic customs, and in their handicrafts the Matabili also resemble the Zulus. Thus, according to Selous, the costume of the women consists "of a small flap of goat- or antelope-skin in front and another behind, or of a little fringe of *umbentla* (a soft fibre extracted from a kind of grass) in front, and nothing at all behind." He adds that the Matabili huts are built on the Zulu plan, with doors only about 2 feet broad and under 2 feet in height.

The chief festival of the Matabili (a great dance known as *Inxwala*, and celebrated at the beginning of harvest) is worth describing. Selous, who was present on an occasion when 4,000 warriors took part in the festivities, writes thus: "The men were all clothed in their splendid war-dress of black ostrich-feathers, which consists of a sort of cape of black feathers, sewn closely together, covering their chests and shoulders, and built up over their heads in

Photo by Mr. W. Ellerton Fry.

MATABILI WARRIORS.

Photo by Mr. W. Ellerton Fry.

MASHONAS BARTERING.

the form of a Highlander's bonnet, leaving only their faces exposed. From their waists hung quantities of leopard and tiger-cat tails or monkey-skins, which with the indunas form such a thick skirt that you cannot see their legs at all. Some of the indunas, instead of the bonnet of feathers, wear a roll of otter-skin across their foreheads, in which is stuck a crane's feather, which waves gracefully in the air. This feather war-dress is most becoming, and makes even an undersized, ugly savage look well; and as the greater part of the Matabili are physically a fine, tall race of men, they look magnificent. The young girls wear round their hips the brightest-coloured calicoes that they can manage to get hold of, which never, however, reach to their knees, the rest of their persons being nude. With their merry, pleasant faces, and upright, stately figures, they formed the prettiest, if not the most imposing, portion of the spectacle.

"The dancing lasted three days, during which time a great many oxen were slaughtered for the assembled people, and immense quantities of beer were drunk. The third day was the most interesting. In the large outer kraal the 4,000 beplumed warriors stood in a large semicircle about six deep, all of them continually humming a slow chant, and every now and then bringing their right feet in unison to the ground with a stamp. At intervals, amidst applauding shouts, some well-known brave, after being called upon by name, would rush out of the ranks and show how he had killed his enemies, going through a pantomime of how he warded off the hostile blows with his shield, and at last delivered the death-stab with his fatal assegai. Every downward thrust made with the assegai represented a life taken, and at every stab the warriors all hummed out with one accord the word *jee*. One man I watched had seventeen lives to account for, another fifteen, and so on.

"At last the king came from the inner kraal, and, advancing into the circle, stood in the midst of his warriors, dancing quietly by himself. He was dressed in monkey-skins and black ostrich-feathers, and really looked a king. His favourite sister, Ningengnee, was also within the circle, splendidly got up for the occasion, being covered with a profusion of beads, coloured calicoes, brass armlets, and silver chains. As she was immensely fat, her gambols were more grotesque than graceful; and she was so short-winded that she was continually obliged to

Photo by Mr. W. Ellerton Fry.
TWO MASHONA MEN.

stand and rest with her hands on her thighs. Presently the king walked in the midst of his plumed army to the open ground outside the kraal, and performed a portion of the ceremony, which consists in throwing an assegai and then running forward and picking it up again. As he did this all the warriors ran forward as well, striking the insides of their shields at the same time with the butt-ends of their assegais, and producing a noise literally like thunder."

The Mashonas.

The only important tribe in the British South Africa Company's territories south of the Zambesi which has survived the Matabili invasion is the Mashona. Thanks to the abundance of safe retreats among the granite hills of their country, they have escaped the partial extinction that has befallen their neighbours and cousins, the Banyai and Makalaka; but they have been so greatly reduced, that, though they occupy 100,000 square miles of territory, they only number about 200,000 persons.

The Mashonas are peaceful and industrious; they are laborious agriculturists, and raise large crops of grain, including maize and rice. They keep herds of small cattle, flocks of goats, and large numbers of fowls. Their houses are circular thatched huts, which are perched for safety in the least accessible places on the kopjes or granite crags: for the Mashonas were weaker than their enemies the Matabili; and as they had no military organisation, but lived in small communities under local chiefs, and never combined for defence, they had no chance of successfully resisting the Matabili raids.

The Mashonas are skilled smiths, and make excellent iron assegais, battle-axes, and hoes. They play a musical instrument like the *marimba* of West Africa: the Mashonaland form of this "piano" contains twenty iron keys on a small board, which is placed inside a calabash to act as a sounding-board.

The Mashonas kill elephants either by hamstringing them when they are asleep with a broad-bladed axe, or by stabbing them between the shoulder-blades with a very heavy assegai from an ambush in a tree.

The People of Lorenzo Marquez.

Portuguese territories in East Africa south of the Zambesi are occupied by four groups of Negroes. The dominant people are the Gaza, who are a clan of Zulus. They take their name from a Swazi chief named Gaza, who was sent with a Zulu army to drive the Portuguese from Delagoa Bay. In this attempt he failed. As he dared not return to Zululand, he led his

army northward, captured Inhambane, and attacked Sofala. He and his men then settled in the Portuguese dominions, dispossessed the aboriginal Tonga, and formed the Gaza tribe. The second section is now known as the Tonga, in which are included all the tribes of the southern part of the Portuguese territory who are not Zulu in origin. These Tonga clans are all allied to the Basuto, whereas farther to the north between the Tonga and the Zambesi are the tribes of Mutandi, Atavara, etc., who are allied to the Mashonas. The fourth section is the tribe of the Balempa of Manicaland, who are said to owe their peculiar features, including aquiline nose, red eyes, and fiery eyebrows, to the influence of Semitic blood.

3. THE BANTU OF BRITISH CENTRAL AFRICA.

The region north of the eastern half of the Zambesi is occupied by a great number of Bantu tribes, who have several marked features common to themselves and striking differences from the Negroes of Southern Africa. They may be divided into four groups—*viz.* the immigrants from the south, the natives of Nyasaland and Mozambique, the Bantu of German East Africa, and the Bantu of British East Africa.

The Southern Immigrants—Angoni and Makololo.

Of the immigrants from South Africa the most important are the Angoni, who now live on the western side of Lake Nyasa. They are hybrid Zulus, who settled in their present home early in the nineteenth century. They were never pure Zulus, but an allied Kaffir clan, which was subject to the great Zulu king Chaka, but retained its own chief. But at length the Zulu tyranny became intolerable, and the whole tribe fled northward; it crossed the Zambesi just below the junction of the Luangwa, and marched up the valley of that river, west of Lake Nyasa, to the country south-east of Tanganyika. There the tribe settled, and thence

Photo by the late Mr. Theodore Bent.

CHIEF UMGABE AND HIS FOLLOWERS, MASHONALAND.

at various times it sent out bands in different directions: one of these bands settled beside the Victoria Nyanza, and its descendants are known as the Watuta; another struck south-eastward to the eastern side of the Nyasa, where, mingling with the Wangindo, it formed the tribe known as the Magwangwara. Later the main body of the Angoni moved southward, and settled in the country along the western shore of Lake Nyasa. They conquered the original Bantu inhabitants, over whom they rule as a military caste. They maintain their old Zulu raiding habits, and as such have been a very disturbing element in Nyasaland.

"These Angoni were the terror and curse of all this country," says Lugard. "Swooping down by night in their fantastic garb of war, with the unearthly yells, grunts, and groans with which they accompany their attack, they would fall upon villages and loot everything—sheep, goats, fowls, and crops. Sometimes they would carry off captives of war. At other times they seemed possessed with a lust for carnage only, and killed man, woman, and child without distinction, leaving not a living soul behind on the scene of their brutal attack. These awful bursts of savage slaughter, combined with their character for invincible courage, the appalling sounds they utter, and the garb they wear in war, have struck such terror into the surrounding tribes that resistance is rarely offered to an Angoni raid. When the dread cry is raised that the Angoni are coming, a blind panic seizes the helpless villagers, and each thinks only of flight and concealment, unless, as more often happens, the surprise is complete by night, and there is no time for escape."

Photo by Miss Palmer.

TWO NYASALAND MEN AND THEIR WIVES.

It was mainly the hope that they would act as a check to the Angoni that led to the establishment of the Makololo in the Shiré country. The Makololo were mostly Bechuana and Boloi people brought by Livingstone from the Upper Zambesi and settled at Tete in 1856. At first there were only twenty-five; but they were reinforced two years later and armed by Livingstone, so that they might protect the peaceful natives of the Shiré district from the raids of the Yao and Angoni. The Makololo soon made themselves chiefs of the district, and under their organisation and leadership the encroachments of other tribes and of the Portuguese were successfully resisted. They were at first friendly toward the British, but after their chief had been treacherously killed by a European they became hostile to all white men.

The Natives of Nyasaland.

The Bantu tribes of Nyasland are now fairly well known, thanks in the main to the careful studies of Sir Harry Johnston. The main tribe is the Wangindo, which includes many sub-divisions.

The general characters and mode of life of the Nyasaland Bantu agree fairly closely among the different tribes. The average height of the men is about 5 feet 6 inches, the women being about 6 inches shorter than the men. The head is typically Negro in type, and cases of the

Photo by Sir Harry Johnston, K.C.B.

NATIVES OF EAST CENTRAL AFRICA IN FULL-DRESS COSTUME.

Photo by Miss Palmer.

CONFIRMATION CANDIDATES, NYASALAND.

mongoloid, oblique, upturned eye, common among northern tribes, are here very rare. Though free from intermixture with the non-Negro races of Northern Africa, some of the tribes show signs of Arab influence by the considerable size of the beard.

Clothing among the people of this group is very limited. Many of the tribes go practically naked; the men wear only a brass ring round the waist, the women a tiny beadwork apron. But these tribes behave modestly, and are moral; whereas the more extensively clothed Wayao practise obscene rites and dances, and are very immoral.

Among personal ornaments, the most conspicuous among the Bantu of Southern East Equatorial Africa is the *petele*, a disk of wood or bone about an inch or more in diameter, which is worn in the upper lip, causing it to project forward like a bird's bill. This is not found south of the Zambesi, except in a slightly developed form among the Banyai, who are no doubt offshoots of the Nyasaland Bantu, although they now speak Mashona.

The Nyasaland natives are among the ablest agriculturists in Africa. The main crops are bananas, plantains, and beans; various forms of grains; and also cassava or manioc, sugar-cane, melons, and pumpkins. Tobacco and hemp are grown for smoking; simsin and castor oil afford the chief supply of oils.

The belief in fetishism and witchcraft is widespread in East Africa, and is indicated by the funeral rites.

Death is attributed, according to Johnston, to one of three causes: (1) the direct act of God by some sudden accident or a widespread epidemic or some well-known and clearly natural disease; (2) death in warfare or by murder; (3) by witchcraft, where the malady is obscure or a man has been killed by some wild beast. The animal is said to be either possessed by the witch or to be a human being in disguise. Sir Harry Johnston quotes one striking instance of the native faith in such disguises. During the war with Mankanjira, a famous Yao chief, a truce was arranged, so that the natives might consider the terms of peace offered by Major Edwards, who was in command of the British forces. The Yao held a council to consider the proposals, which were vigorously denounced by one of the councillors, who advocated war to the bitter end. The conference was being held in the bush, and this jingo speech was interrupted by a wild bull-buffalo charging into the party. The buffalo singled out the spokesman and inflicted on him mortal injuries. The Yao declared that the buffalo was Major Edwards himself; the terms were rejected, and war resumed with greater bitterness on account of this supposed breach of the truce. Even after burial the body is not considered safe from witchcraft, so that the grave is enclosed by a strong wooden fence, to protect it from the witch who has caused the death, and who may come in the form of a hyena to devour the body.

One interesting feature of Nyasaland burials is that the corpse is not allowed to touch the ground of the grave. The body is swung like a hammock from sticks at each end of the grave, and is protected above by a roof of sticks.

CHAPTER XIV.

THE BANTU OF EASTERN AND WESTERN AFRICA.

a. THE BANTU OF EASTERN AFRICA.

1. THE PEOPLE OF MOZAMBIQUE.

East of Nyasaland is the province of Mozambique, the northern part of the Portuguese possessions in East Africa. This province is occupied by two dominant peoples, the Yao and Makua, who are closely allied to those of Nyasaland.

The Wayao, the Ajawa of Livingstone, who originally lived in the Upper Rovuma and Lujenda valleys, but have now spread widely, are the dominant people in Mozambique. They have crossed into German territory and Nyasaland, and are steadily growing in power. The Wayao are intelligent and industrious, but aggressive and cruel, and they sometimes practise cannibalism; they are, however, faithful, and Livingstone's devoted servant Chuma was a member of a Yao tribe. The Makua are a group of clans, and are older settlers in Mozambique. They are as industrious as the Wayao, but are heavier, more sluggish, and less intelligent. Their family sense is strong—another point in which they differ from the Yao, who have almost a community of women.

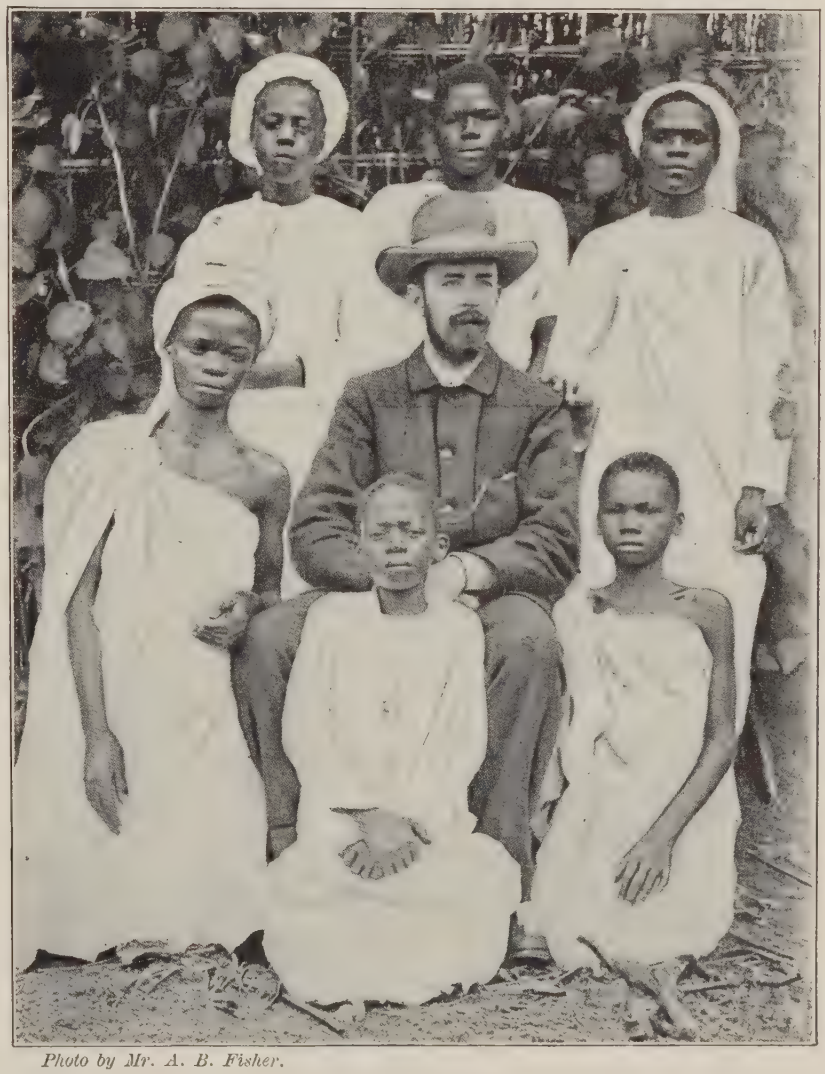


Photo by Mr. A. B. Fisher.

WAGANDA SCHOLARS.

2. THE BANTU OF GERMAN EAST AFRICA.

The Wankonde.

North of Nyasaland and Mozambique is German East Africa, which is occupied by many tribes, most of whom are typical members of the East African group, wear

Photo by Mr. A. B. Fisher.

NUBIAN POLICE, UGANDA.

the *pelele* or lip-plug, and speak Bantu languages. The Wankonde, though now included in German East Africa, were originally studied by British travellers, who have given detailed accounts of them. The word *nkonde* means a banana, and the name was given to the people on account of the great extent of their banana plantations.

Colonel Lugard, who waged a long war against the Arab slavers at Karonga, largely to protect the Wankonde, has given the following description of the tribe: "The country is densely populated. The men go naked, and the women also, save for a few inches of bark-cloth. The people (who from their word of salutation are often called 'Sokilis') are very friendly; but their familiarity is sometimes rather trying—as when a savage, out of pure goodwill, wanted to take my pipe out of my mouth to have his turn at a smoke, or when my visitors insisted on my sharing their snuff. However, I defeated these by giving them white pepper as the white man's equivalent! The villages are very large, and nestled for mile after mile among groves of bananas. The huts are beautifully and very ornamentally built, and are scrupulously clean; even the banana groves are clean swept around the villages. The soil is very rich. Like the Waganda, these Wankonde, though possessing great herds of cattle, are largely agricultural, and live mainly on bananas, roots, and grain. They owned enormous herds of cattle, and for a few inches of the commonest calico milk by the quart or gallon could be bought; eggs and fowls, and even goats and cattle, were excessively cheap."

The courage of the Wankonde is remarkable, though they are not able to face in the open the firearms of the slavers. But, says Lugard, "on two occasions it transpired that a single individual had gone by night, and, digging under the enemy's stockade, had pulled out one or two poles, under the very noses of their sentries, and, squeezing through, had abstracted a cow from inside and driven it off."

The Wankonde believe in fetish, and attribute all natural deaths to witchcraft. Accordingly everybody, unless killed in battle, is subjected to a *post-mortem* examination, in order to discover from the arrangement of the blood-vessels in the mesenteries to what form of witchcraft the death was due.

Wanyamwezi.

The Wanyamwezi are the main tribe or group in German East Africa, and owing to their industry and commercial enterprise one of the most useful peoples in Eastern Africa. The name is apparently of Suahili origin, and is now said to be applied to a group of tribes living in the highland country south of the Victoria Nyanza.

The Wanyamwezi as a race are tall and muscular. The colour of their skin is a dark sepia-brown. The hair is 4 or 5 inches long, and is twisted into ringlets, or may be shaved off except for a fillet in front and a tuft behind; the small beard may be retained, but the moustache, eyelashes, and eyebrows are pulled out by the roots. The two front teeth are

chipped away to leave a triangular depression. The lobes of the ear are enlarged, but the lip-plug is not worn. The typical tribal mark is a row of scars down the cheeks from the outer ends of the eyebrows: a third row may run down the middle of the forehead to the bridge of the nose.

The common dress consists of skin or cloth *tobes* and a short kilted petticoat. The principal ornaments are necklaces of beads, shells, or disks cut from hippopotamus teeth, and armlets of brass. The weapons are bow with barbed arrows, spears, assegais, knobkerries, and small battle-axes.

The villages consist of oblong huts, with sloping thatched roofs continued as projecting eaves. The walls are built of a kind of wattle and daub, supported by strong beams, which are often carved and painted. The main articles of furniture are a bedstead, a series of clay pots for corn, grass mats, and corn-mill. At each end of the village is a large hut, known as the *iwanza*, which are used as a kind of common rooms—one by the men, the other by the women.

The Wanyamwezi keep considerable herds of cattle, sheep, and donkeys, and they grow crops of grain, sweet potatoes, and cassava. Their main food is porridge. They weave cloth and baskets, and cut wooden bowls for milk.

At birth there are no ceremonies of special interest or significance. Marriage is by purchase, and burial consists in throwing the body into the nearest waste land, to be devoured by the hyenas and vultures. When the Arabs first entered the Unyamwezi country, there were constant feuds over this rule, owing to the effort of the natives to prevent the pollution of the soil by the burial of the dead.

The Wazaramo.

The Wazaramo occupy a tract of country, about 100 miles across in each direction, near the

Photo by Mr. A. B. Fisher.

A UGANDA MAN AND WOMAN IN NATIVE STYLE.

Photo by Mr. Ernest Gedge] *[Ludborough.*

WAKWAFI MEN OF KAVIRONDO.

coast of the mainland opposite Zanzibar. They were described by Burton as "an ill-conditioned, noisy, boisterous, violent and impracticable race," and as being for long "the principal obstacle to Arab and other travellers entering into East Africa." He describes them as having a lozenge-shaped face, with oblique eyes, a flat nose, prominent jaws, and thick projecting lips. They train the hair into numerous small knobs, held together by clay and castor oil. Their only garment is a cotton loin-cloth, stained yellow; but the chiefs wear a long white Arab shirt and an embroidered cap. The weapons of the tribe are spears, bows, poisoned arrows, double-edged swords or *simés*; muskets were introduced, but are now prohibited. The houses are oblong, and are compared by Burton to "the humbler sort of English cow-house or an Anglo-Indian bungalow." The walls are made of canes puddled with clay or of bark fastened against timber and bamboo: the roof is thatched with grass, and has wide projecting eaves.

The main industry of the country is agricultural. Land is cleared by fires; it is weeded and hoed and seed planted before the rains. During the wet season copal-digging is the main occupation of the people.

The Wadoa.

West of the Wazaramo is the land of the once powerful tribe of the Wadoa, a people interesting as the easternmost of the Equatorial cannibals and for their remarkable linguistic ability. Like most of the coast natives, their physical characters are variable, owing to intermixture of foreign blood. They range in colour from black to light chocolate, and in size from large and muscular to small and wiry. Their tribal mark is a pair of scars down both cheeks, from the temple to the jaw. Many stories are current of their former cruelty and brutality. Thus, according to Burton, "with each man are interred alive a male and a female slave, the former holding a billhook wherewith to cut fuel for his lord in the cold death-world, and the latter, who is seated upon a little stool, supports his head in her lap." But such customs have been suppressed since the German occupation of the country.

The Wakhutu, Wasagara, and Wagogo.

Close neighbours of the Wadoa and Wazaramo are the Wakhutu and Wasagara, who in most respects resemble the Wazaramo. To the west of this group live the Wasagara, a type of the mountain tribes of the East African highlands. They are a tall, sturdy race, and vary in colour from nearly black to chocolate. Their method of wearing the hair is interesting, as

it resembles that of the ancient Egyptians. Most of the head is covered with small stiff ringlets, while what Burton called a curtain of pigtails hangs down behind. The warriors fasten in their hair the feathers of vultures and bright-coloured birds. The lobes of the ear are distended by the insertion of a disk of wood or metal; and this is carried to such a length that the loop may touch the shoulder. The clothing consists of a cotton loin-cloth or a kilt of softened goat-skin: the wealthier women, like the Suahili of the coast, wear a long *tobe*, reaching up to the arm-pits, and fastened tightly down across the chest.

Occupying the country for five marches west of the Wasagara are the Wagogo, a powerful race, with most of the same characters. The distension of the ear-lobes is still more marked. Burton describes them as "not an uncomely race; some of the younger race might even lay claim to prettiness. The upper part of the face is often fine, but the lips are thick and the mouth coarse; similarly the body is well formed to the haunches, but the lean calf is placed peculiarly high up the leg. The expression of the countenance, even in the women, is wild and angry; and the round eyes are often reddened and bleared by drink. The voice is strong, strident, and commanding." The members of this tribe are inquisitive and bullying, but hospitable. They are expert thieves and very lazy, getting all the work of their fields done by slaves.

Their clothing is more elaborate than that of their eastern neighbours, but their ornaments of brass wire, beads, and ivory armlets are much the same. Their chief weapon is the spear, which has a long and broad head, and a long tubular neck for the insertion of the handle. Two-edged swords, broader near the end, and bows and barbed arrows are also carried. The huts, as usual in this district, are square, and divided up by partitions into several rooms.

3. THE BANTU OF BRITISH EAST AFRICA.

The Suahili.

The eastern part of British East Africa is occupied by a series of Bantu peoples of many different tribes, of which we may consider four examples as types of the rest. On the coast is the race of the Suahili, who range on the mainland from Somaliland to German East Africa, and occupy the off-lying islands from Patta near Lamu to Zanzibar. The Suahili are

Photo by Mr. Ernest Gedge] [*Ludborough.*

A GROUP OF SUK.

not a definite tribe, but a hybrid race formed by the intermarriage of Arab settlers with the original coast natives and with the Negroes brought from the interior as slaves. The name is derived from the Arabic word *sahel*, a coast.

The Arab influence in East Africa has been the gradual growth of perhaps 2,000 years. Phœnician and Arabian merchants sailed down the East African coast in prehistoric times, and no doubt established stations at various points of call. Seven centuries ago there was a civil war in Muscat, the south-east corner of Arabia; the defeated faction, the Nabahani, were expelled, and settled in the archipelago of Lamu. Three centuries afterwards the Portuguese arrived on the coast, and began to establish stations and annex the country. Their encroachments were resisted by the Nabahani, who waged a long conflict with the Portuguese for mastery along the coast. In this struggle the Arabs were continually reinforced by fresh arrivals from Arabia, and the new-comers settled in the country. In process of time the Arabs intermarried with the coast Negroes, and their offspring formed the Suahili race. The Negro element was much the larger, and was represented by so many different tribes that the Suahili do not form a homogeneous people. The one important element of union is the language, which is the *lingua franca* of Equatorial Africa, is known by members of most of the inland tribes, and is intelligible to the Bantu peoples as far west as the Congo Basin. It is probably the most important of the Bantu languages, and a few words may be devoted to it as a type of the group. The first character that strikes a European is that the beginning of the word is altered in declension instead of the end. Thus the words *ngema*, *jema*, *wema*, *vyema*, etc., are all different forms of the word for "good." Similarly the present, past, and future tenses of the verb "to get" are *mapata*, *napata*, and *tapata*. A "man" is *mtu*; the plural "men" is *watu*. The second feature of the language is the "concord," according to which all the variable parts of speech in a sentence are modified by the adoption of a prefix similar to that of the noun. A third character is the combination of several words into one, so that a short sentence may be fused into a single word, as in the Suahili riddle *Hausimikihausimami*.

Photo by Mr. Ernest Gedge] *[Ludborough.*
Y'SUK WARRIOR, KARANIOJO.

The Suahili are Mohammedans; but they are very tolerant, and one of their proverbs asserts that a useful infidel is better than a useless believer.

The headquarters of the Suahili are the coast towns, including Zanzibar, Bagamoyo, Dar-es-Salaam, Mombasa, Lamu, and Melindi, and on the Somali coast Kismayu and Mogadoxo. The better-class Suahili are merchants, and it is they who are mainly responsible for the slave-raids in Eastern Tropical Africa south of the Equator.

The Wagiryama.

As an example of the primitive East African coast tribes we may take the Wagiryama, who live in the hilly uplands between Mombasa and the Sabaki. As a race they are tall and slim, but strong. They are agriculturists and not at all warlike, and until recently had to leave their best lands untilled, as they could not defend them from the

Photo by Father Osborne] [*Oxford.*

WABENI SCHOOL-GIRLS.

raids of the Masai. They live in strongly stockaded villages, frequently situated in a patch of forest. Their huts show a trace of Arab influence, as, unlike those of the ordinary East African Bantu, they are often built with a gabled roof. The men wear only a small loin-cloth, made of the type of calico known as "Mericani"; the women have a double-flounced petticoat fastened round the waist and round the knees. Their ornaments consist of strings of red and blue beads, anklets and neck-rings made of brass and iron wire and light steel chain. Their main industry is agriculture, as they sell their produce in the coast towns for the calico, wire, beads, and implements which they require.

They are a superstitious tribe, and fetish-worship is more conspicuous among them than other British East African Bantu. The entrances to the fields are usually through an archway hung with fetishes; small fetish-huts occur in most of the villages, and some conspicuous trees are surrounded by a sacred belt, which the women and children are forbidden to enter.

The country is very liable to drought, and in places the people store up water in the shells of a large snail common in the district. In the dry seasons the people sometimes devote the whole night to fetching water from distant pools.

The Wapokomo.

The high plateau at the back of the belt of country inhabited by the Wagiryama is occupied by the nomadic scattered families and small villages of the Wanyika and Waduruma. The mountains that rise above the scrub-covered deserts of the Nyika are occupied by the Wateita.

The scrub-covered coast plateau of British East Africa is broken by the valleys of the Sabaki and the Tana rivers, along the latter of which dwell the Wapokomo, who represent a

third type of British East African Bantu. They live only on the banks of the Lower Tana; and as they are protected by the vast swamps of that valley, they have kept free from foreign influence. As a race they are tall and very powerfully built; but they are cowardly, and dare not defend themselves against the raids of the coast Suahili or the dangerous Somali tribes to the north.

The dress of the people is more limited than that of most of the coast natives. The men wear a narrow cloth tied tightly round the loins; the women wear a petticoat of many flounces, covering from the waist to the knees. As a protection against the cold and wet they keep the body anointed with castor oil, and the men colour themselves bright red by mixing ochre with the oil. The principal ornaments are armlets and leg-rings of brass wire and long strings of white beads. The hair is abundant; it is dressed with mutton fat and oil, and is twisted into curls about three inches long, which hang round the head like the ends of a mop.

Photo by Mr. Ernest Gedge] [*Ludborough.*

NATIVES OF LUMBWA.

Every Pokomo is armed with a broad-bladed spear, which is used for killing crocodiles, reed-rats, and lizards. It is also used as a paddle for propelling their dug-out canoes.

The tribe is agricultural, their only domestic animals being fowls and sheep. Their principal foods are the plantain, cassava, beans, and maize; they also grow castor oil, simsin oil, pumpkins, tobacco, and sugar-cane. From the last, and still more from the wild fig which grows along the banks of the Tana, they prepare an intoxicating beverage; and when this is in season, the population of whole villages may be found in a state of drunken stupor.

The Pokomo religion is a fetishism of which the rites are secret. Every man carries about with him a charm, and every village has a fetish-shed, under which is buried, as a protection against the Somali, some such article as an empty bottle or an old meat-tin. The elders of the villages form a secret society, something like those of the West African Negroes; the Pokomo society is known as Ngadsi, and it rules the tribe and keeps it on friendly terms with the dreaded spirit "the Old Man of the Woods." The people make offerings of food

to this spirit, which are appropriated by the chiefs of the order. They uphold their dread of the spirit by a drum, of which the sound is louder than the roar of a lion; this, they say, is the voice of the Old Man of the Woods. They have a certain faith in a future life, though they think it will not be so pleasant as the present.

The position of women in this tribe is unusually favourable. They have been described as monogamous, and marriage occurs much later than with the coast tribes. The Pokomo have a proverb that the weakness of the Suahili is due to the birth of children by children. The women spend most of their time in the villages, and do little work in the fields and on the river. During seed-time and harvest they help the men; but, they take the lighter part of the tasks. When travelling on the river, the paddling is always done by the men. The women, however, join in the dances on equal terms with the men.

Photo by the Rev. E. E. Nickisson.

WATEITA BOYS, EAST AFRICA.

The Wakamba.

The Wakamba are the leading Bantu tribe along the line of the Uganda Railway. The original home of the tribe was in German East Africa; but it migrated northward and settled in the hills of Kikumbuliyu, Iveti, and Kitui. The Wakamba are a well-built race, tall, muscular, but slimmer than the Pokomo. They are brave, though not aggressive; with their light spears, bows, and poisoned arrows, they have held their hills against the attacks of Masai, Kikuyu, and Somali. They are keen traders, and not only enjoy bargaining with passing caravans, but send trading expeditions to the coast. They take down grain, tobacco, ivory, gum, cattle, and sheep, which they exchange for beads, brass, cloth, and tools. In trading they use many of the Suahili methods: for example, they measure the cloth by the "hand" or by the length from elbow to finger-tip of an average man.

The Wakamba wear little clothing: the younger men wear only a flap of skin over the shoulders; older men and women have a longer, loose mantle of cotton-cloth or skin. The body is generally kept rubbed with oil and decorated with streaks of paint, usually a white band across the face, enclosing the eye, and stretching from ear to ear. The upper incisor teeth of the men are filed into pointed fangs.

Bows and poisoned arrows are the main weapons, but spears and *simés*, or double-edged swords, are also used. The chief ornaments are made of brass wire and big blue beads. Agricultural work is mainly done with wooden implements, the ground being dug up with pointed stakes and the clods broken by curved sticks. The people live in rectangular huts with vertical walls and thatched roofs. These huts are collected into kraals, each of which contains practically a family group. Each kraal has its own plantations, the boundaries of which are marked by hedges, heaps of stone, or irrigation channels. In the plantations are grown beans, plantains, pumpkins, maize, dhurra, and especially millet, which, boiled into porridge, is the staple food of the tribe. Tobacco is grown for snuff; but smoking has been learnt at the coast, and the practice is spreading.

The weapons and ornaments are made by a class of smiths. Grains of iron oxide are collected from the stream-beds, smelted in charcoal furnaces, and wrought into spear- and arrow-

Photo by Mr. Ernest Gedge] *[Ludborough.*

AN ELGON CHIEF.

heads and knives. Brass is purchased from trading caravans, and worked into beads, earrings, and bracelets. A small circular brass disk about an inch in diameter is usually worn on the middle of the forehead.

The produce of the plantations of each kraal is the common property of its members: a share for food is served out to each household and the rest sold, the goods received in exchange belonging to the whole kraal. Private property is said to be limited to clothes and weapons.

The tribe is governed by meetings of the elders, and though there is a chief over each district his power is limited. Punishments are only given after conviction by a jury of elders, after the accused has been confronted with his accuser and allowed full opportunities for defence. Capital punishment is inflicted only for very serious crimes.

The religion of the Wakamba is primitive. There is a vague belief in a great spirit, known by the Masai name Ngai. In times of drought offerings of plantains, grain, and beer are placed under sacred trees. Circumcision is practised, but not as amongst the Masai and Kikuyu. All the Wakamba carry a charm, but they do not appear to have wooden human images like the coast tribes. The medicine-men appear to exercise comparatively little power.

THE PEOPLE OF UGANDA AND THEIR ALLIES.

On the north-western shore of the Victoria Nyanza is the kingdom of Uganda, which is remarkable among the states of Equatorial Africa for its centralised government and organised political institutions. The main basis of the people of Uganda is Bantu; but in Uganda there are scattered groups of a race known as the Wahuma, who are Hamites allied to the Gallas. The political organisation of Uganda is no doubt due to the conquest of this region by a race of Wahuma invaders. Thus Speke, the first European to visit Uganda, reported that "the government is in the hands of foreigners, who had invaded and taken possession of the country, leaving the agricultural aborigines to till the ground, whilst the junior members of the usurping clans herded cattle." The conquerors no doubt came from the north-east, as appears from the evidence of their physical structure and language.

Speke was so impressed by the resemblance of the Wahuma of Uganda to the Abyssinians that he maintained that both those races and the Gallas were the same. And Lugard reports a remark by Dualla Idris, the greatest of native caravan headmen, to the effect that the Wasoga resemble the Abyssinians in dress and in many of their customs—as, for instance, their method of salutation.

The eastern origin of the Wahuma is, moreover, directly affirmed by native traditions. Baker describes a remarkable Unyoro custom which survived until the coronation of its last independent ruler, the now exiled Kabaregga. Before a new king succeeds to the throne he has to sleep for two nights east of the Nile, and then march back by the path used by the

Photo by Richard Buchta.

UNYORO CHIEFS.

invaders. On reaching the river, he crossed by boat to the exact landing-place "where the original conqueror first set his foot upon the frontier."

The Wahuma invaders conquered not only Uganda, but a large tract of country west of the Victoria Nyanza. There they established the empire of Kitwara, which has long since been broken up into the recently independent states of Uganda, Unyoro, and Toru; while its political influence can be detected over a still wider area, as in Usoga, to the east of the Nile, and in the Monbuttu (Mangbattu) country, west of the Albert Nyanza.

The Waganda.

Uganda is the central and most important part of these Kitwara states. It is situated to the north-west of the Victoria Nyanza, and its old capital of Mengo is now the administrative centre for the much vaster region known as the British Protectorate of Uganda.

The population of Uganda has been estimated at from 800,000 to 5,000,000. The former figure is probably the nearer the truth. Most of the people are typical Bantu Negroes, the Wahuma being numerically insignificant. The Wahuma characteristics are recognisable only in the chiefs or in some clans of cattle-herds living to the west of the Nyanza.

As a type of the Wahuma caste we may quote Speke's description of Mtesa, who was king at the time of that traveller's visit:—

"The king, a good-looking, well-figured, tall young man of twenty-five, was sitting on a red blanket spread upon a square platform of royal grass, encased in tiger-grass reeds, scrupulously well dressed in a new *mbugu* [i.e. bark-cloth]. The hair of his head was cut short, excepting on the top, where it was combed up into a high ridge, running from stem to stern like a cockscomb. On his neck was a very neat ornament—a large ring, of beautifully worked small beads, forming elegant patterns by their various colours. On one arm was another bead ornament, prettily devised; and on the other a wooden charm, tied by a string covered with snake-skin. On every finger and every toe he had alternate brass and copper rings; and above the ankles, half-way up to the calf, a stocking of very pretty beads. Everything was light, neat, and elegant in its way; not a fault could be found with the taste of his 'getting up.' For a handkerchief he held a well-folded piece of bark, and a piece of gold-embroidered silk, which he constantly employed to hide his large mouth when laughing, or to wipe it after a drink of plantain wine, of which he took constant and copious draughts from neat little gourd cups, administered by his ladies-in-waiting, who were at once his sisters and wives. A white dog, spear, shield, and woman—the Uganda cognisance—were by his side, as also a knot of staff officers, with whom he kept up a brisk conversation on one side, and on the other was a band of *wichwezi*, or lady sorcerers.

Photo by Richard Buchta.
AN UNYORO GIRL (FULL-FACE).

"The king's gait in retiring was intended to be very majestic, but did not succeed in conveying to me that impression. It was the traditional walk of his race, founded on the

step of the lion; but the outward sweep of the legs, intended to represent the stride of the noble beast, appeared to me only to realise a very ludicrous kind of waddle, which made me ask if anything serious was the matter with the royal person."

The dress of the Waganda consists of long robes of cloth made by beating the bark of a species of fig-tree with wooden hammers. But imported cotton has of late years been superseding the native material. Over the bark-cloth mantle was worn a robe made either of cattle or of small antelope-skins sewn together. The whole body is covered, and under Mtesa's rule the punishment for being seen out of doors insufficiently clad was death. In the court, however, the women in immediate attendance on the king were all quite nude. Ornaments of beads and brass wire were extensively used; but the ornaments have changed, owing to increased communication with the coast. Tattooing and the filing or extraction of teeth are unknown. The old weapons, bows and arrows, have been exchanged for muskets and rifles.

Photo by Richard Buchta.

AN UNYORO GIRL (PROFILE).

The Uganda houses are large beehive-shaped structures of thatch supported by posts. The roof is double, which keeps the temperature lower than it otherwise would be.

The staple food is the banana, which is broken into flour and eaten as gruel or unleavened cakes. Sweet potatoes, maize, millet, beans, and pumpkins are also largely used, while the Arabs have introduced tomatoes, papaw, and rice. Coffee is grown, and the berries are chewed.

The national religion is fetishism, but Mohammedanism and Christianity have been introduced and been widely adopted. The Christian missionaries belong to three parties: the White Fathers of Algeria, a French Roman Catholic mission; the Mill Hill Fathers, who are English Catholics; and the Protestant missionaries, belonging to the Church of England. The missionaries have been very successful in educational work. Before the introduction of Christianity and Islam and the establishment of British control human sacrifices were extensively offered for religious motives, while much life was squandered by the caprice of the king.

Though the lives of strangers in Uganda were regarded as sacred, all the early travellers to the country were horrified by the waste of life. Thus Speke assures us that "nearly every day, incredible as it may seem, I have seen one, two, or three of the wretched palace women led away to execution, tied by the hand, and dragged along by one of the body-guard, crying out, as she went to premature death, 'O my lord! my king! my mother!' at the top of her voice, in the utmost despair and lamentation; and yet there was not a soul who dared lift hand to save any of them, though they might be heard privately commenting on their beauty."

The king was an absolute despot, and was regarded as almost divine. Hence attendance at court was almost a religious duty. It is, according to Speke, "the duty of all officers, generally speaking, to attend at court as constantly as possible; should they fail, they forfeit their lands, wives, and all belongings. These will be seized and given to others more worthy of them, as it is presumed that either insolence or disaffection can be the only motive which

would induce any person to absent himself for any length of time from the pleasure of seeing his sovereign.

"All acts of the king are counted benefits, for which he must be thanked: and so every deed done to his subjects is a gift received by them, though it should assume the shape of a flogging or fine; for are not these, which make better men of them, as necessary as anything? The thanks are rendered by grovelling on the ground, floundering about, and whining after the manner of happy dogs, after which they rise up suddenly, take up sticks—spears are not allowed to be carried in court—make as if charging the king, jabbering as fast as tongues can rattle, and so they swear fidelity for all their lives."

The Wasoga.

Several of the tribes adjacent to Uganda also show the influence of a Wahuma caste upon a subject Bantu race. Thus east of Uganda, on the other side of the Nile, live the Wasoga, who agree in most respects with the Waganda, but are blacker in colour, and contain a larger proportion of Negro blood. They resemble the Waganda in stature and physique, in the absence of bodily mutilations, and in the use of bark-cloth garments and of the banana as the staple food. On the other hand, they offer a striking contrast to the naked people of Kavirondo, their neighbours to the south-east. Lugard, in describing the Wasoga, remarks on their superior type, adding that "their quick eyes and high foreheads bespeak a higher intelligence than the Wakavirondo."

The Wasoga dress in long robes of bark-cloth, made by hammering the bark of fig-trees. The costume consists of a long flowing mantle, which stretches from the shoulders or the waist to the ankles. But, as is so often the case with African tribes, morality does not coincide with decent dress. Polygamy is prevalent, and the chiefs number their wives by the hundred.

Photo by Richard Buchta.

A PRINCESS OF UNYORO (FULL-FACE).

The villages are large and open, and consist of circular huts, with high, conical, thatched roofs: in the largest huts the roof is supported on vertical walls, but in the huts of the peasants the thatch-cone rests upon the ground.

The main industry is agriculture, and the staple food is the banana, which also furnishes the chief native drink, a banana beer or *pombe*. Hemp is grown and smoked in small clay pipes.

The Wanyoro.

On the side of Uganda opposite Usoga is Unyoro, the country of the Wanyoro, who are also a race of Bantu Negroes modified by Wahuma influence.

Baker, coming from the north, was as much impressed by the contrast between the chaos of the Nilotic Negroes and the feudal organisation in Unyoro, as Stanley, coming from the south, was fascinated by the difference between the petty Bantu

communities and the centralised government of Uganda. Every district in Unyoro was governed by a chief, responsible to the king, and controlling a number of sub-chiefs and a series of lower officials. In the event of war every governor could appear at the head of his contingent at short notice.

The Wanyoro appear to have been less altered by the Wahuma than the Waganda, for they retain the widespread Negro custom of extracting the front teeth in the lower jaw; and they practise scar-tattooing, the tribal mark being two rows of scars across the forehead. They are a shorter race than the Waganda, of a lighter and generally redder complexion. Baker's description of Kabaregga, who was king at the time of his visit, shows the general characters of one of the ruling caste. Kabaregga was said to be the sixteenth king since the conquest:—

"Kabaregga was about 5 feet 10 inches in height, and of extremely light complexion. His eyes were very large, but projected in a disagreeable manner. A broad but low forehead and high cheek-bones, added to a large mouth, with rather prominent but exceedingly white teeth, complete the description of his face. His hands were beautifully shaped."

Photo by Richard Buchta.

A PRINCESS OF UNYORO (PROFILE).

In general culture the people resemble the Waganda, but are in some respects inferior. Their huts, for example, are not so well built, and are beehive-shaped, thatched houses, supported on a central pole. The chief town, Masindé was described by Baker as composed of several thousands of such huts. The national weapon is the spear, instead of the bow and arrow; and the dress consists of robes of bark-cloth.

The marriage system, as in Uganda, is unlimited polygamy, and the closest blood-relatives may marry. Mohammedanism has been introduced and has made considerable progress, and will probably limit this system. The national religion is fetishism, and human sacrifices were recklessly offered, especially at the death of a king. The burial rites are described by Baker as follows: "The body of the king is mummified by being roasted over a slow fire, and is then laid out in state in a large hut. His successor plants his spear at the right hand of the corpse as a symbol of his succession and victory over rival claimants. A huge pit is dug and lined with bark-cloth. During the night before the burial the king's own regiment seizes a number of people and brings the captives to the graveside. The body of the king is placed upon the knees of a group of his wives, who sit at the bottom of the pit. The legs and arms of the captives are broken with clubs, and they are thrown into the pit on to the top of the king's body and wives. Earth is shovelled in and stamped into a compact mass by thousands of the people, while the shrieks of the victims are drowned by drums and shouts. The mangled mass is buried and trodden down beneath a tumulus of earth, and all is still. The funeral is over."

The Monbuttu, or Mangbattu.

West of Unyoro, in the basin of the Ubangi, the great north-eastern tributary of the Congo, dwell the Monbuttu (Junker's Mangbattu), who are allied by some of their physical features

and by their political system to the Waganda group, but who by their language and by many of their customs are akin to the Nilotic Negroes. The Monbuttu were first visited by Schweinfurth, who estimated their numbers at about 1,000,000 and their territory at nearly 4,000 square miles. But their kingdom was overrun by Arab raiders, and they are now subjects of the Congo Free State.

In physical character the Monbuttu are remarkable for their light brown tint, light greyish hair, long curved nose, and the somewhat Semitic form of the skull. Schweinfurth described the king as a man with "small whiskers and a tolerably thick beard; his perfectly Caucasian nose offered a remarkable contrast to the thick and protruding Negro lips. In his eyes gleamed the wild light of animal sensuality, and around his mouth lurked an expression of avarice, violence, and love of cruelty that could with the extremest difficulty relax into a smile." The king was autocratic, and the political organisation of the country similar to that of Uganda before the British annexation. "The Monbuttu," says Schweinfurth, "are subject to a monarchical government of an importance beyond the average of those of Central Africa; and in its institutions it appears to correspond with the descriptions of Negro empires long since passed away." At the time of Schweinfurth's visit the king held his court in a palatial hall 100 feet long by 50 feet wide, and with a vaulted roof 40 feet high; he sat at one end on a throne, surrounded by his courtiers, officials, and marshals. He received taxes from his subjects, and had a monopoly of the ivory.

Photo by Richard Buchta.

A MONBUTTU NEGRESS.

The dress of the Monbuttu is simple: the women have only a plantain leaf hanging down from a narrow girdle; while the men are wrapped in a mantle made from the bark of a fig-tree. The hair in both sexes is worn as a cylindrical chignon. The women have bands of scars cut across their breasts and back, and are painted in various designs. The ornaments worn consist of chains of teeth and steel rings and copper necklaces. The weapons are curved swords, long-headed spears, knives, daggers, bows and arrows. The tools used include the spade for agricultural work, axes for tree-felling, and adzes for carpentry and hollowing out canoes, which are sometimes 40 feet long by 5 feet wide.

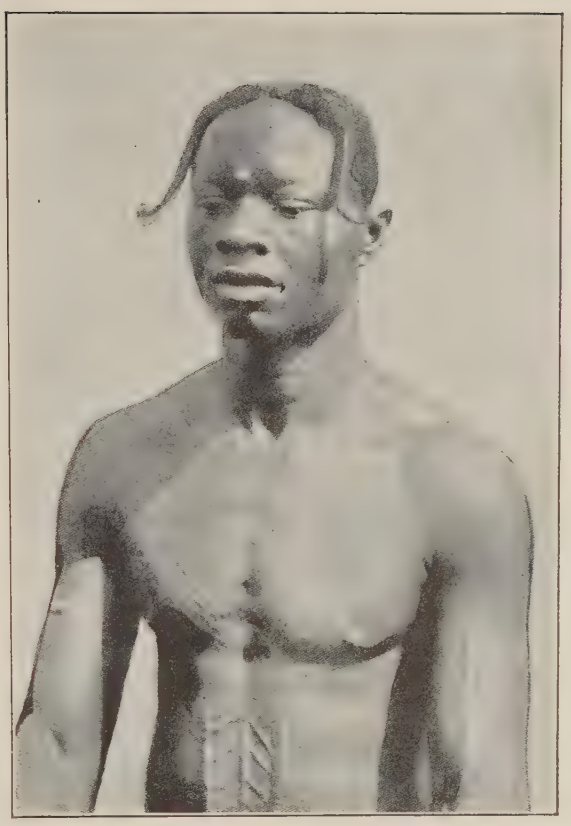
The ordinary dwelling-huts are two-roomed buildings 30 feet long by 20 feet wide: the roofs are overhanging, and are lined with plantain leaves. The huts are placed in rows on the banks of the numerous streams.

The staple food of the country is the plantain; but various grains, cassava, yams, ground-nuts, and tobacco are also grown. The food is mixed with oil obtained from the oil-palm and sesame. Tobacco is largely grown, and its foreign origin is clearly indicated by its name, *eh tobboo*. Meat is obtained by hunting and fish by poisoning the streams with the juice of the Tephrosia. Cannibalism was practised extensively. Schweinfurth reports that while he was in the Monbuttu country a child was killed every day for the king's meal.

Weaving and tanning are unknown; but the people are very skilful metal-workers and wood-carvers; while the pottery, like the black earthenware of Uganda, is very superior to that of the average African native.

The whole of the agricultural work is done by the women, who are treated by the men on terms of equality. But polygamy is the rule, and the king's wives are numbered by the hundred.

Though many of the habits and institutions of the Monbuttu are similar to those of the



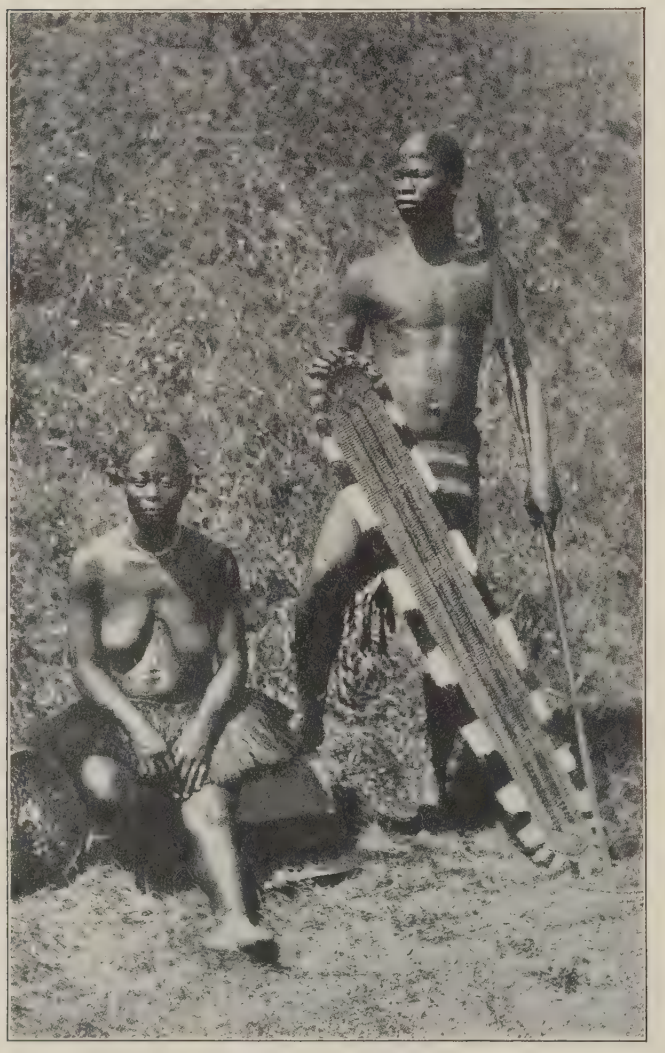
CONGO NATIVES.

Waganda and Wanyoro on the eastern side of the Nile, their language belongs to the group spoken in East Soudan. The probable explanation of the characters of the Monbuttu is that they are Negroes allied to the Niam-niam, but altered by Wahuma influence. Though they are therefore not Bantu, they may be included as the westernmost of the Kitwara states.

b. THE BANTU OF WESTERN AFRICA.

THE west coast of Africa from the angle of the Gulf of Guinea southward to Damaraland is occupied by Bantu tribes, who may be divided into two groups—the people of Angola, and the Bantu of the French Congo and the Cameroons. Inland is a third group—the tribes of the Congo Basin.

The natives of the coast lands of the Portuguese province of Angola have been greatly altered by foreign influences. The Angola tribes belong to three groups. The northern part of the country for 120 miles south of the Congo is occupied by members of the race of the Bakongo. The southern coast region is inhabited by the Abunda. The south-eastern or inland section of Angola is occupied by a group of tribes known as the Ganguella, or "stammerers." These Ganguella inhabit the basin of the Liba, a tributary of the Zambesi; and one section of the race, known as the Balunda, is dominant in the Kasai, the great southern tributary of the Congo.



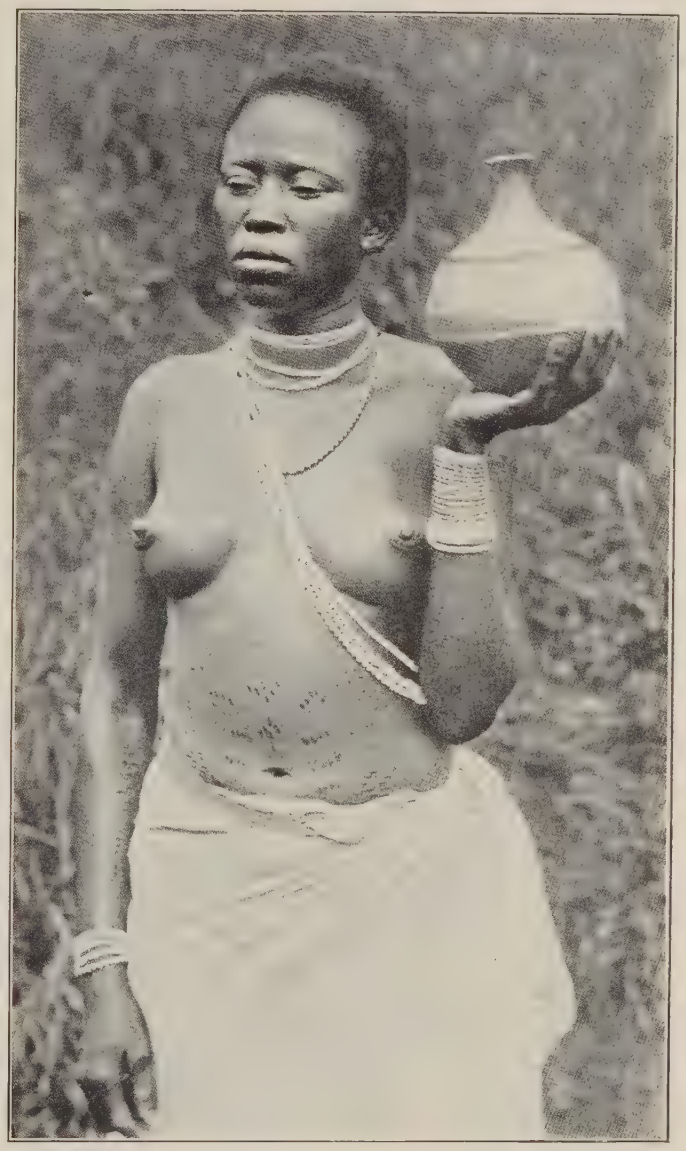
TWO CONGO NATIVES.

The Bakongo, who occupy Northern Angola, give their name to the Congo River, along which they extend far into the interior. The Bakongo are divided into several sections; close to the coast there are the Kabinda to the north of the Congo and the Mushikongo to the south of it. Inland they reach Stanley Pool, beyond which they are replaced by the purer-bred Bantu of the interior. Johnston points out that there are two different types among the Congo peoples: one of which is "a fine, tall, upright man, with delicately small hands and well-shaped feet, a fine face, high, thin nose, beard, moustache, and a plentiful crop of hair; the other an ill-shaped, loosely-made figure, with splay feet, high calves, a retreating chin, blubber lips, no hair about the face, and the wool on his head close and crisply curled. The farther you go into the interior, the finer the type becomes. Such men as the Bayansi of Bolobo are perfect Greek statues in the development and poise of their forms, and two points about them contrast very favourably with most of the coast races—namely, their lighter colour, generally a warm chocolate, and their freedom from that offensive smell which is supposed, wrongly, to characterise most Africans. Many other details show the comparatively high status of the Upper Congo races—their small

hands and feet, their well-shaped legs with full calves, and their abundant heads of hair."

But if the coast members of the Congo tribes are physically inferior to the natives of the interior, they compensate for this by intelligence. Stanley describes them as exceptionally shrewd in trade. He purchased the site of the Congo Free State station at Vivi from some of the Kabinda, and found they drove a hard bargain.

"In the management of a bargain," said Stanley, "I should back the Congoese native against Jew or Christian, Parsee or Banyan, in all the round world. Unthinking men may perhaps say cleverness at barter and shrewdness in trade consort not with their unsophisticated condition and degraded customs. 'Unsophisticated' is the last term I should ever apply to an African child or man in connection with the knowledge of how to trade. Apply the term, if you please, to yourself or to a Red Indian, but it is utterly inapplicable to an African, and this is my seventeenth year of acquaintance with him. I have seen a child of eight do more tricks of trade in an hour than the cleverest European trader on the Congo could do in a month. There is a little boy at Bolobo, aged six, named Lingenji, who would make more profit out of £1 worth of cloth than an English boy of fifteen would make out of £10 worth. Therefore, when I write of a Congo native, whether he is of the Bakongo, Bayanzi, or Bateke tribes, remember to associate him with an almost inconceivable amount of natural shrewdness, and power of indomitable and untiring chaffer."



A CONGO WOMAN.

The tribes at the mouth of the Congo have been subject to foreign influences for so long a time that they are less interesting ethnographically than the more primitive races of the interior. Between Stanley Pool and the coast races are the Bakongo, whom Johnston has described as intermediate between the pure Bantu of the interior and the Kabinda: "Their skin is not the dead coal-black of the coast tribes, but is often a warm chocolate or ruddy brown. They do not practise much personal adornment, either by cicatrisation, tattooing, or painting the skin with divers pigments. They are naturally a hairy race, especially about the face—some of the chiefs wearing copious beards, whiskers, and moustaches—but on the body the pile is plucked out from the age of puberty, otherwise their bodies would be partially covered with short curly hair. The two front incisor teeth are occasionally chipped; but this is not a regular custom, as it is farther up the river. In character the Bakongo are indolent, fickle, and sensual. They dislike bloodshed as a general rule, and, save for certain superstitious customs, are rarely cruel, showing kindness and gentleness to animals. When their passions

are excited, however, by fear of witchcraft or a wish to revenge grave injuries, they can become very demons of fanatical rage; and the people, that in their calmer moments will shudder at an abrasion of the skin in a friend or neighbour, will, when he is convicted of sorcery, leap and shout with frenzied joy around his fiery stake while he frizzles alive."

The Bakongo are often known as the Bafiort (properly Bafiot), which, however, is not a clan or even a tribal name, but merely an epithet meaning "Black," applied to them by their Bakongo neighbours. The name Bafiort is well known, owing to its adoption by Dennett in his works on the folklore and customs of these people. The Bakongo tribe is important in connection with Negro religion, as it constitutes the fourth of Miss Kingsley's four schools of West African fetish. Its fetish "is mainly concerned with the worship of the mystery of the power of the Earth." Every normal death is attributed to witchcraft; some one is charged by the medicine-man, and the accused is compelled to submit to the poison ordeal. Phallic worship is included among the rites of the tribe, and the transition from boyhood to manhood is marked by a prolonged and elaborate series of initiation rites.

Passing from the Lower to the Middle Congo, we enter a region occupied by tribes of pure Bantu stock. The chief tribes are the Bateke, about Stanley Pool; the Bayansi or Byyanzi, above the junction of the Kasai; the Bangala, between the Ubangi and the Congo; and the Balolo, in the great bend of the Congo. These people, says Johnston, "are pure Bantu, and consequently greatly resemble other unmixed races of the same stock, such as the Ovambo, the Balunda, and the people of Tanganyika and Nyasa. They differ from more negroid Bakongo in having skins of a chocolate brown, and above all, in their abundant growth of hair. The beard, whiskers, and moustache are always present, but are generally, in common with the hair of the eyebrows and the eyelashes, plucked out, from a prejudice against cultivating hair anywhere but on the top of the head." The body is extensively decorated with cicatrisation. The characters of the skull vary considerably, suggesting that even here there has been a considerable intermixture of races. The nose is usually flat, with widely opened nostrils, but people with a high nose are not unknown. The lips, again, are often thick and turned outward, like those of the conventional "nigger," but some of the people have thin lips. The chin may be prominent and heavy, or weak and receding.

A CONGO MAN AND WOMAN.

In mental characters the Middle Congo natives are also more attractive than those of the Lower Congo. The medicine-man is unimportant or unknown: the people are not haunted by poison ordeal or "pestered with initiation ceremonies." In character, says Sir Harry Johnston, "they are kindly, light-hearted, and full of sensibility to beauty. They are fond of colour and of music, and indulge in dancing that has much meaning and grace. They are decidedly amorous in disposition, but there is a certain poetry in their feelings which ennobles their love above mere passion. Husbands are fond of their own wives as well as those of other people, and many a pretty family picture may be seen in their

homesteads, when the father and mother romp with their children, or sit together in a munching group round the supper-pot."

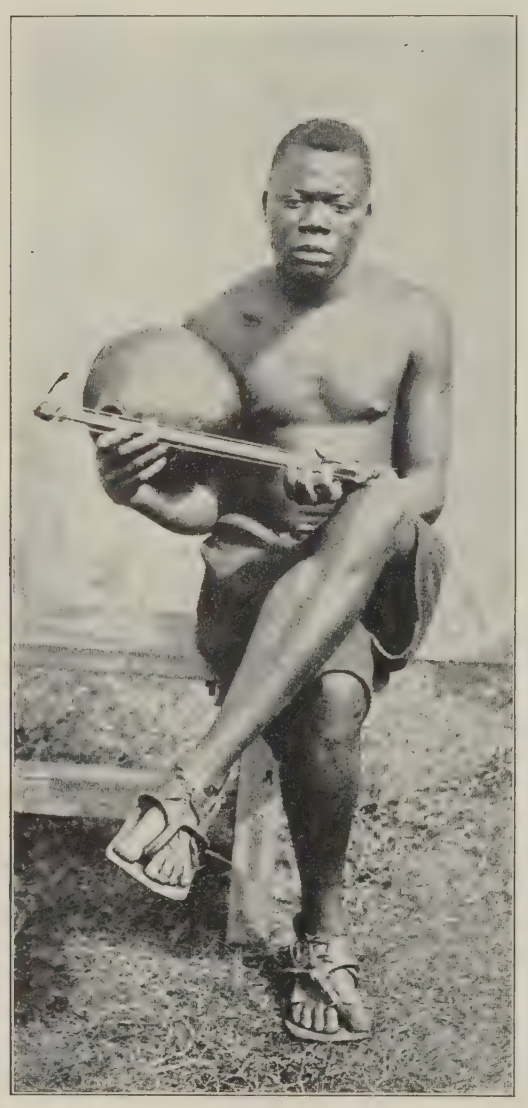
Clothing among the Middle Congo tribes is very simple, consisting of a little grass-cloth. Ornaments of feathers and fur, shells, glass, and metal beads, are worn, and the skin is decorated by stripes of paint or an extensive series of cicatrices. Sometimes this scar-tattooing is decorative and covers the body, as among the Bangala: other peoples use it only as a tribal distinction, such as the horizontal series of scars across the cheek-bones of the Bateke, or the band across the forehead of the Bayansi. The dressing of the hair is very elaborate. One favourite design, which is illustrated in a drawing of the head of an Mboko shown on page 329, is an imitation of the horns of the buffalo.

The ordinary huts of the natives are formed of mats woven from a reedy grass or the fibres of plants. That of the chief is constructed more skilfully of palm leaves, and is encircled by a fence of reeds. The household furniture and utensils are of the most primitive type.

A GROUP OF CONGO MEN.

It is, however, by their arts and industries that the Middle Congo Bantu especially excel. Herein they are superior to any of their neighbours. Their weapons are of first-rate workmanship. Their knives and spears are of well-tempered steel: the handles are excellently carved, and inlaid with brass and metal slips. Their furniture consists of stools and pillows carved from single blocks of wood. Their pottery, though hand-moulded, is graceful in form. They are devoted to music, and play the drum or tom-tom, trumpets made from antelope horns, the *marimba* or primitive piano, and a five-stringed lyre. Their knives are varied in shape, some being either throwing-knives or retaining traces of the shape of that weapon. Battle-axes are not used, but the weapon survives in a much decorated and useless form as a symbol of authority.

All along the rivers the natives use canoes, which are often of great size. They are used for war, transport, and fishing. The Congo and its tributaries abound in fish, and the natives



A CONGO NATIVE, WITH PRIMITIVE STRINGED INSTRUMENT.

are very expert in catching them with nets, spears, traps, and lines. The Bayansi carry on a great trade in smoked fish.

The main food, however, is vegetable, especially the banana and plantain. Cassava, maize, and sweet potatoes are also extensively grown. The domestic animals are few, including the goat, dog, pig, fowl, and rarely sheep.

South of the Balolo, who occupy the region within the great bend of the Congo about the lower course of the Kasai and some of the other southern affluents, follow the great nations of the Bakuba, Bakete, and Baluba. The Bakete are probably the oldest settlers in the district. They were broken up first by the invasion of the Bakuba from the north-east: this direction is indicated by the traditions among the Bakuba, and is confirmed by many points of resemblance with the tribes of the North-eastern Congo Basin. The Baluba, on the contrary, came from the south; they were the latest arrivals, and are the dominant race in the Kasai Basin. They have been described in detail by Wissmann. The nation may be divided into two sections: the Western Baluba, known as the Bashilange, are weaker, more ugly, and more mixed than the Eastern Baluba; the relation between the two groups is analogous to that of the Western and Eastern Bakongo. The main point of interest about the Bashilange is their cult of hemp; the great secret or religious society in this nation is known as the Bena-Riamba, or caste of the "sons of hemp."

This association appears to have grown out of a general political and social movement which had its rise about the year 1870, when a large section of the Bashilange (properly Tushilange) became divided into two hostile factions on the question of admitting foreign traders (Angolan Portuguese from the west, Zanzibar Suahili from the east) into their territory. The king having sided with the young or progressive party, the old people, here as elsewhere "Conservatives," were defeated with great slaughter and driven eastwards beyond the Lulua. Thus the barriers of seclusion were broken down, commercial relations were established with the outer world, and the custom of *riamba* (bhang) smoking, already prevalent on the Zanzibar coast, was introduced with many other innovations. It was thus that the Tushilange justified the description given of them by Wissmann, who called them "a nation of thinkers, with the interrogative 'why' constantly on their lips."

Social arrangements among the Upper Congo tribes depend on the conditions of public safety. Polygamy prevails, every man having wives according to his wealth and rank. There are no nuptial ceremonies, and marriage is by purchase or capture, the bridegroom often arranging the alliance by making his father-in-law a present, providing the bride with her marriage outfit, and bearing the cost of a family feast. Funeral rites are simplified by the extensive practice of cannibalism: this is especially prevalent on the Upper Congo, where the dead are nearly always thus disposed of. Chiefs are as a rule formally buried, and the body is supplied with various utensils, and a quantity of cloth, beads, or other article of currency. These goods are broken or damaged either to ensure their dying and going to the spirit-world,

A CONGO WARRIOR AND HIS WIFE.

A GROUP OF CONGO NATIVES DRESSED FOR A WAR-DANCE.

or else, when deposited on the grave above-ground, to prevent them from being picked up as "unconsidered trifles" by passing wayfarers. Several slaves are often killed and buried with the chief, so that he may have the assistance of his former servants. Not infrequently the bodies of the dead are desiccated by roasting, and then buried in the huts which they formerly occupied. The interment is often delayed for a year or more, in order that all the relatives may be present at the "wake."

CHAPTER XV.

THE EQUATORIAL AND NILOTIC NEGROES.

a. THE BANTU OF THE FRENCH CONGO.

WESTERN Equatorial Africa, between the basins of the Congo and the Niger, comprising the regions of the Ogowe, the Gabun, and the Cameroons, was probably once inhabited only by Bantu Negroes. In the Protectorate of the French Congo the main Bantu tribes are the Ashira, Okanda, Apingi, Apono, Ishogo, and the Ashango, whose numbers have now been reduced by the invasion of the Fans, a people of doubtful negroid affinities.

The tribes in this area belong to what Miss Kingsley calls the Mpongwe school of fetish, in which the main idea is by the aid of charms to secure increased material prosperity.

THE ASHIRA.

The Ashira, Okanda, Apingi, and Apono are closely allied tribes or sections of one great nation occupying the upper basin of the Ngunie River, one of the tributaries of the Ogowe. The Ashira live the nearest to the coast, and have been rapidly adopting the customs of the coast tribes. Their original grass-cloth garments have been superseded by thin cotton-cloths, which rapidly become dirty and ragged. Their main food is the plantain, which is grown in plantations of great extent: du Chaillu estimated that one at the village of Angouka contained some 30,000 trees. Each tree bears a bunch which ranges in weight up to 120 lbs. The general customs of the tribe are the same as those subsequently discovered among the Okanda and Apono, who live farther inland, and have doubtless preserved the primitive systems less altered. But owing to their closer intercourse with the coast tribes the western Ashira are less shy, and more is known of their religious beliefs. They, of course, believe in fetish, and their firm faith in immortality is shown by their burial customs. The cemeteries are just outside the villages, and the body is placed in a sitting posture on the ground. In the case of a chief who died while Paul du Chaillu was crossing the district, the body was wrapped in a European coat and placed beside an umbrella, both of which articles had been begged from du Chaillu. In addition there was a chest containing plates, jugs,

A CONGO MAN IN NATIVE CANOE.

cooking utensils, the chief's favourite pipe, and some tobacco. A fire was kept burning beside the body for some weeks, and a plate of food was provided daily.

The marriage limitations of the Ashira are interesting. All unions between blood-relatives are prohibited; but a man may marry all the wives of a deceased uncle or his step-mother.

The Ishogo.

The Ishogo are described by du Chaillu as a tribe of fine men, superior in physique to the Ashira and in mental qualities to the Fans, whom they resemble in bodily structure. They live in the French Congo, on the mountains around the upper part of the Rembo River, south of the Ogowe. They inhabit large villages of about 150 huts, arranged in well-planned streets. The huts are large, and divided into several rooms; they are provided with low wooden doors, painted with coloured designs. The dress is limited to a small petticoat of grass-cloth. The body is coloured red with a powder obtained from a native wood, and is ornamented by an elaborate series of scars; the main tribal mark appears to be a few pea-shaped scars raised between the eyebrows and the cheeks. Formerly the practice of pulling out the two middle upper incisors and filing the others to points was universally adopted. The most remarkable personal adornments are the women's chignons, formed by plaiting the well-greased hair on to a cylindrical grass-work tower: the chignon is about 9 inches long, and rises from the head either vertically or horizontally backward; the rest of the head is shaved. The men have the hair worked into flat flaps hanging round the sides of the head, while the crown is shaved. In both sexes the eyebrows and eyelashes are all removed. The chief metal ornaments are neck-rings and armlets of brass and iron, while the women also wear long strings of beads. The Ishogo are very peaceful, and usually go unarmed; the sword is their chief weapon, but they have in addition spears, bows, and arrows. They are agriculturists, and live mainly on plantains. Their chief industry is the weaving of palm fibres into grass-cloth in primitive hand-looms and the plaiting of baskets. They grow tobacco, which is smoked in pipes, and an intoxicating drink is made from palm sap.

Photo by Mr. Ernest Gedge] *[Ludborough.*

TREATY-MAKING, KIKUYU.

Like all West African Negroes, they believe in fetishes, and have a fetish-hut in the centre of the village beside a sacred fig-tree. This tree is planted at the foundation of the village; when it dies, the site is abandoned and a new village founded elsewhere. The language of the Ishogo is distinct from that of their neighbours the Ashira, but is the same as that of the Apingi.

Photo by Mr. Ernest Gedge] *[Ludborough.*
WYAKI AND HIS BROTHER CHIEF, KIKUYU.

The Apono.

The Apono are the most inland members of the Ashira group. They are close neighbours of the Ishogo. They seem to have retained more of the primitive characters of the tribe than their western allies. Like most of the adjacent Negroes, they ornament the body with a system of scar-tattooing, their peculiar tribal mark being a lozenge-shaped group of nine prominences the size of peas, placed between the eyebrows. The villages of the Apono are large, well planned, and clean. The people are brave and warlike, and at the same time they are industrious. They dig and smelt nodules of iron ore, and work the metal into spear-heads, triangular arrow-points, and curved sword-blades. Their spears have long, lance-shaped heads, and are used for thrusting and not throwing. The arrow-heads are poisoned and loosely attached to the shaft, so that the latter falls off, while the barb remains in the body. The chief weapon of defence is a round shield made of wicker-work.

Like the other sections of the Ashira, the Apono weave grass-cloth for clothing, and twist their hair into elaborate horn-like or tower-like projections. They are mainly agricultural, and have large groves of plantains, lime-trees, and palms. Their domestic animals include the goat, fowl, and pig. They prepare great quantities of palm wine, and while the supply lasts they habitually get drunk and are very quarrelsome, and their dancing and drinking festivals are described as scenes of wild uproar.

The Apingi.

The Apingi are a smaller and less sturdy race and are lighter in colour than the Apono. They pull out two of the upper incisor teeth, and file the others and the lower incisors to points; but the custom is said to be slowly dying out. They have the same habits as the Ashira, but are less industrious. Their methods in surgery, according to du Chaillu, are drastic; he describes an operation on a woman who was suffering from leprosy and lumbago. In order to cure the latter disease the woman's back was cut in many places with a knife, and quantities of lime juice and pounded cayenne pepper vigorously rubbed into the wound. It is recorded that the patient screamed, but not that she was cured. In another case an effort was made

to cure a chief by marking his body with chalk made from the bones of his ancestors, spitting on the affected parts of the patient's body, and touching them with a burning grass torch. Du Chaillu regards this medical use of fire as a kind of fire-worship. The same author has given a graphic account of an ordeal at which three nephews of the Okanda chief were compelled to drink poison on suspicion of having bewitched the chief. The accused men said they were not afraid to drink the poison, for they were not wizards and would not die. The poison was accordingly prepared, and the people of the village assembled to watch its effect. "When the poor fellows were brought into the middle of the circle of excited spectators, it was horrid to see the ferocity expressed in the countenances of the people; it seemed as though their nature had entirely changed. Knives, axes, and spears were held ready to be used on the bodies of the victims if they should succumb under the ordeal. A breathless silence prevailed whilst the young men took the much-dreaded cups of liquid and boldly swallowed the contents; the whispering of the wind could be heard through the leaves of the surrounding trees. But it was only of short duration. As soon as the poison was drunk, the crowd began to beat their sticks on the ground, and shout, 'If they are wizards, let the *mboundou* kill them; if innocent, let it go out!' repeating the words as long as the suspense lasted. The struggle was a severe one; the eyes of the young men became bloodshot, their limbs trembled convulsively, and every muscle in their bodies was visibly working under the potent irritation. The more acute their sufferings became, the louder vociferated the excited assembly. I was horror-stricken, and, although I would gladly have fled from the place, felt transfixed to the spot. I knew that if they fell I should have no power to save them, but should be forced to see them torn limb from limb. At length, however, the crisis came—a sudden shiver of the body and involuntary discharge—and the first intended victim had escaped. The same soon after happened to the second and to the third. They gradually came back to their former state, but appeared very much exhausted. The trial was over, and the doctor closed the ceremony by himself drinking an enormous quantity of the poison, with a similar result to that which we had witnessed in the young men, only that he appeared quite tipsy; in his wild and incoherent sayings he stated that the bewitchers of Mayolo [the chief] did not belong to the village—a decision which was received with great acclamation. Mayolo rejoiced that the wizards did not belong to his own people, and the whole people were wild with joy; guns were fired, and the evening passed with beating of drums, singing, and dancing."

Photo by Richard Buchta.

A GROUP OF NIAM-NIAM NATIVES.

The Ashango.

The Ashango are the dominant tribe in Ashangoland, a district in the French Congo, south of the Ogowe. They are neighbours of the Ishogo, and have many of the same

Photo by Richard Buchta.

NIAM-NIAM WARRIORS.

customs and similar physical structure; but they speak a different language, which is that of the Ashira. The Ashango are described as a less peaceful and industrious tribe than the Ishogo. Thus they always carry their swords, and usually also their spears and poisoned arrows. They do not make any of their weapons, which they buy from tribes farther inland. They make brass ornaments out of wire, but do not smelt iron. Their houses are larger than those of the Ishogo, but the villages are less well arranged. They are less particular over their hair and ornaments, but wear more clothes. They cultivate vast crops of ground-nuts, and nearly every hut has one or more hives of bees. They keep flocks of poultry and herds of goats, but the women and girls are not allowed to eat the flesh of these animals. The people make palm wine and smoke tobacco in pipes which are 3 feet long. Their fetish rites have been studied by du Chaillu, who has described a festival he was allowed to attend in the village of Niembouai: "The idol was a monstrous and indecent representation of a female figure in wood, which was kept at the end of a long, narrow, and low hut, 40 or 50 feet long and 10 feet broad, and was painted in red, white, and black colours. When I entered the hut, it was full of Ashango people, ranged in order on each side, with lighted torches stuck in the ground before them. Amongst them were conspicuous two *mbuiti* men, or, as they might be called, priests, dressed in cloth of vegetable fibre, with their skins painted grotesquely in various colours, one side of the face red, the other white, and in the middle of the breast a broad yellow stripe; the circuit of the eyes was also daubed with paint. These colours are made by boiling various kinds of wood, and mixing the decoction with clay. The rest of the Ashangoes were also streaked and daubed with various colours, and by the light of their torches they looked like a troop of devils assembled in the lower regions to celebrate some diabolical rite; around their legs were bound white leaves from the heart of the palm-tree; some wore feathers, others had leaves twisted in the shape of horns behind their ears, and all had a bundle of palm leaves in their hands. Soon after I entered the rites began. All the men squatted down on their haunches, and set up a deafening kind of wild song. There was an orchestra of instrumental performers near the idol, consisting of three drummers with two drumsticks each, one harper, and a performer on the sounding-stick, which latter did not touch the ground, but rested on two other sticks, so that the noise was made more resonant. The two *mbuiti* men, in the meantime, were dancing in a fantastical manner in the middle of the temple, putting their bodies into all sorts of strange contortions. Every time the *mbuiti* men opened their mouths to speak a dead silence ensued. As the ceremony continued, the crowd rose and surrounded the dancing men, redoubling at the same time the volume of their songs, and after this went on for some time returning to their former positions. This was repeated several times. It

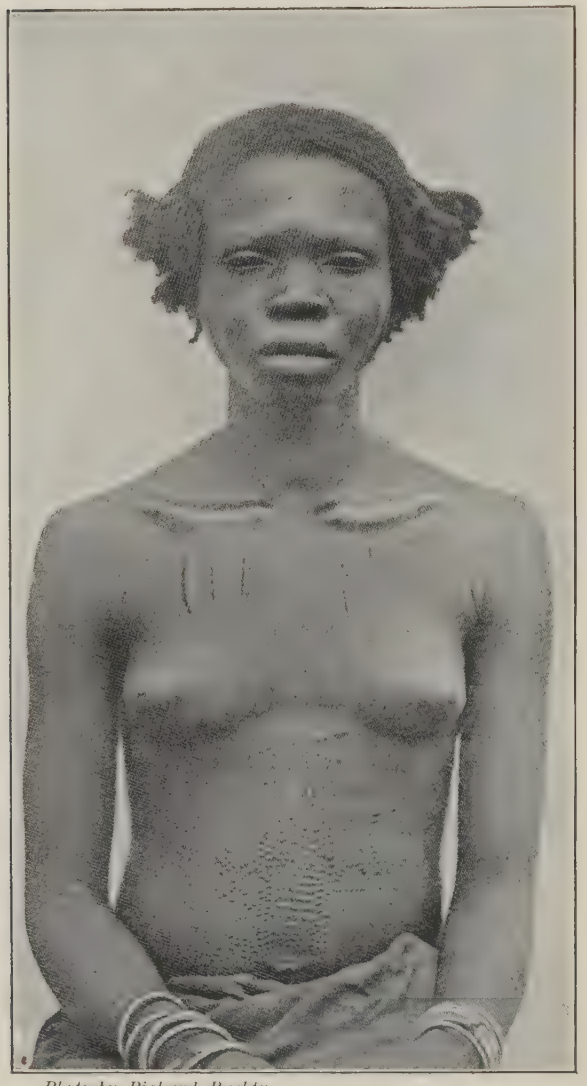


Photo by Richard Buchta.

A NIAM-NIAM GIRL.

seemed to me to be a kind of village feast. At length, wearied out with the noise, and being unable to see any meaning or any change in the performances, I returned to my hut."

b. THE NEGROES OF THE EQUATORIAL BELT.

Scattered along the Equatorial zone between Mount Kenya on the east and the Gabun on the west is a group of isolated Negro tribes, intermediate in character between the Bantu and the Nilotic Negroes. The typical and central tribe is that of the Niam-niam, of the north-eastern corner of the Congo Basin; their allies probably include the Kikuyu of British East Africa and the Fans of the Gabun.

The Kikuyu.

On the southern slopes of Mount Kenya, and extending south-westward to the edge of the great Rift Valley that traverses British East Africa, is a belt of undulating volcanic country, once densely covered with forests. This is the home of the Kikuyu, one of the most powerful and successful of the agricultural tribes in British East Africa.

They are a powerfully built, muscular race, brave, but excitable. In general physical characters they resemble the Masai. Their colour is a dark chocolate-brown. They have somewhat round heads, wide noses, thick lips, small pointed chins, oval eyes, and high cheek-bones. "The Kikuyu," says Lugard, "are a fine, intelligent-looking race, with high foreheads and well-formed heads." The dress of the warriors consists of a flap of skin hung over the shoulders to protect the lungs. The rest of the body is smeared with ochre and oil. The elders wear a long leather mantle; the women usually have on an apron of untanned leather hanging from the waist.

Photo by Richard Buchta.

A NIAM-NIAM WITCH-DOCTOR.

The ornaments of the tribe are earrings—including rings, studs, and short wooden rods in the upper ear—and disks, and elaborate coils and rings of metal, by which the lower lobe of the ear is greatly distended. The men have strong ivory or metal armlets on the upper arm, which are said to strengthen its muscles. The warriors wear elaborate feather head-ornaments like those of the Masai. Usually most of the head is shaved, but, as with the Niam-niam, a patch of hair is left on the back of the skull; the hair, if not shaved, is twisted into long tags, which are lengthened by plaiting in vegetable fibres, and the whole is plastered with red clay and oil.

The Kikuyu weapons are leaf-shaped spears about 9 inches broad, with long wooden

Photo by Richard Buchta.
A NIAM-NIAM NATIVE.

handles, heavy two-edged swords of the Arab pattern, bows, and barbed or poisoned arrows. The spearmen carry long, heavy, oval leather shields of the same type as those of the Masai; they are about 5 feet long, and, like those of the Masai, are decorated with heraldic designs.

Their huts are well built, and are circular, with high walls and a conical roof.

The main industry of the Kikuyu is agriculture, and they are the most skilful and industrious husbandmen in British East Africa. The extent of their plantations is enormous. "The cultivation of Kikuyu," remarks Lugard, "is prodigiously extensive; indeed, the whole country may be said to be under tillage." Their chief crops are beans, millet, dhurra, plantains, sweet potatoes, yams, sugar-cane, tobacco, and castor oil. The Kikuyu once had many cattle, but the Masai and the rinderpest have decimated the herds. They have many sheep and goats, and every village has hives of wild bees, for whom wooden hives made from hollow logs of timber are hung in the trees.

The affinities of the Kikuyu are not well established. Their nearest neighbours in the south and east are Bantu, and on the north and west the Masai. Their language is Bantu, but is different from that of their Bantu neighbours. Their nearest affinities appear to be with the Negro tribes of the group of the Azandeh, or Niam-niam, of the Upper Congo. They may therefore be regarded as an eastern outlier of the belt of Equatorial Negroes, cut off from their western allies by the Masai invasion along the line of the Rift Valley. It is possible that the tribe contains some Hamitic infusion, in which case it may be described as Negroid rather than Negro.

The evidence for the affinity of the Kikuyu with the Equatorial Negroes rests on their physical appearance, their mental characteristics, their general culture, and especially on their religious rites. They circumcise in a remarkable manner, different from that of the East African Bantu and similar to that of the Masai. They are intensely superstitious, and attach great importance to fetish rules and religious observances. The Kikuyu have greater faith in the sanctity of blood-brotherhood than the usual East African Bantu. Strangers are not allowed to enter the country until the path has been sprinkled with the blood of newly killed goats. The rite of blood-brotherhood as celebrated by the Kikuyu is as follows:—The stranger and a Kikuyu elder sit side by side on the ground on a log of wood; the arm of each is slightly cut, and the blood smeared on to pieces of the liver of a freshly killed goat. The weapons of the two men are placed together over their heads, and a knife is drawn backward and forward along the weapons by a man who sings a wild incantation. While this is being done the men exchange their pieces of liver and swallow them. After such a celebration a stranger is safe from attack from the particular section of the Kikuyu nation with whom the rite has been observed.

The Azandeh, or Niam-niam.

The most typical tribe of the Equatorial Negroes is that known as the Niam-niam, Azandeh, or Zandey, which lives about the watershed between the Bahr-el-Ghazl and the North-eastern Congo. They were once a powerful and numerous people, with a reputation for ferocity. In appearance they are very unlike most of the surrounding tribes, for they have a round, broad head and a circular face; the eyes are almond-shaped and sloping, the nose is

Photo by Lekegian & Co.] [*Cairo.*

TYPICAL WOMEN OF THE EQUATORIAL REGION.

Photo by Lekegian & Co.]

WOMEN AND CHILDREN OF EQUATORIAL AFRICA.

flat and square, the lips very thick, and the chin round. The colour of the skin is of a chocolate-brown hue. As a race they are remarkably adroit and agile. Schweinfurth stated that "nowhere in any part of Africa have I ever come across a people that in every attitude and every motion exhibited so thorough a mastery over all the circumstances of war or of the chase as these Niam-niam. Other nations in comparison seemed to me to fall short in the perfect ease—I might almost say in the dramatic grace—that characterised their every movement."

Their dress usually consists of a mantle of untanned leather or undressed skins, and strips of the beautiful black-and-white skin of the Colobus monkey are frequently hung from the girdle. The chiefs wear a head-dress of the skin of leopard or wild cat. The arrangement of the hair among the men is very elaborate; it is plaited into tufts, ridges, rolls, or knots; or into rays, connected at the end to a circular hoop. The body is stained red and further ornamented by various scar-patterns; but the tribal mark is a set of squares filled with dots, placed on the cheeks or forehead. Their ornaments consist chiefly of strings of the teeth of dogs and other animals and of blue beads.

The Niam-niam are armed with lances, two-edged swords, knives, and large painted shields; but their peculiar weapon is the throwing-axe; it is made of wood or iron and curved like a boomerang, and is used for killing birds and game as well as in war. The huts are large and well built: the roofs are as a rule simply conical, but they may be double-pointed; the eaves project beyond the walls, which are decorated with black-and-white patterns. About ten or a dozen huts occur together in a circle round an open space, in which is a pole adorned with trophies of war and the chase.

The people practise both agriculture and hunting, the women being engaged in field operations, while the men pursue the quarry. The principal agricultural product is eleusine, which is eaten as porridge, and from which, after malting, is prepared a very intoxicating beer. Crops of cassava, sweet potatoes, and yams, and a little maize, are also raised. Tobacco is grown extensively and smoked in clay pipes. Cattle are very scarce, but poultry and dogs abundant.

These food-supplies are supplemented by the practice of cannibalism. Piaggia, the first European to travel in the country, witnessed the eating of the body of an enemy killed in war; and both Schweinfurth and Junker have collected conclusive evidence of cannibal habits.

Iron-working and the manufacture of weapons, pottery, basket-weaving, and wood-carving are the main handicrafts.

Marriage is not based on purchase, but the chief selects a bride when a man applies for one. The marriage is celebrated by a festival, during which the chief, accompanied by his musicians, leads the woman to the house of her future husband. The chief on these occasions is accompanied by the tribal muscians, who play on a primitive guitar, shake bells, and sing. The burial rites retain a custom which is widely but sparsely scattered among Negro tribes; for the corpse, after being dyed red and adorned with feathers, is placed in a hole at one side of the grave, so that the earth is not thrown directly upon it. Men are buried facing the east and women facing the west.

The Niam-niam have a profound belief in goblins and evil spirits, and, like many other African tribes, think they especially haunt the forests. Auguries are consulted on all important occasions.

The Fans.

About the year 1850 the tribes along the Gabun coast heard of the arrival in the interior of a tribe of cannibals known as the Fans. These invaders at first held only a few villages; but

By permission of the Universities' Mission to Central Africa.

LIBERATED SLAVES FROM CENTRAL AFRICA.

Photo by the Rev. E. E. Nickisson.

A CENTRAL AFRICAN CHIEF AND HIS WIVES.

during the following twenty years they swept westward, destroying many of the coast tribes, until they became the leading people on the Gabun coast. Paul du Chaillu brought back some of their skulls, which Sir Richard Owen described as showing greater cranial capacity than the neighbouring tribes. Lenz described the Fans again in 1878, and in recent times much light has been thrown on them by the daring journey and accurate ethnological studies of Miss Kingsley.

The Fans in all probability are allied to the Niam-niam. Schweinfurth has pointed out the many points of resemblance between the tribes in physical appearance, dress, tribal organisation, and customs.

"They are," says Miss Kingsley, "bright, active, energetic sort of Africans, who by their pugnacious and predatory conduct do much to make one cease to regret and deplore the sloth and lethargy of the rest of the West Coast tribes."

They are on the whole of fine physique, and include magnificent specimens of the human race. "Their colour," continues Miss Kingsley, "is light bronze; many of the men have beards, and albinoes are rare among them. The average height in the mountain districts is from 5 feet 6 inches to 5 feet 8 inches, the difference in stature between men and women not being great. Their countenances are very bright and expressive, and if once you have been among them you can never mistake a Fan. But it is in their mental characteristics that their difference from the lethargic, dying-out coast tribes is most marked. The Fan is full of fire, temper, intelligence, and go; very teachable, rather difficult to manage, quick to take offence, and utterly indifferent to human life. I ought to say that other people, who should know him better than I, say he is a treacherous, thievish, murderous cannibal."

The huts of the Fans are small and lightly constructed, for the people change their residences so frequently that they may be regarded as almost nomadic. Miss Kingsley has described the best hut in one of the villages in which she stayed. The hut was fairly low; for, as she says, "I was as high as its roof-ridge, and had to stoop low to get through the door-hole. Inside the hut was 14 or 15 feet square, unlit by any window. The door-hole could be closed by pushing a broad piece of bark across it under two horizontally fixed bits of stick. The floor was sand, like the outside, but dirtier. On it in one place was a fire, whose smoke found its way out through the roof. In one corner of the room was a rough bench of wood, which, from the few filthy clothes on it, I saw was the bed. There was no other furniture in the hut save some boxes, which I presume held my host's earthly possessions. From the bamboo roof hung a long stick with hooks on it, the hooks made by cutting off branching twigs. This was evidently the hanging wardrobe, and on it hung some few fetish charms."

The huts are usually placed in two opposite rows, the ends of the street thus formed being closed by a guard-house; but in villages with a river frontage there is a single row of huts along the bank.

The main industries of the Fans are pottery, net- and basket-weaving, and iron-working.

Photo by Lekegian & Co.] [*Cairo.*

A MONFU WOMAN.

They especially excel in the last. They have clay furnaces and charcoal fuel, blown by a pair of double bellows. The forge is a round cavity scooped in the ground; the anvil is a large piece of iron; and the hammers are solid iron cones, like pestles.

The Fan method of hunting—which Miss Kingsley has graphically described—is unsportsmanlike. A herd of elephants is driven into an enclosure of felled trees, or such an enclosure is made round a herd when it is at rest. The walls of the enclosure are smeared with an evil-smelling mixture, the odour of which the elephants find so repellent that they make no effort to burst through the enclosure. The elephants are then supplied with poisoned plantains, or the pools in the enclosure are also poisoned. The poison is not fatal, but it makes the elephants weak and drowsy. When it has had sufficient time to do its work, fires are lighted round the fence, and the hunters steal into the enclosure and climb into trees, from which they shoot the elephants as they run past them.

The main trade articles of the Fans are rubber, which they collect in the forests, and ivory. They have an interesting coinage of iron imitation axe-heads, the circulation of which is limited within the tribe.

Photo by Richard Buchta.
A DINKA GIRL (FULL-FACE).

Marriage is a matter of purchase; but there are many limitations, as blood-relatives are forbidden to marry.

Why they have no funeral rites is explained by the prevalence of cannibalism, which is certainly practised by the tribe. Miss Kingsley remarks that, "although a prevalent habit, it is no danger, I think, to white people, except as regards the bother it gives in preventing one's black companions from getting eaten. The Fan is not a cannibal from sacrificial motives. He does it in his common-sense way. Man's flesh, he says, is good to eat, very good, and he wishes you would try it. Oh dear no, he never eats it himself, but the next-door town does. He is always very much abused for eating his relations, but he really does not do this. He will eat his next-door neighbour's relations and sell his own deceased to his next-door neighbour in return; but he does not buy slaves and fatten them up for his table, as some of the Middle Congo tribes do. He has no slaves, no prisoners of war, no cemeteries, so you must draw your own conclusions."

c. THE NILOTIC NEGROES.

In the basin of the Upper Nile, between Fashoda on the north and the Uganda Protectorate and the Congo Free State on the south, dwell a series of Negro tribes who have been included as the Nilotic group. They were originally regarded, from the supposed characters of their language, as allied to the Fulah of the West Soudan and to some Nubian tribes. These races were, therefore, once associated as the Nubar-Fulah group. But Professor Keane has proved that the physical characters of the people as well as their speech show that this association was artificial, and the old group has been dismembered.

The only close allies of these Upper Nile Negroes outside the Nile Basin live in British East Africa. They are the Masai, Njempsians, and their allies, and the people of Kavirondo, on the north-east side of the Victoria Nyanza.

The Nilotic tribes may be considered in four groups: (1) the peoples of the Bahr-el-Ghazl, including the Dinka, Dyur, and Bongo; (2) those of the main Nile Valley and its

eastern tributaries, including the Bari, Shilluk, Latuk, and Turkana; (3) the Kavirondo tribes; and (4) the Masai and their allies.

The Dinka.

The Dinka are the most northern of the Nilotic Negroes, living in the basin of the Bahr-el-Ghazl, the great south-western tributary of the Nile. They occupy the country around the famous port of Meshra-er-Rek, and range east and west of that place for about 400 miles. They were once a powerful, numerous people; but, like most of the tribes of that region, their numbers have been terribly reduced by war and famine since the overthrow of Egyptian rule in 1884.

The Dinka are a muscular, well-built people; their colour is a very dark brown, although they often appear quite black, as they cover themselves with powdered charcoal mixed with oil. The head is of the ordinary Negro type, long and narrow, contracting to the top and back; the jaws are powerful and prominent, and the lips thick and projecting. They have not much hair, and the head is generally shaved, a single tuft being left, to which some feathers are often attached. Some of the men, however, comb out their hair and train it into stiff tufts, which stand out from the head like spokes. The people have a reputation for cruelty and bloodthirstiness; but Schweinfurth remarked many instances of tenderness and compassion, and of family affection and devotion.

Photo by Richard Buchta.
A DINKA GIRL (PROFILE).

The women are clad in a couple of aprons of untanned skin, which cover from the hips to the ankles, but the men go completely nude. Both sexes break off the incisor teeth in the lower jaw, while the men only are scar-tattooed. The tribal mark is a series of raised lines radiating from the top of the nose over the forehead and temples. The women wear iron rings in ears and lips, and heavy iron rings round their legs and arms. Schweinfurth saw women who were each adorned with half a hundredweight of these ornaments. The men wear massive ivory rings round the biceps of the upper arm, bracelets of hippopotamus hide, and tails of various animals. The men also wear head-dresses of ostrich feathers and caps made of white beads.

The favourite weapons of the Dinka are clubs and a bow-shaped instrument for parrying the blows of their opponents' clubs. They have also spears, but no bows and arrows.

The Dinka live in large circular and conical huts about 40 feet in diameter; the roofs are made of straw and thatch, supported by a central tree trunk, and low walls of chopped straw and clay. The huts are not grouped in villages, but in small clusters beside the sheds and tethering-grounds for their cattle, of which they have large herds. The cattle are humped, have small horns, and are mostly white; the other domestic animals are sheep, goats, and dogs—and one might almost add snakes, which are protected and allowed to live in the roofs of the houses. The presence of the snakes is possibly the explanation of the absence of poultry.

The principal vegetables cultivated are dhurra, yams, ground-nuts, tobacco, and simsin, which is grown for oil. The food is prepared with great care, and the Dinka are famous as cooks.

Photo by Richard Buchta.
A SHILLUK GIRL.

The Dyur.

South-west of the Dinka country lies the territory of the Dyur, who are clearly a branch of the Shilluk, and retain many of the characters as well as the language of that people. Dyur is a Dinka term, meaning "wild men"; for the Dinka regard the Dyur with contempt, as they possess no cattle. The Dyur are a peaceful and industrious tribe, and are skilled workers in iron. Physically they are tall and slim, and the jaws are less prominent than in most Negroes. Their dress is limited to a short flap of skin, which hangs down the back, and is suspended from a string round the waist. Their hair is cut short. The principal ornaments are rings of brass and iron, worn in the nose, ears, and lips, or on the limbs; some of the last are large and elaborately ornamented: the men wear a massive ivory ring round the upper part of the arm.

Their weapons are long lance-headed spears. The iron is obtained by smelting in a small conical clay furnace, in which the ore is melted by a charcoal fire. The fire is maintained by natural draught, as bellows are not used. This work, as well as the fishing and hunting, in both of which they are experts, is done by the men; while the women do all the agricultural and domestic work, and make the pottery and wicker-work vessels.

The Dyur are an affectionate race, and nurse their babies in long basket-work cradles. The dead are buried in mounds or tumuli. Spitting, as with the Masai, is the principal salutation, expressing friendship.

The Bongo.

South-west of the Dyur is the home of the great Bongo nation, who formerly occupied a tract of country, 175 miles long by 50 miles broad, between lat. 6° and 8° N. They are a purely agricultural people, divided into a large number of independent village communities and clans, so that they were unable to offer much opposition to the old Arab slave-raiders against whom the Dinka were long able to hold out.

The Bongo, as a rule, are of a reddish colour; their average height is 5 feet 7 inches. Their heads are short and round, their hair short, curly, and black, and kept short or in small tufts separated by shaved spaces. One striking feature in the Bongo women is the fatness of the buttocks, similar to that once regarded as characteristic of the Hottentots and Bushmen.

The clothing of the tribe is very simple. The men wear a narrow girdle, from which there usually hangs a strip of cotton-cloth or a flap of softened leather. The women content themselves with a leafy twig or bunch of grass hanging from the girdle. At dances and festivals the men wear a feather head-dress. Both sexes wear elaborate strings of beads, teeth, claws, copper rings, or fragments of roots. The women expand the lower ear and the lip by the insertion of wooden disks, the size of which is gradually increased until the lip is five or six times its normal width.

The weapons of the tribe are barbed and jagged lances, bows 4 feet long, and arrows with 3-foot wooden shafts and tips poisoned by the juice of the giant Euphorbia.

The huts are built with great care and skill; they are conical, and up to 20 feet in diameter; they are made of plaited faggots, bamboos, grass, and clay. The entrance is very low, and is closed by a swing-door. The floor is of beaten clay, and the people sleep on skins.

On the extreme top of the hut is a straw platform, which can be used as a look-out post over the stockade by which the clusters of huts are surrounded.

The Bongo are agriculturists, and grow sorghum or dhurra, maize, and tobacco; they also eat the fleshy leaves of various shrubs, roots, and many varieties of fungi, which grow wild in the rainy season. They hunt by beating and driving into snares and trenches; but the supply of game is limited, and the elephants have been exterminated. In the winter they capture fish in nets and fish-pots. As a substitute for salt they collect an alkali from the ashes of Grewia wood.

Their domestic animals are poultry, goats, and dogs.

The most skilful accomplishment of the Bongo is their iron-working. They smelt iron in charcoal furnaces blown by bellows. The iron is worked by a stone hammer on a stone anvil, and is held during the process by a pair of green wood tongs. They prepare spear- and arrow-heads, iron rings, belts and other ornaments, knives and razors, pincers for extracting the eyelashes, and flat iron disks which had an extensive circulation as money. The Bongo are also adepts at wood-carving.

Polygamy is allowed, but the number of wives is limited to three. Marriage is by purchase, and any wife who proves barren may be divorced, and part of her purchase-money may be reclaimed by the husband.

The burial rites are interesting. The corpse is placed in a sack in a sitting posture in a grave of about 4 feet deep. Women are buried facing the south, and men looking toward the north. The site is marked by a heap of stones surrounded by posts, many of which are carved into human figures, while others have horn-like points. A similar system holds in Madagascar. On the stone pile is the drinking-vessel of the deceased. This fact and the intense fear of spirits and witches suggest a belief in immortality, which Schweinfurth, however, denies. He further explains the wooden human images as memorial figures and not as fetishes; but the accuracy of this suggestion is also doubtful.

The Latuka.

On the eastern side of the Nile dwell several Nilotic tribes, ranging south-eastward from the Shilluk of the Lower Sobat and Fashoda to the tribes of Karamoyo and Kamasia, on the western wall of the East African Rift Valley.

One of the best known of these tribes is that of the Latuka, who inhabit the upper part of the basin of the Sobat. They have been well described by Sir Samuel Baker, who says that "the Latuka are the finest savages I have ever seen." Their average height, according to Baker's measurements, is 6 feet all but half an inch; and their muscular development is powerful. Baker considered them different in appearance in the form of the head from any other race of the Nile Valley, and it is possible that they contain some intermixture of Hamitic blood. For, according to Baker, "they have high foreheads, large eyes, rather high cheek-bones, mouths not very large, well shaped, and the lips rather full. They all have a remarkably pleasing cast of countenance, and are a great contrast to the other tribes in civility of manner. Altogether their appearance denotes a Galla origin."

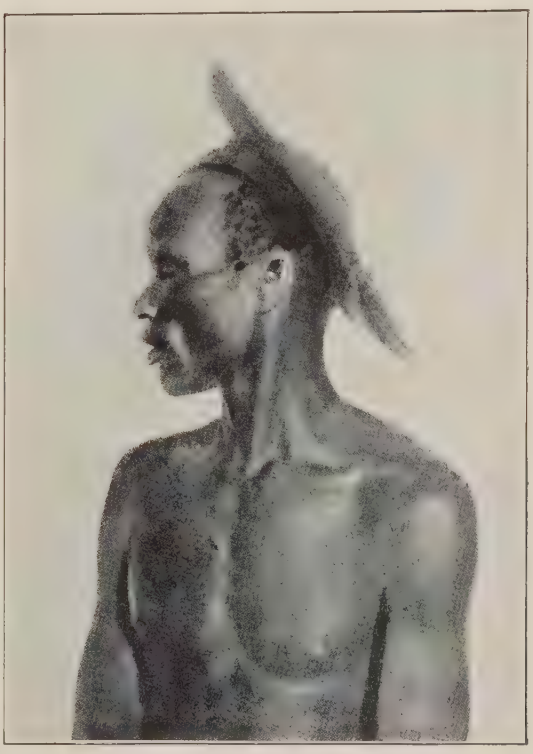


Photo by Richard Buchta.

A SHILLUK MAN.

Photo by Richard Buchta.

FAJELU MEN AND WOMAN.

Their chief town, Tarrangollé, contained about 3,000 houses, which are either bell-shaped or consist of a high conical roof on a low, vertical, circular wall. Each house is surrounded by a stockade, and a larger stockade surrounds the whole town. The passages between the different compounds are just wide enough for the cows to pass in single file; so that, in case the outer wall of the town is rushed, the enemy could only drive off the cattle slowly and along paths which could easily be defended and closed. The Latuka have large herds of cattle, which are driven into the towns every night, where they are protected from flies by the smoke of fires.

The dress of the men consists only of a helmet, which is made by interweaving some unravelled bark with their hair until it forms a thick felt 1½ inch thick. The front of this hair helmet is strengthened by a band of copper, and another strip forms the crest. The surface is then decorated with beads and the edge completed by a row of cowry-shells.

The women, on the contrary, wear the hair short. Their ornaments are strings of beads, a fur tail, large earrings, and a long cylindrical crystal ornament, worn hanging from the lower lip. The four front teeth of the lower jaw are extracted. Scar-tattooing is practised, the tribal mark being a series of radial gashes over the forehead, temples, and cheeks. The men do not tattoo.

The tribal weapons are the spear, an iron-headed mace, a spiked bracelet with projecting knife-blades 4 inches long, and a sword. They carry hide shields 4½ feet long by 2 feet wide.

Polygamy and purchase are the rules of marriage. The funeral rites are more characteristic. The body is buried outside the man's hut, but inside his compound. Funeral dances are held for some weeks, after which the body is exhumed, and the bones cleaned, packed in an earthenware jar, and then placed in a cemetery near the town.

The Masai.

In the districts around the Latuka dwell other Nilotic tribes: to the west there are the Bari, in the main Nile Valley; to the east there are the Turkana, between the Latuka and Lake Rudolf; to the south-east are the Karamoyo and Kamasia. These tribes are all people of large stature, and according to Wellby the Turkana frequently exceed 7 feet in height.

These people, however, are less important than the famous tribe of the Masai, who have forced their way southward from the home of the Nilotic Negroes along the Rift Valley to the slopes of Kilima Njaro in German East Africa. They now extend from that mountain for about 300 miles northward. The Masai have been studied in detail by many observers, among the earliest of whom were Fischer, Thomson, and Johnston. Thomson gave a graphic sketch of the habits of the Masai, while to Johnston we owe a precise account of their physical structure and language.

Photo by Lekegian & Co. [Cairo.

A BARI GIRL.

"The physical appearance of the unregenerate robber Masai," says Sir Harry Johnston, "is splendid. It is a treat to the anthropological student to gaze on such magnificent examples of the fighting-man. It is an example of one side of our multiform nature pushed to an exclusive and supreme development. The Masai warrior is the result of the development of man with a beautiful animal. To call him God-like, as we do the Greek ideals, would be silly and inappropriate—as much so as seeing divinity in a well-bred race-horse or an Alderney cow. To compare him with the statues of Apollo is unfair to the one and the other. If you could find Apollo represented with huge-lobed ears, fang-like teeth, high cheek-bones, and a woolly crop, not to mention other peculiar and ungraceful developments, then you might aptly compare his ideal representation with the living Masai. The full-grown Masai of pure blood is generally 6 feet in height by the age of seventeen, though at that time he is often a spindly and cumbersome and ungraceful hobbledehoy. Three years, however, of an exclusive diet of milk, blood, and half-raw beef-steaks, combined with a rigorous training in warlike and athletic exercises, have developed him into a sinewy, muscular man, of admirable proportions, broad of chest, with a smallish head, a graceful neck, and limbs whose muscles seem hard as iron. There is no fat on his body. I cannot say that his hands and feet are always well shaped. Their faces are somewhat Mongoloid in look at first sight. The rather narrow, slanting eyes, the prominent cheek-bones, and the pointed chin suggest that impression. On the other hand, the nose is often beautifully shaped, with high bridge and delicately chiselled nostrils, which obey sensitively the passing feelings of their owner, quivering and dilating with pride and rage, or widening and relaxing with good-humour. Their heads are often singularly round and broad for Africans. The hair is certainly longer and less frizzly than among the true Negroes, though at the same time this may be only due to the careful and continual combing out it undergoes, and its straightening with a thick paste of clay and fat. It is after all a Negro's wool, and is not longer nor more abundant, certainly, than the regular Papuan crops of hair which the Bantu people of the Upper Congo have been found to possess."

Photo by Richard Buchta.
A BARI WOMAN (SIDE VIEW).

The ears are large, and the lobes are distended by ivory or wooden disks, loops of iron chain, or brass wire coiled like Catherine-wheels. The lips are thin, and there is a triangular space filed between the upper incisors. The colour is a dull chocolate-brown; but babies when first born are yellow.

The dress of the women and elders consists of long capes of untanned, softened leather; but the warriors go naked except for ornaments. Like the Kikuyu, the warriors may wear a flap of skin over one shoulder and across the chest and upper part of the back, probably to protect the lungs. They generally wear skin sandals, except when in a turf-clad district. When going to war, the warriors wear a head-dress of ostrich feathers arranged like an aureole. They often have flaps of the black-and-white fur of the long-haired Colobus monkey round the shoulders, and narrow strips of it round the waist and knees. They always have a leather belt, in which are placed their sword and knobkerry.

The commonest metal ornaments of the Masai are loops of iron chain round the neck, long spirals of wire along the lower arm, or great Catherine-wheel-like coils standing out from the neck. The earrings are short loops of chain or small Catherine-wheel coils of brass

wire. Bead necklaces are sometimes worn, but beads are more often used for ornamenting the edges of their leather clothes. Anklets of iron wire, often with bells attached, are worn when dancing.

The hair is generally twisted with short pigtails over the back of the neck, and shorter tail-like processes over the rest of the head, with two larger tails hanging over the forehead.

The main weapon of the Masai is a huge, heavy thrusting-spear; the head is long and lance-shaped, the wooden handle is short and about 18 inches in length, and the head is balanced by a long 4-foot spike at the lower end. The warriors are also armed with short swords and a knobkerry made from rhinoceros horn. They defend themselves with an oval shield about 4 feet long, made of buffalo or rhinoceros hide, which is painted with some heraldic pattern.

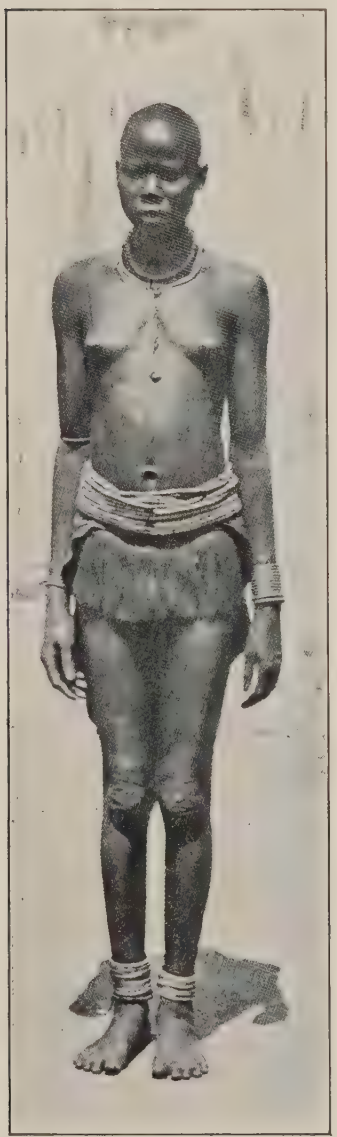


Photo by Richard Buchta.
A BARI WOMAN (FRONT VIEW).

The houses are simple huts, formed by wattled stakes, plastered with mud, and covered by skins. They are grouped into circular or roughly rectangular kraals, in which the cattle are herded at night. The kraals are often large, and several may be grouped together, especially during the dry season, when the Masai assemble beside a lake or round a water-hole.

Milk and meat are the main food of the Masai. The warriors are never allowed to touch vegetable food, and they acquire the necessary salts by drinking the warm blood of living cattle. An ox is stunned by a blow on the head; a vein is opened, and the young warrior drinks the blood as it spurts from the wound. In the treatment of milk the Masai are very particular. To boil milk in the Masai country is a deadly offence. And the warriors are never allowed to mix their diet of meat and milk. They live on meat at one period and on milk at another. Before they can change from one to another they must fast for a short time and take a strong purgative to clear the system of any trace of the other food, so that the milk may not be defiled. The food of the elders and women is less restricted, and they are allowed to take vegetable food when they can get it from their agricultural neighbours.

Their domestic animals are cattle, both of the Asiatic humped variety and the South African race without the hump. They have large herds of donkeys, which drag their goods during their periodical migrations. They have also sheep and goats.

Marriage is a matter of purchase, and, as among the Zulus, is forbidden to the warriors. The elders generally have a couple of wives. The unmarried women, known as *dittos*, live with the warriors in kraals, where free love is the rule.

The Masai recognise the existence of various spirits, of whom the chief is known as Ngai.

Burial is generally under a tree in a sitting position, with the chin resting on the knees. The body is covered with stones; but the cairn is weak, and the hyenas soon scent out the corpse and pull it from its tomb. A certain belief in a future life is indicated by burial of a calabash of milk beside the corpse, and by the fact that the name of the departed is never mentioned, lest the spirit should regard it as a call and come back.

The political constitution is patriarchal. The men are divided into two classes—the elders, or *el-moru*, and the warriors, or *el-moran*. The latter are trained for war-raids; they have a known series of war-paths, and they roam to enormous distances in order to capture the cattle

of Bantu tribes. In the villages they implicitly obey the elders, who govern the community. Over the elders there are two chiefs—the Laibon, the great medicine-man of the tribe, and the Beijan, or political chief. In their absence the kraals are managed by a kind of committee of elders, of whom the superior are the *lygonani*, or speaking-men.

The Njempsians.

On the islands of Lake Baringo and around its shores dwell a tribe of people who are usually regarded as Masai altered by the loss of their cattle, just as the Bushmen of the Cape were once thought to be Hottentots whose cattle had been taken by the Dutch. Similar tribes of agricultural people allied to the Masai occur in other parts of Masailand, as on the slopes of Kilima Njaro. Such people are called Wakwafi. Those of Kilima Njaro are said by Johnston to differ from the Masai only in mode of life, except when the tribe has been affected by the adoption of Bantu women as concubines. These Kilima Njaro Wakwafi are therefore probably agricultural Masai; but in regard to the natives of Njemps it is more probable that they are the remnants of an older tribe, which has been broken up by the Masai invasion.

Photo by Richard Buchta.
A MADI MAN.

The Njempsians were described by Thomson as "singularly honest and reliable," and as characterised by "their honesty, their unassuming ways, and their charming unsophisticated manners." The Njempsians are taller and slimmer than the Masai, but have the same general features, high cheek-bones and foreheads, and often oblique eyes. They dress in long leather cloaks, and wear brass armlets, bracelets, and leg-rings; they have elaborate earrings similar to those of the Masai and Kikuyu, and are armed with spears with short, broad blades. Their language, though allied to that of the Masai, differs materially. They have some similar religious beliefs: for instance, they will not eat zebra or allow any part of the animal inside their villages while the seed of their crops is in the ground. The writer was once camped outside Njemps during a period of famine, when his party had to be fed on zebra meat; the people accordingly refused to allow any of the men to enter the village until they had fasted for several hours. But the Njempsians are less fastidious in food than the Masai, for they eat fish and even rats.

The Njempsians dwell in huts grouped together in villages, defended by a powerful stockade, and entered by a narrow gateway that can be easily closed by a heavy beam. Their staple food is dhurra.

The Negroes of Kavirondo.

In Kavirondo, on the eastern shore of the Victoria Nyanza, is a group of tribes who are often grouped together as the Wakavirondo, but who have been shown by Mr. C. W. Hobley to include a considerable number of different races, including Bantu and Nilotic Negroes. Hobley enumerates sixty tribes or clans in this group, and says there are more. The people in the western part of the country, along the shores of the lake, mainly belong to the Nilotic group, and are most nearly related to the Shuli.

The people of the Nilotic group are generally naked: the

men wear nothing but a few ornaments, of which the most conspicuous is a split canine tooth of a hippopotamus tied across the forehead; the women wear two small fringes of fibre hanging from the waist. As is so often the case with African tribes, morality accompanies nudity. "The people," says Hobley, "are very moral in their domestic relations," and they are remarkably honest. The women's ornaments are necklets, armlets, and anklets of iron wire and beads, brass wire being restricted to the chiefs.

The weapons are a thrusting-spear, a small throwing-spear, a large round or oval shield of untanned hide, and a two-edged sword, wider near the end; bows and arrows are comparatively rare.

The main industries of the people are cattle-breeding and agriculture. Millet and eleusine are the two chief cereals. The tribes grow beans and castor-oil seeds, and in some places bananas. Tobacco and hemp are grown for smoking. Iron-working is practised by some tribes, who make iron hoes, which, in addition to their intrinsic use, serve as a currency. A cow is usually worth twenty hoes. Pottery, basket-weaving, and the preparation of mats from papyrus stalks are the other chief handicrafts.

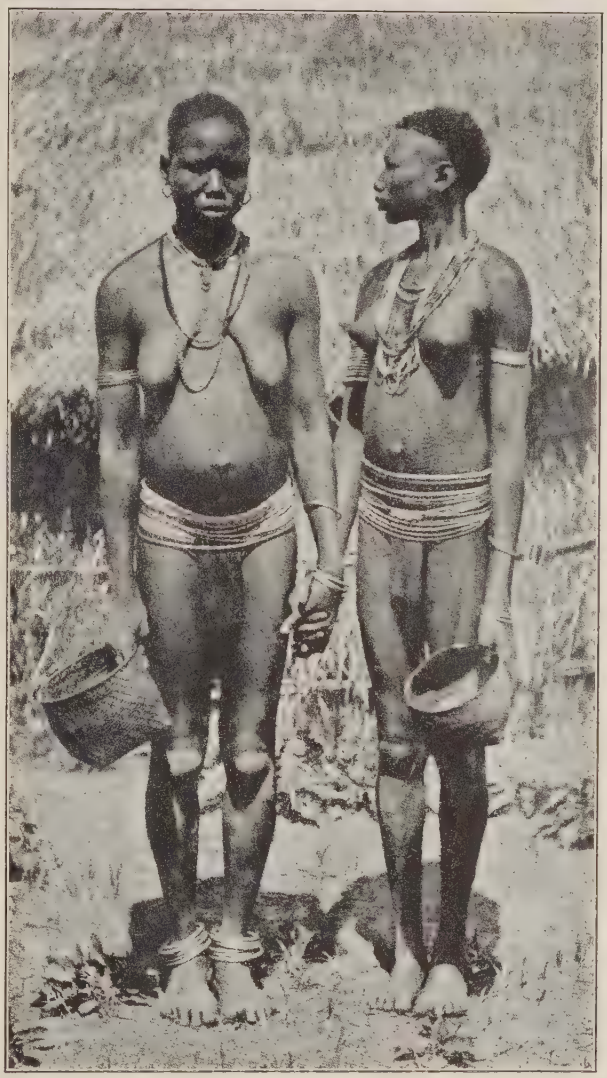


Photo by Richard Buchta.

MADI WOMEN.

After a child is born the medicine-man is called in with his drum to ensure its good luck, probably by frightening away evil spirits. Four or six days after birth—the former in the case of a girl, and the latter for a boy—the baby is carried from the village by its mother and left on the road outside. The child is then picked up and restored to its mother by another woman, who thereafter acts as its god-mother. This custom is probably a survival from a period when infant exposure was practised; the rite is adopted earlier in the case of girls, as they were probably the earliest to be abandoned. The birth of twins is welcomed and celebrated by great dances. One of the Bantu tribes, the Wakisesa, circumcise, but otherwise this rite is not practised. Some of the front teeth are extracted as soon as a child can speak.

Marriage is by purchase, and half the price of the bride is returned by the father-in-law, should she die young. Polygamy is general, and each wife has a separate hut and plantation.

Burial customs vary greatly: the Bantu tribe of Ketosh simply throw the body into the bush; whereas the people round the station at Mumia's bury the dead in a sitting position below the floor of the hut, with the head above-ground and covered by an earthenware pot. The grave is watched day and night for a month. After some years the grave is opened, the bones are ceremoniously washed, and then reburied on the borders of Ketosh, whence the clan is supposed to have come.

Among the people of Kabras, according to Hobley, peace is ratified by the sacrifice of a dog, which is tied to a post; each end of the animal is held by one of the two parties to

Photo by Richard Buchta.

A LANGO CHIEF, SHOWING PECULIAR HEAD-DRESS.

the agreement, and a chief cuts the living dog in two, assuring the assembly that any one guilty of breaking the peace will suffer the same fate.

The Lango Nation.

One of the chief nations of the late kingdom of Unyoro are the *Lango* (*Langgo*, *Longo*) people, who, although often grouped with the Nilotic Negroes, are really of Galla stock and speech. They form, in fact, an important link in the chain of Hamitic peoples who extend from Galla-land through Unyoro and Uganda southwards to Lake Tanganyika. Their territory, which occupies both banks of the Somerset or Victoria Nile between Foweira and Magungo, extends eastwards beyond Unyoro proper to the valley of the Chol, one of the chief upper branches of the Sobat. They still preserve their Galla mother-tongue amid the surrounding Bantu and Negro populations, and are distinguished by their independent spirit, living in small family groups, and recognising no tribal chiefs, except those chosen to defend the common interests in time of war.

The Lango people are specially noted for the care bestowed on their elaborate and highly fantastic head-dress. The prevailing fashion may be described as a kind of helmet, in which each lock of hair is separately interwoven with diverse coloured wools, the whole terminating in an imposing superstructure of plumes, tufts of feathers, wreaths of shells or glass beads, or curved projections which resemble trumpets, but are intended to represent buffalo horns. Whole years are spent on these sumptuous head-dresses, which even when finished have to be constantly touched up and kept in repair by the native barbers. On the other hand, the Lango women, who are amongst the finest and most symmetrical of the Equatorial lake region, wear little clothing or embellishments beyond waist-bands, necklaces, armlets, and anklets.

CHAPTER XVI.

THE SOUDANESE AND GUINEA NEGROES, AND THE ABYSSINIAN AND ETHIOPIC GROUPS.

---

a. THE SOUDANESE NEGROES.

The Soudanese Negroes occupy a belt of Africa between Senegambia and the western watershed of the Nile; the area includes most of the Niger Basin and the Atlantic coast-lands from the Senegal River to Calabar. The boundaries, however, are not sharply defined. To the south the Rio del Rey divides the Soudanese Negroes from the Bantu; but the former group is represented by colonies in the backwoods of the Bantu region. To the north-east the Soudanese Negroes gradually merge with the Hamitic races, and to the north they become inextricably mixed with the Berber tribes of Senegal. Even on the southern slopes of the Atlas Mountains in Morocco there is a wide-spread people known as the Haratin or Black Berbers, which shows that the Negro influence has extended even north of the Sahara.

The Mandingo, Timni, and Kru.

The Sarakole are interesting as the most northern members of the great tribe of Mandingo, a race of Eastern origin, now spread over the region between the Senegal and Liberia. The Mandingo are clearly Negroes; they have a Negroid face, flat broad nose, widely open nostrils, high cheek-bones, and projecting jaws. They are active, intelligent, and industrious; and, like the Haussa of the Niger Basin, they have managed to acquire commercial supremacy over the other tribes. Again, like the Haussa, they were once also politically predominant, but have lost their power owing to Fulah inroads; locally, however, they still retain their former position—as, for instance, among the Serers of Senegal, where the chief families are all Mandingan.

As an instance of Mandingan intelligence may be cited the fact that the Vei language, which belongs to this group, has a written alphabet comprising over 200 characters; it has been claimed that this script was invented in the present century, but the recent inquiries of Delafosse show that it is at least several centuries older.

Photo by Mr. Aldridge.

THE MANDINGAN "BALENJEH," OR NATIVE PIANO.

Photo by Mr. Aldridge.

NATIVE CARRIERS, UPPER MENDI.

One of the best-known tribes of the Mandingo are the Mendi, who live in the protectorate of Sierra Leone. The inhabitants of the town and actual colony of Sierra Leone are, however, mainly Timni or Timneh; but the population is unusually mixed, as the colony was founded in 1787 as a home for freed slaves. The original settlers belong to many different tribes, and the variations in feature among the present Sierra Leonese are extreme. The mixture of races has even affected the neighbouring Timni, who, according to Clark, vary in colour "from jet black to light yellow, the intermediate shades being principally a coffee or indifferent black colour."

The secret societies, or *porro*, which are widely scattered and most typically developed in West Africa, though they also occur in East Africa, are especially powerful among the Timni, and much of the reliable information regarding the aims and methods of these societies has been obtained by a study of this tribe.

South of Sierra Leone is the State of Liberia, still independent, although partly dismembered by France. This state was founded as an asylum for the freed American slaves, but its success has not been so satisfactory as could have been wished. Robinson, who visited it in 1894, declares that "the history of Liberia would indeed be a most entertaining farce, were it not also a most significant tragedy." He remarks that "the Liberians excel perhaps all the other inhabitants of the globe in their amazing self-conceit," and tells us that their rulers had recently assured the French that they had decided to remain neutral in the next European war. The main function of Liberia has been indeed to supply good stories of Negro methods of administration, as when during the cholera scare in Egypt they placed a ship in quarantine because it was *going to* an infected port.

The most important element in the native Liberian population is the Kru or Grebo, who live along the Grain Coast, north-west of Cape Las Palmas. The name Kru is an abridgment of Kru-boy, which is a corruption, not of "crew-boy," but of the proper native name of Grebo. The Kru are among the most vigorous of Negro races, and they act as boatmen and cargo-lifters all along the west coast, and are commercially invaluable. Thomson gave them a bad name, but some later travellers and west-coast residents are loud in their praise.

b. THE GUINEA NEGROES.

From Senegal to Liberia the Negro races have been so greatly influenced by contact with Europeans, especially English, French, and Portuguese on the one hand, and by Mohammedan and Fulah invaders on the other, that they are ethnographically less instructive than the Negroes of the Guinea Coast lands between Liberia on the west and the Rio del Rey on the east, which, as shown by Sir H. H. Johnston, is the boundary between the Western and the Bantu Negroes.

These Negroes of Guinea are the typical Negroes with thick lips, woolly hair, broad flat noses, wide open nostrils, receding foreheads, projecting jaws, and prominent powerful teeth. The attempt has indeed been made to restrict the name Negro to the natives of this part of Africa.

Photo by Mr. Aldridge.

AN UPPER MENDI PRINCESS.

Photo by Mr. Aldridge.

AN UPPER MENDI CHIEF.

The natives of the Guinea Coast may be divided into three groups—the Tshi, the Ewe, and the Yoruba-speaking people, who have been described in three separate monographs by Sir A. B. Ellis.

THE TSHI TRIBES.

The Fanti and Ashanti.

The Tshi, or, as Miss Kingsley would propose to spell the name, the Cheuwe-speaking people, form the westernmost group, living mainly in the Cape Coast Colony and the Ashanti Protectorate. The two most important tribes are the Fanti, who dwell on the coast, and the Ashanti, who occupy the hinterland. The Fanti are chocolate-coloured, muscular people of medium height; they have round heads, with a long face, and a nose less flat than that of most Negro races. Dress is simple, consisting of a brightly coloured loin-cloth, which among married women is increased to a wrap that covers from the breast to the ankles. The women have elaborate arrangements of the hair, which is worked into a knob-shaped chignon, a pair of horn-shaped projections, or a single spike like that of a unicorn.

The Ashanti, though in most respects closely resembling the Fanti, are less strongly built; but being more warlike and courageous, they are politically more powerful. Whereas the Fanti live in small villages, among the Ashanti there are some large towns, of which the chief is Kumasi, or Coomassie. The Fanti are a tribe of village communities, whereas the Ashanti formed a state with a centralised government, and were ruled by a king.

The religion of both Fanti and Ashanti is fetishism. Circumcision is practised, but not

Photo by Mr. Aldridge.

AN UPPER MENDI CHIEF IN WAR-COSTUME.

universally; and cannibalism exists only as a religious rite, as when the heart of a brave enemy is eaten in order that his courage may be inherited. Traces of moon-worship are recorded by Ellis; while totemism, which is widely distributed in Africa, is strongly developed. The Tshi people are divided into families, named after some animal or plant; there are the Leopard Family, Bush-cat Family, Dog Family, Parrot Family, Plantain Family, etc. The members of these families are prohibited from eating their totem, or animal after which they are named, though, owing to the importance of the plantain as food, the coast natives do not recognise the rule applying in that case.

There are many interesting customs regarding birth, marriage, and death, but want of space prevents us enumerating them.

THE EWE TRIBES.

West of Ashanti and the Fanti is a region occupied by a group of tribes who speak Ewe (pronounced Efé or Ehwe). Most of the Ewe tribes occupy the German Protectorate of Togoland and the French territory of Dahomey; but some, such as the Awuna, Agbosomi, and the Krikor, dwell under British protection round the mouth of the Volta River.

The Ewe-speaking tribes are more intelligent and advanced than the Tshi; for in addition to local deities and spirits, like those of the Tshi, there are some gods who are worshipped throughout the Ewe district.

The Dahomeyans.

The chief people of the Ewe group are the Dahomeyans. Burton, who visited Abomey, the capital of Dahomey, in 1864, describes the king, Gelele, as a tall Negro, 6 feet in height, "lithe, agile, thin-flanked, and broad-shouldered, with muscular limbs, well-turned wrists, and neat ankles, but a distinctly cucumber-shaped shin. His hair, generally close shaven, is of the peppercorn variety; the eyebrows are scant, the beard is thin, and the moustachios thinner. He has not his father's receding forehead, nor the vanishing chin which distinguishes the multitude; his strong jaw renders the face 'jowly' rather than oval, consequently the expression is normally hard, though open and not ill-humoured, whilst the smile which comes out of it is pleasant. His nails are allowed to attain mandarin length. His sub-tumid lips disclose white, strong, and sound teeth, the inner surfaces being somewhat blackened by tobacco. The nose is distinctly *retroussé*, quasi-Negro, anti-aquiline, looking in fact as if all the lines had been turned the wrong way; but it is not much flattened, nor does it wholly want bridge." He was tattooed with the Dahomeyan tribal mark—three parallel cuts beside the eyebrows. His dress was simple, consisting of short purple silk drawers reaching only half-way down the thigh, and a loose white cotton-cloth edged with green silk. He wore gold-embroidered

Photo by Messrs. Negretti & Zambra] [*London.*

AMAZONS OF DAHOMEY.

Photo lent by the late Miss Mary Kingsley.

NATIVES OF THE NIGER DELTA.

Moorish sandals, and a short cylindrical straw cap, with a band of purple ribbon round it. His ornaments were a human tooth and a blue bead on a thread round his neck, an iron ring round the right arm, and five iron bracelets above and below the elbow.

The most striking feature in the military system of Dahomey was the corps of Amazons (for photograph see page 369), which was raised in 1729 owing to the gallant behaviour of a number of women who had been armed in order to increase the apparent size of a Dahomeyan army. At first the Amazons were criminals, but Gezo and Gelele improved the status of the force by enrolling in it women who pleased them. The women among the Dahomeyans, thanks to their having done the work of the tribe for generations, are as muscular and strong or even stronger than the men. Ellis estimated their number in 1890 at about 3,000.

The Amazons were divided into five corps: the blunderbuss-women; the elephant-huntresses; the razor-women, armed with a hinged sword about 18 inches long that shut into its scabbard like a razor; the infantry or line's women; and the archeresses, armed with a bow, a quiver of small poisoned arrows, and a small knife. The last company was said by Ellis to be already extinct in his time.

Burton did not take the Amazons very seriously. The infantry, the main body of the force, he describes as follows: "They are armed with Tower muskets, and are well supplied with bad ammunition—bamboo fibre, for instance, being the only wadding. They have but little ball practice. They manœuvre with the precision of a flock of sheep, and they are too light to stand a charge of the poorest troops in Europe. Personally they are cleanly made, without much muscle; they are hard dancers, indefatigable singers, and, though affecting a military swagger, their faces are anything but ferocious—they are rather mild and unassuming in appearance. They fought with fury with Gezo before Abeokuta because there was a jealousy between them and their brother soldiers, and because they had been led for many years by that king to small but sure victory. They fled, however, with the rest, when a little perseverance would have retrieved the fortunes of the day."

Like the Fanti and Ashanti, the Dahomeyans have been notorious for the practice of human sacrifices. Especially was this so during the last century. Captain Snelgrave in 1727 saw 400 prisoners executed in honour of the conquest of the Toffo country; the prisoners had their

hands tied behind their backs, and they were led on to a stage, where a priest laid his hand on their heads, uttered some words of consecration, after which the victims were decapitated by a single sweep of a heavy broadsword. In the same year Whydah was conquered, and 4,000 natives were sacrificed as a thank-offering. Human sacrifices were also offered in Dahomey at the Grand Custom, held after the death of a king, and were intended to supply him with an adequate spirit retinue, and at the Annual Custom, intended to send the dead kings some fresh slaves. The last Grand Custom was on the death of Gezo in 1858, when the sacrifices lasted from July to October, and 500 people were slain. Most of the victims were the king's personal attendants, his chief eunuch, his wives, and a supply of soldiers, Amazons, and slaves. The skulls were collected and piled into pyramids, or used to decorate the walls of the palace. The corpse of the dead king was buried in a mausoleum, of which the clay was kneaded with rum and human blood. His relics are treated with the highest reverence.

In the present century the number of the victims has been diminished, and the Annual Custom took different forms in alternate years. One year there was an Attoh ceremony, in which the victims were stunned by being hurled from a high platform; they were then executed, and their bodies thrown to the mob, who mutilated and smashed them with clubs. On the next year there was a So-sin ceremony, in which horses were slain as well as men.

The Ewe religion is not only practised in Guinea, but has been carried across the Atlantic by slaves, and some of its rites survive in Hayti.

Photo lent by the late Miss Mary Kingsley.

A NATIVE OF THE OIL RIVERS, NIGER COAST PROTECTORATE.

Photo by K. Günther] *[Berlin.*

A DAHOMEYAN BABY.

Its West Indian title of Vaudoo is of Ewe origin, the name meaning a superhuman spirit. The Fanti worship of the python, and the superstitious awe of the silk-cotton tree as the favourite abode of spirits, and other features of Ewe religion, are now firmly established in some of the West Indian islands.

THE YORUBA.

The third of the great groups of Guinea Negroes are the people of Yoruba speech, whose territory extends from the Niger Delta to Dahomey. The race, according to its own traditions, has descended from fifteen people who migrated from some eastern country and settled at Ifé. The Yoruba are more civilised and advanced than the Tshi or Ewe tribes, and their culture shows abundant traces of Haussa or Fulah influence. Until the beginning of this century there was a powerful Yoruba kingdom, which was overthrown by a Fulah invasion in 1820.

THE EGBA.

One of the leading tribes is that of the Egba or Egbado, of whose physical features Burton has given a detailed description. According to Burton, the type is Negroid—that is to say, Negro altered by Hamitic intermixture—rather than true-bred Negro. The skin is usually copper-coloured, but sometimes black, while some of the chiefs are almost light-coloured. The lips are not thick; but the gums are blue, and the jaws are very projecting. The nose is broad, with expanded nostrils; but sometimes it is hooked. The cheek-bones are high. Blue eyes, so often seen among the Tuaregs, are unknown. The hair is short, scant, and, as Burton describes it, grows over the head like peppercorns. The women dress it into a series of thin longitudinal ridges.

The dress of the Egba consists of loose cotton drawers fastened above the knees, while the body is wrapped in a mantle thrown over one shoulder. The poorer people may wear only a loin-cloth. Caps of various shapes and materials, including large hats of palm leaflets, are generally worn.

Among the Egba the most noticeable ornament is a plug of coral in the left nostril. Scar- and colour-tattooing are both in use. Burton describes some of the children as marked "from head to foot with little gridirons of cuts, dyed dark blue by means of native antimony." Scars are raised for the tribal mark, which among the Egba is a gridiron-shaped set of three cuts or a multiple of three on each cheek. The free women have one, two, or three narrow lines from the wrist up the back of each arm and down the back. The Yoruba mark is a set of perpendicular lines running downward from the temple. The Efon have a large blue patch between the cheek-bones and the ear.

The chief town in the Yoruba country is Abeokuta, which once included 100,000 inhabitants. It is still a large city of narrow, irregular streets, intersecting at every possible angle: some of the thoroughfares are broad and shady, and they are used for markets. The houses are of stamped mud, with high-pitched roofs of thatch. At each angle there is a high, sharp gable

to throw off the heavy rain. The plan of the houses is a hollow square, containing a series of court-yards for the sheep and goats. Round each court-yard is a verandah, where the fires are placed and cooking is done. There are from ten to twenty rooms in a house; each room is from 10 to 15 feet long and about 7 or 8 feet broad. There are no windows, which would let in the sun's glare and heat as well as the light. The number of inhabitants in these compound houses is often large, amounting, according to Burton, to sometimes as many as 500. The furniture is simple, consisting of wide cots and settees, rough earthenware pottery, grass bags, and usually a gun.

In culture the Yoruba are intermediate between the Coast Negroes and the more skilled natives of Haussaland. Their religion and domestic rites agree in the main with those of their Tshi and Ewe allies. They have the same multiplicity of gods, and have special gods for their trade castes; thus the blacksmiths and armourers are under the protection of Ogun. Shango is their lightning god, and, as among the Ewe, a fire supposed to have been caused by lightning must not be put out. Burton tells us that at Abeokuta a fire due to carelessness was attributed to Shango; accordingly an old man in the building would have been allowed to be burnt to death, had not a European, defying sacrilege, rushed to the rescue.

c. THE ABYSSINIAN AND ETHIOPIC GROUPS.

The Negro tribes occur only to the south of a line from the mouth of the Senegal River in lat. 16° N. on the Atlantic coast to the mouth of the Juba on the Equator in Eastern Africa.

Photo by Messrs. Negretti & Zambra] [*London.*

DAHOMEYAN AMAZONS.

Photo by K. Günther] *[Berlin.*

A DAHOMEYAN WARRIOR.

The Negro tribes along this dividing-line are altered by the intermixture of northern Caucasian races, and are therefore spoken of as Negroids instead of as Negroes. Striking instances of these mixed Negroes occur in Senegambia, where they are formed by the intermingling of Negro and Berber peoples, and also in East Africa, where the Waganda are a Bantu tribe altered by a band of Wahuma conquerors.

The Gallas.

The Gallas, or, as they proudly call themselves, the Oromo—*i.e.* "men," or "brave men"—once dominated East Africa from Abyssinia to Mombasa; but they are now broken up into a series of separate tribes of little political importance. These tribes occur in a belt nearly continuous round South Abyssinia, and extend across the plateau east of Lake Rudolf into the valley of the Tana.

The Gallas, warlike pastoral nomads, form the most numerous branch of the Eastern or Ethiopic Hamites.

That the Gallas as a race are Caucasians and not Negroes is clear from their physical features. The forehead is similar to that of many Europeans; the nose is thin and sometimes aquiline, while the nostrils are straight; the chin is small and slightly pointed; the lips, though usually thick, are thinner than in Negroes; the hair is long and frizzly; the expression of the face is proud and intellectual; in fact, but for the very dark colour a Galla would pass unnoticed in a European crowd.

The Galla women are famous for their beauty, and they fetched the highest prices in the slave-marts of Cairo, Khartum, and Zanzibar. The men are also handsome, but, owing to the style in which they dress their hair, appear wild and ferocious. Thus Harris, who studied the Gallas of Shoa, described them as "tall and athletic, wrapped in a toga, their features fiery and savage, and rendered still more ferocious by the thick bushy hair arranged in lotus-leaved compartments, or streaming over the shoulders in long raven plaits." Krapf, who knew the Southern Gallas before their overthrow, describes them as people of "a manly appearance, large and powerfully built, but with savage features, made still more savage-looking and fierce by their long hair, worn like a mane over the shoulders. They are principally of a dark brown colour."

The clothes of the Gallas are a long leather robe, which in the women is fastened round the waist by a girdle decorated with coloured beads. The weapons of the tribe are spear, two-edged sword, and round hide shield. The houses of the Southern Gallas are conical huts of thatch; but in the north the huts are surrounded by a low stone wall, and in the towns they are mainly of stone.

The inhabitants have large herds of cattle and horses, and flocks of sheep and goats. They are also agriculturists, and grow maize, rye, and wheat; and instead of the hoe of their Bantu neighbours they use a wooden, iron-shod plough drawn by oxen. The staple foods are meat and bread, and the beverages are beer and mead.

Coffee of excellent quality is grown in the district. The best-known industry of Harar is its weaving of tobes, cotton garments, and sashes. These, according to Burton, "as far surpass in beauty and durability the rapid produce of European manufactories as the perfect hand of man excels the finest machinery."

The Gallas are mainly Pagans, though the Wollo and some of the other northern clans have been converted to Islam. The primitive religion was a fetish- or spirit-worship, including veneration for serpents. The Gallas have a firm faith in omens, which are derived from the examination of the entrails of slaughtered cattle and sheep. The auguries are drawn from the arrangement of the intersecting lines in the layers of fat and membrane. Traces of Mohammedan and Jewish traditions are found amongst the Gallas, partly no doubt derived from their Abyssinian and Mohammedan neighbours. But amongst the Gallas of the Tana Valley, who are further removed from these influences, there are traditions of the creation of the world, and of a first man named Zadami (*i.e.* Adam), which may be part of their primitive folklore.

The Danakil.

The lowland country along the south-western border of the Red Sea, stretching inland from the shore to the foot of the Abyssinian highlands, is the home of the Danakil, or Afar. They are a Hamitic people, allied to the Gallas, to the Agau of Abyssinia, and to the Somali, forming with them and the Beja the Ethiopic branch of the Hamitic race. They are a tall, slim, handsome race, with especially beautiful women. They are brave and warlike, and have practically always maintained their independence, which was threatened by an Egyptian invasion in 1875; but the invading army under Munzinger Pasha was annihilated.

The Danakil dress is a loin-cloth and a tobe, or toga. They frequently leave off the latter, for which they have the excuse of living in almost the hottest area on the globe.

Their country is barren, and contains many salt lakes, which provide the main Danakil revenue; for the salt is worked into small cakes and exported to Abyssinia, where it passes as currency.

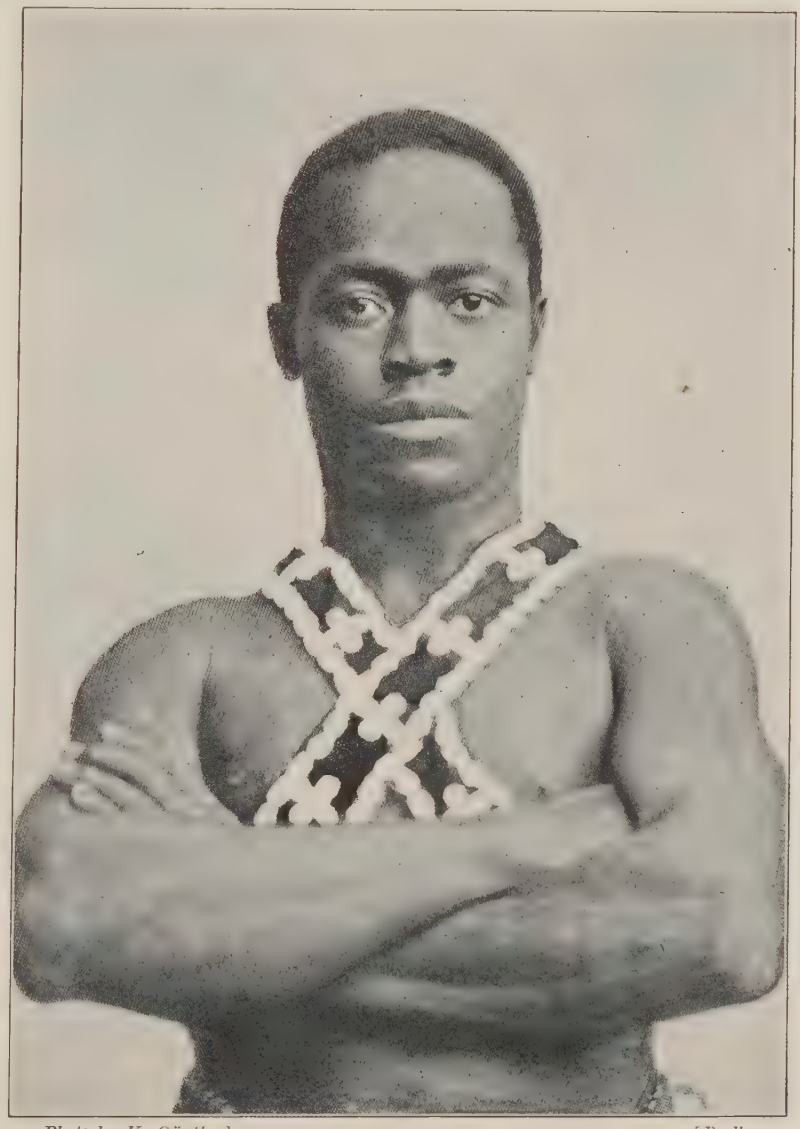


Photo by K. Günther [*Berlin.*

A DAHOMEYAN MAN.

The assumed Arabian origin of the Danakil is true only of some of the chiefs, who have been connected with Arabia, and were at one time subject to the Sheikh of Mecca. But these facts lend no support to the mistaken view that the Danakil and kindred Gallas are of Arab (Semitic) descent. All are of Hamitic stock and speech.

The Somali.

The peninsula to the east of the Galla country is inhabited by the Somali, who occupy the whole of the "Eastern Horn of Africa," the great projection south of the Gulf of Aden, and range southwards as far as the Tana River. The Somali are allied to the Gallas, and are clearly a Hamitic race; but to a limited extent the description of the Somali as a half-caste race of Gallas and South Arabians is correct, although the Hamitic is unquestionably the larger constituent element.

For an African race the Somali are decidedly handsome. The head is long and the forehead lofty and noble; the eyes are large and expressive; the jaws, though prominent, are not heavy; the lips, though thick, are thinner than among Negroes. The cheek-bones are high, and the nose straight, with a well-developed bridge, and the nostrils are small. The men are tall and extremely slim, the limbs being especially thin and bony. The women are broader, shorter, and more muscular, and they do most of the manual work of the tribe. The colour of the skin is very dark, and is sometimes coal black. The hair is long, hard, and wiry, and grows in stiff ringlets, which are dressed with butter made from camel's milk, and often trained into an enormous wig, extended out on each side of the head.

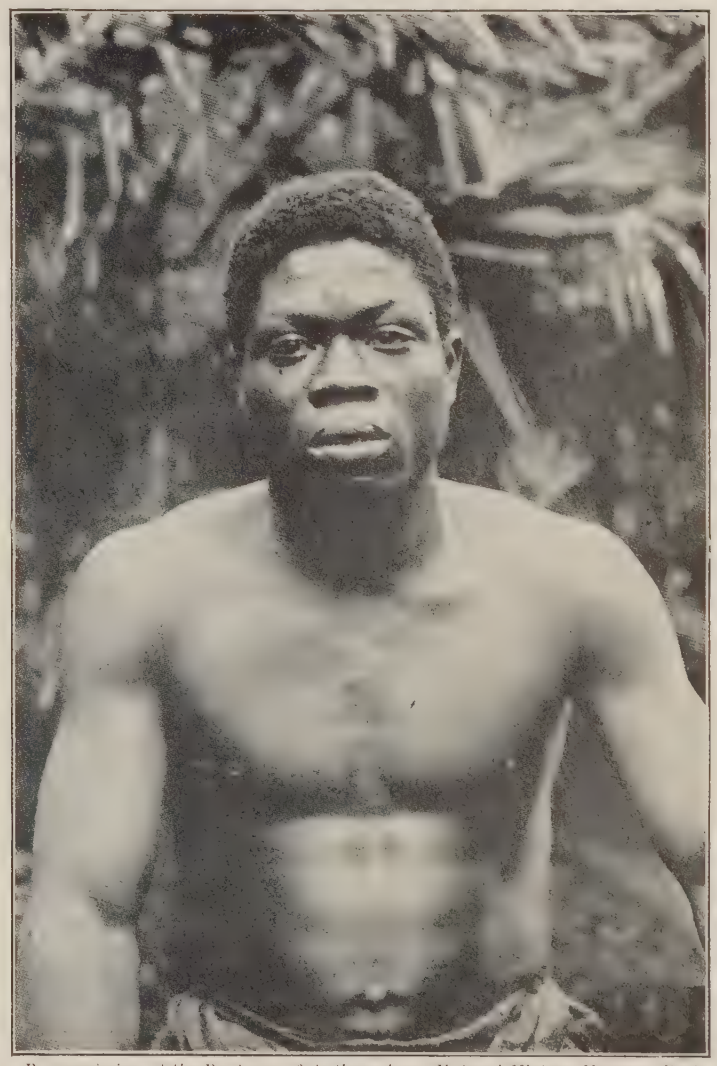
By permission of the Professor of Anthropology, Natural History Museum, Paris.
A YORUBA WOMAN.

The first travellers who came in contact with the Somali gave them a very bad character, owing to their supposed treachery, fickleness, and cruelty. This reputation has been supported by the following oft-quoted passage from Burton, whose experiences of the Somali were unfortunate: "They have all the levity and instability of the Negro character; light-minded as the Abyssinians—described by Gobat as constant in nothing but inconstancy—soft, merry, and affectionate souls, they pass without any apparent transition into a state of fury, when they are capable of terrible atrocities. At Aden they appear happier than in their native country. There I have often seen a man clapping his hands and dancing, childlike, alone to relieve the exuberance of his spirits! Have they become, as the Mongols and other

pastoral peoples, a melancholy race, who will sit for hours upon a bank gazing at the moon, or crooning some old ditty under the trees?"

But the injustice of the early reports of Somali fanaticism and hostility to strangers is now generally admitted; and though they have on occasions committed acts of diabolical cruelty and are very excitable, later travellers have been impressed by their merits. The Somali are certainly intelligent, skilful artisans, devoted to men whom they trust, and tolerant of discipline.

The weapons of the Somali are a large spear with a leaf-shaped blade, a small throwing-javelin, a two-edged dagger about 18 inches long, a club, and a round hide shield about 18 inches in diameter. The spear is the main weapon: it has a wooden handle 4 or 5 feet long, which ends below in a point, a ferrule, or a short iron spike; the head is from 2 to 4 inches wide, about 8 inches long, with a shaft about a foot long; the blade is often blackened by being made red hot and then rubbed with a piece of cow's horn. The northern Somali sometimes fight on horseback, and their horsemanship is excellent.



By permission of the Professor of Anthropology, Natural History Museum, Paris.

A YORUBA MAN.

Most of the Somali are Mohammedans, and adhere with fanatical devotion to a somewhat corrupt form of that religion. They wear the Moslem rosary of ninety-nine beads, and carry charms. One of their devotions takes the form of a dervish dance round a fire, which they continue till they throw themselves into the flames in frenzy or fall into them in a mesmeric trance. They will not eat meat unless the animal has been killed by a Mohammedan, or dedicated to Allah by a prayer said over it in its dying moments; and they have been known to starve to death rather than touch Christians' food.

Their religion is, however, mixed with fetishism; for they swear by stones, they have holy places and sacred trees, and trust justice to ordeals, making suspected criminals pluck cowry-shells out of a pot of boiling water, walk over hot ashes, or drag a heavy red-hot iron weight from a fire. The verdict is given the day after the ordeal, according to the appearance of the burnt scar.

Polygamy is usual, and the men marry between the ages of fifteen and twenty. A man usually marries a woman from another clan, as he thus gains protection from blood-feuds with his wife's people. The women do all the menial work of the tribe, and some of them usually accompany caravans on the march to make the grass huts, cook the food, and load the camels. The men act as camel-drivers, hunters, and warriors.

Burial rites are simple, especially since, being Mohammedans of the Shafeite sect, they

Photo by Messrs. Negretti & Zambra [*London.*

SOMALI CHILDREN.

say no prayers over the dead. Corpses are often buried in a sitting position under stone cairns.

There are two main divisions: the *Hasiya*, comprising the Mijertins, Habr Gahr-Haji, Habr Awal, Gadabursi, Isa, Habr Juni, and others; and the *Hawija*, of which the chief members are the Habr Jaleh, Habr Gader, Badbadan, and Rer-Dollol. One of the best known are the Isa, whom Burton describes as "childish and docile, cunning and deficient in judgment, kind and fickle, good-humoured and irascible, warm-hearted and infamous for cruelty and treachery. 'Traitorous as an Isa' is a proverb at Zayla, where these Bedouins are said to offer a bowl of milk with the left hand and stab with the right."

The Gadabursi are allies and neighbours of the Isa Somali, living between Zayla and Harar, to the south-east of the Isa country. They were said by Burton to be as turbulent as the Isa, but less bloodthirsty, and of a more handsome type. The Habr Gahr-Haji, who live to the south of Berbera, claim direct descent from Sheikh Ishak. They have a blood-feud with the Habr Awal, but unite with them against their common enemy the Isa.

The Abyssinians.

The kingdom of Ethiopia (Abyssinia) is traditionally named after Ethiops, one of the mythical twelve children of Cush, a grandson of Ham and great-grandson of Noah, who is supposed to have migrated after the Flood from Arabia to Abyssinia. He settled at what is now the sacred city of Axum, where his son Ethiops was born. This tradition probably has a certain basis of truth; for the nucleus of the Abyssinian people are Semites who crossed from Southern Arabia and settled in the highland plateau of Abyssinia. There they acquired such influence that they welded the various tribes of that region into a powerful confederation. The mixture of races in the Abyssinian people is illustrated by their name, which comes from *Habesh*, an Arabic word meaning "mixed." No name could be more appropriate; for the Abyssinians are partly Semitic, partly Hamitic, and partly Negro. The dominant race has usually been Semitic. Since the death of King John in 1888 the headship has been held by a Hamito-Semitic people. On the western slopes of Abyssinia are some Negro tribes, such as the Shangallas; in the plains to the north of Abyssinia are the Beni-Amer, a mixture of the Abyssinian Tigrians and the Nubian Beja; in the maritime plain around Massowa dwell the Shoho, who are Hamites and speak a Danakil dialect; in Central Abyssinia dwell the Falashas, who are said to be Jewish in race, as they certainly are in religion; finally, in the forests to the south are a dwarf tribe, the Doko, who may be Negrilloes. The Arabs rightly named the Abyssinians the "mixed."

The kingdom of Abyssinia was founded at a very early date. According to the national

Photo by Messrs. Negretti & Zambra]

SOMALI. [*London.*

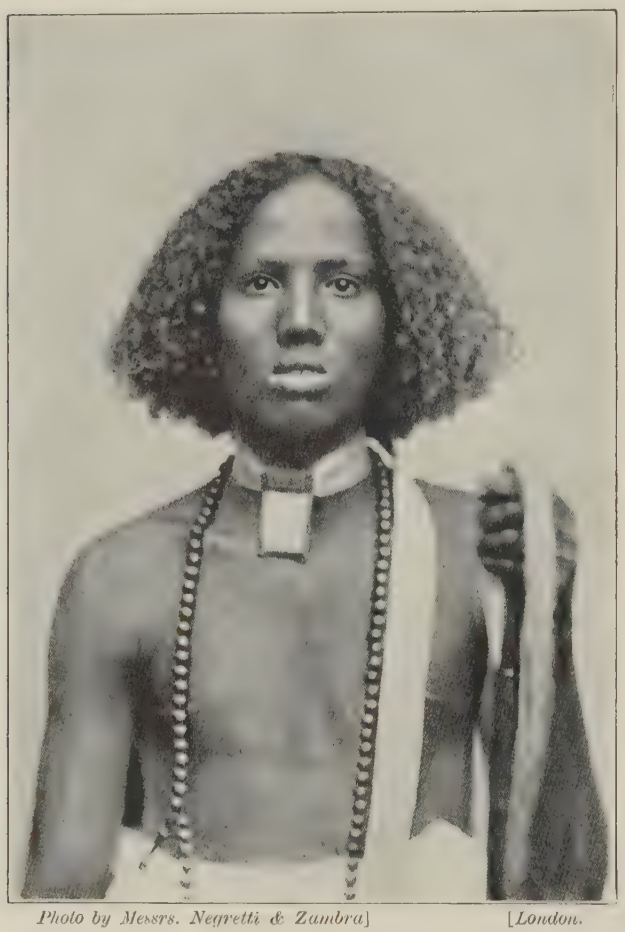


Photo by Messrs. Negretti & Zambra [*London.*

A SOMALI MAN.

tradition, the Queen of Sheba who visited Solomon was the Abyssinian Queen Maqueda. As a result of that visit the Queen gave birth by Solomon to a son, who was named Menelik David. He was sent to Jerusalem to be educated, and thence returned with a party of Jewish priests, under Azariah, son of the high priest Zadok, with tutors and servants, whose descendants still live in the country as the tribe of the Falasha. This enterprising Menelik David brought back other treasures; for finding the gates of his father's temple open on the day of his departure, he walked off with the Ark of Zion and the Tables of the Law! In accordance with this tradition the "Negus Negusti" or "King of Kings" of Abyssinia has for his second title "The Lion of the Tribe of Judah," and is regarded as a descendant of Solomon. It does not matter whether the ruler be a Semite or a Hamite; the king acquires his ancestors when he acquires the throne.

The great antiquity of the Abyssinian kingdom is proved by still existing inscriptions; for some of the monuments at Axum are inscribed in Greek and Himyaritic. The rude wealth of the early Abyssinian Court is known from classical writers. An embassy to the country was sent by the Roman Emperor Justinian in the sixth century. According to Gibbon, "the Negus, arrayed in barbaric pomp of gold chains, collars, and bracelets, and surrounded by his nobles and musicians, gave audience to the ambassador of Justinian seated in the open field upon a lofty chariot drawn by four elephants superbly caparisoned."

The original basis of the Abyssinian population was probably the Agau, a Hamitic race driven southward from Nubia before the days of the Semitic invasion. These Agau survive in some scattered communities, of which the largest lives to the south of Lake Tsana. The Falashas, or "Abyssinian Jews," according to some authorities, are an Agau race; but this origin is claimed with greater probability for the Bogo of Northern Abyssinia, who worship serpents, sacrifice to rivers, and amongst whom no man is allowed to look at or speak to his mother-in-law.

Politically, the most important people in Abyssinia are the Amhara, who live mostly in the central region around Lake Tsana. In modern times they have generally been the predominant nation, and their language, Amharic, is widely spoken by other tribes, such as the Agau. At present, however, since King John was killed in battle with the Mahdists, the Shoans, a southern race, have held the reins of power.

Historically, the chief rivals of the Amhara have been the Tigrians, whose capital is Adowa. The Tigrians speak a dialect of Ghez, a primitive Semitic language introduced from South Arabia in prehistoric times. The language is maintained in its archaic form by the Abyssinian Church, and it is spoken in what is said to be a fairly pure form by the Hababs, who live on the Red Sea shore north of Massowa.

The typical Abyssinians are the people of Amhara. They are a tall race, with long narrow head, an oval face, a high forehead, a thin and often aquiline nose, bright oval eyes, a pointed chin, a well-formed mouth, with thick and sometimes pouting lips, long frizzly or

Photo by Messrs. Negretti & Zambra] [*London.*

A SOMALI MAN AND HIS WIFE.

silky hair, and small hands, feet, and limbs. The colour varies from light yellow to dark brown. The race is typically Semitic; but the occasional occurrence of a flattened nose, Negro lips, and a jet-black skin shows that the Amharans are not free from Negro intermixture.

The Amharans are intelligent, and have bright, animated faces; the main fault of the people is that they are quarrelsome and inordinately vain. Some tame lions are kept loose in the court of the Negus as a symbol of the power of the king.

The national costume of the men in Abyssinia is a long piece of cotton-cloth folded round the body like a toga; under this is a loin-cloth or a pair of loose drawers ending a little

above the knee. The coast tribes wear a long shirt with the drawers. The women have a wide-sleeved chemise, tied round the waist by a narrow girdle, and a long tobe or sheet of cotton-cloth wrapped round the body.

The ornaments of the women are large studs of wood or metal in the ears, massive silver bracelets and anklets with silver bells, necklaces of blue- and gold-coloured beads, and a string of charms. They generally carry a twirling fan. The women paint extensively; they remove the hair from the eyebrows and mark there a line of dark blue; the cheeks are coloured to the eyes with a rouge made of ochre and fat.

The women usually wear the hair in rows of small curls; and the men devote much attention to their hair-dressing, frequently varying the arrangement. According to Harris, "many hours are daily expended in arranging the mop into various and quaint devices. At one time it is worn hanging in long clustering ringlets over the cheeks and neck, at another frizzed into round matted protuberances; to-day fancifully tucked and trimmed into small rows of minute curls like a counsellor's peruke, and to-morrow boldly divided into four large lotus-leaved compartments." The hair is, however, sometimes worn quite short.

The old weapons are a curved, sickle-shaped sword, spear, and shield; but firearms have been introduced, and are now the national weapon, at least in the army. Slings and stones are used in war; throwing-clubs are used for hunting small game, while lions are killed with the spear. Leopards are trained for hunting antelope.

The architecture varies greatly. The simplest huts are circular frameworks of twigs plastered with mud. In the Alpine regions of Simen they are of thick thatch surrounded by a thorn fence. In Sanafe the houses are long and rectangular. The better class of houses and those of most of the towns are built of stone cemented by mortar; such houses are circular, built in two storeys, and are all of stone, thatched with straw. Some of the older buildings are finer than any now built by the native Abyssinians. Thus in Gondar, the chief town in the province of Amhara, are the remains of a seventeenth-century fortress which has been called "the Windsor Castle of Ethiopia." This, however, was built by an European architect of red sandstone, with battlements of black basalt, and contains a high central keep and a number of round towers connected by long galleries.

By permission of the Professor of Anthropology, Natural History Museum, Paris.

AN ABYSSINIAN GIRL.

The most remarkable dwellings in Abyssinia are the monolithic temples, which are hewn out of single blocks of rock. At Lalibala there are several churches cut in blocks of basalt; and at Sokota, the chief town in the province of Wag, is a similar church in granite. Monolithic columns occur in various parts of the country, as in Wag, and at Axum, where there is one 83 feet in height.

Agriculture and the industries are neglected and primitive, though better conducted than in most of the Negro tribes. As with the Arabs and the Gallas, the fields are prepared for sowing by a wooden plough, armed with an iron knife or lance-head, and drawn by oxen. The main products grown are cereals, including barley. The grain is eaten as porridge, or in flour cakes or unleavened bread. Raw meat is the favourite food, and it is preferred when eaten warm from the slaughtered beast and flavoured with its gall. As is known from the accounts of Bruce, confirmed by later travellers, steaks are cut from the flanks of live cattle, and the wounds are healed. Beer brewed from barley and mead from wild honey

By permission of the Professor of Anthropology, Natural History Museum, Paris.

A NATIVE OF ABYSSINIA.

By permission of the Professor of Anthropology, Natural History Museum, Paris.
A GROUP OF ABYSSINIANS.

are the chief intoxicating beverages. The Abyssinians are forced to abstain totally from the use as drinks of either milk or coffee, which grows wild. The use of tobacco is also forbidden, and some rulers have discouraged smoking by cutting off the lips of people found indulging in that habit.

The most characteristic industries are filigree metal-working, leather-work and embroidery, and the plaiting of straw mats, baskets, and bowls, which, as with the Gallas, are woven sufficiently close to hold milk. Poetry is compiled by a class of minstrels who sing the praises of the nobles. Pictures, usually highly coloured, decorate the churches. The style of painting is Byzantine, and one remarkable feature is that good people are never represented in profile, which is reserved for demons, enemies, and Jews.

The ceremonies in connection with births are mainly remarkable for the union of Mohammedan and Jewish rites; for Abyssinian babies, when eight days old, are subjected to both baptism and circumcision.

Marriage is a civil contract, though a religious ceremony is often added: a great feast is indispensable. The father gives the bride a dowry, which remains her property, and unless previously spent is retained by her if she be divorced or separated. Morals among the people are lax, and adultery is not uncommon; if discovered, the woman gets a whipping. Polygamy and concubinage on an extensive scale exist among the wealthy classes.

Burials are attended by a great feast, provided, as in some West African tribes, by presents of food to the bereaved relatives. All the contributors expect invitations. Among the Shoho, who are inveterate beggars, the hand of the corpse is left outstretched above the grave.

The State religion of Abyssinia since the fourth century has been Christianity. The Church

is a branch of the Coptic Church of Egypt, and its head is the Patriarch of Alexandria. He appoints the *Abuna*, or Prelate of Abyssinia, who must be a Copt. But his influence is controlled by the *Echegheh*, a native dignitary at the head of the religious orders. Both live in Gondar, which is the ecclesiastical centre. The priests are allowed only one wife each, and are not allowed to remarry. The creed of the Church is monophysite—that is, it holds to the single and not the dual nature of Christ. It also believes in the three births of Christ—*viz* His proceeding from the Father, His birth by the Virgin Mary, and His reception of the Holy Ghost: that the last was a birth was settled by a sanguinary civil war. Fasting is one of the practices of the Church; and the priests are supposed to fast for nine months of the year.

The political organisation of the country is theoretically a despotism, limited by the weakness of the central authority and the slowness of communications. There is a paid standing army of about 70,000 men, with an unpaid militia of about 140,000 more. Nearly all the men have rifles of some sort, and the army has eighty mountain guns.

The criminal code dates from the time of Constantine, but it appears to be arbitrarily and sometimes cruelly enforced. In the time of King Theodore criminals at Magdala were crucified, flayed, or hurled over a cliff. But the rule of the present king, Menelik of Shoa, appears to be very superior to that of his predecessors in the administration of justice.

As an example of the Abyssinian Negro races we may take the Shangallas, who live in the plains to the north-west of the Abyssinian plateau. They are a fierce, warlike race, and are described by Plowden as people with light, slim legs, but powerfully built from the waist upward. Their food is meat and wild honey, and they eat the carrion of animals slain by Abyssinian ivory-hunters. They live in large caves in the rainy season, and at other times bivouac in the scrub. Their religion is fetishism, and they are guided by omens drawn from the flights of birds.

Photo by Mr. J. W. Roland.

HAUSSA.

By permission of Herr Umlauf, Hamburg.

A HAUSSA WOMAN.

The Falashas.

One of the most remarkable races in Abyssinia are the Falashas, who live around Lake Tsana in the central provinces. Their name, which comes from the Ethiopian word *Falas*, means "exiles." They claim to be the direct descendants of the Jews sent to Abyssinia as the retinue of Menelik, son of Solomon and the Queen of Sheba, reinforced by those who fled from Palestine after the overthrow of Judah by Nebuchadnezzar. The Falashas were once a powerful tribe occupying Simen, the high mountain region of Abyssinia, and the adjacent plains of Dembea. They were a turbulent race, and a source of perpetual trouble to the Tigrians and Amharans. They were therefore driven from the plains; but under a succession of Gideons and Judiths they held their own in the mountains. In the tenth century, under a beautiful and ambitious leader, Princess Esther, they nearly subverted Christianity throughout Abyssinia, and compelled the Legitimist prince to fly to Shoa. At length in the seventeenth century they were finally defeated, driven from the mountains, and compelled to settle as a subject race in the provinces of Dembea, Gojam, and Woggera. They were estimated in 1862 to number about 250,000, but according to later reports there are only from 10,000 to 20,000 of them. Stern, who visited the tribe as a missionary, says that "in physiognomy most of the Falashas bear striking traces of their Semitic origin. Among the first group we saw at Gondar there were some whose Jewish features no one could have mistaken who had ever seen the descendants of Abraham either in London or Berlin. Their complexion is a shade paler than that of the Abyssinians, and their eyes, although black and sparkling, are not so disproportionately large as those which characteristically mark the other occupants of the land."

The Falashas are very exclusive: intermarriage with members of another tribe or creed is rigidly prohibited, and any intercourse with a Gentile entails elaborate penance and purification. They maintain the Jewish customs as prescribed in Leviticus. They observe the Passover with the sacrifice of the Paschal lamb and the use of unleavened bread. They celebrate the feasts of Pentecost, of Trumpets, and of Tabernacles by taking offerings to their synagogues, where they hold commemorative services. Their synagogues, or *mesquids*, are placed in the middle of the villages and surmounted by a red earthen pot; the building is divided into three courts, entrance to which is regulated by the Levitical Law. The entrance faces the east, and on the opposite side is a small enclosure containing the altar of sacrifice. The priests undergo a long course of ascetic training. According to Stern, the Falashas are in many ways superior to their neighbors. He describes them as "exemplary in their morals, cleanly in their habits, and devout in their belief, and also industrious in the daily pursuits and avocations of life. Husbandry and a few simple trades—such as smiths, potters, and weavers—constitute the sole occupations in which they engage: commerce they unanimously repudiate as incompatible with their Mosaic creed."

In connection with the claims of the Falasha people to be regarded as of Jewish descent, it may be stated that none of their priests have at present any knowledge of the Hebrew language. Their Bible is the Gheez or Old Ethiopic version, which was made probably in the fourth century, and is common to all the Abyssinian Christians.

Apart from their peculiar religious rites and traditions, the Falashas differ little from the

Photo by Mr. J. W. Roland.

HAUSSA.

Photo by Mr. J. W. Roland.

A GROUP OF HAUSSA.

surrounding Agao, Khamta, and other Hamitic peoples, who still speak rude dialects of the old Hamitic tongue, and form the substratum of the heterogeneous Abyssinian populations. Of these the most primitive are the *Wito* (*Vaito*), fishers and hunters of the hippopotamus, who dwell round the shores of Lake Tsana, and present physical characters quite distinct from those of both the Hamites and Semites, by whom they are despised as outcasts. Their chief distinguishing features are a retreating head, with the outer corners of the eyes and eyebrows sloping upwards, an aquiline nose curved like a hawk's beak over the upper lip, enormously long chin, pointed ears, short woolly hair—altogether an aggregate of discordant characters such as scarcely occur in any other known race. Yet the Wito women are described as really beautiful, even according to European ideas. They are a harmless people, who keep aloof from their neighbours, and live in little conical huts made of reeds taken from the lake.

CHAPTER XVII.

THE HAMITIC AND SEMITIC RACES OF NORTH AFRICA.

a. THE PEOPLES OF THE SAHARA AND SOUDAN.

THE vast desert of Northern Africa, bounded by the Atlantic, the Mediterranean states, the Nile Valley, and the Soudan, is the most sparsely populated region in Africa. Most of it is a barren, waterless waste, where cultivation is impossible. But in places there are oases around springs and wells, which render some regions habitable and trade routes practicable across the deserts. The habitable areas are divided between two groups of tribes—the Tibbus in the east, and the Tuaregs in the west.

THE TIBBUS.

Ethnographically the Tibbu is the less important group. Its headquarters are among the rocky fastnesses of the Tibesti Mountains, east of the caravan road from Fezzan southward

Photo by Leroux] [*Algiers.*

A GROUP OF TUAREGS, SOUTH ALGERIA.

A TOUAREG WOMAN

to Lake Chad: but its members roam over the eastern desert, and have settlements in Fezzan on the north and in Borku and Kanem to the south.

According to Denham's account, the Tibbus of Bardo are "never above the middle size, slim, well made, with sharp, intelligent, copper-coloured faces, large prominent eyes, flat noses, large mouths, and teeth regular but stained a deep red from the immoderate use of tobacco. The forehead is high." The combination of a flat nose with long crisp hair, a bushy full beard, and high forehead suggests that the race is mixed. Most of it is probably Hamitic. But the language belongs to a group spoken by the Negro peoples of the Sudan, and the tribe has many customs in common with the Nilotic Negroes; thus it sees the same pattern of scar-tattooing, a series of lines across the temples as do the Shilluk, and, like the Masai, it holds cow-worship in supreme reverence. The Tibbus enforce the prohibition of communication between a man and his mother-in-law, which is widely spread among Negro tribes. On the other hand, they practise female circumcision, like the Somal, and the Negroes of the Slave Coast, which appears to be rather a Hamitic rite.

The men cover their faces with the Arab veil, but the women go half or more than half naked. The main ornaments of the Tibbus consist of a series of charms. Their weapons are spears and a knife shaped like a bill-hook. They ride camels, and the camel harness shows Arab influence.

The Tibbus dwell mainly in rock-shelters, caves, or rough huts made by resting roofs of twigs and palm thatch on boulders. Their staple food is dates, flour of durra, the astringent innutritious fruit of the dum-palm, and goats' milk. But the food-supply is generally insufficient.

The Touaregs

The western tribes, which form the group of the Touareg, belong to the Berber race, like the Kabyles of Algeria, of which they are the purest representatives. They are intellectually and commercially greatly superior to the Tibbus. The Touareg range westward from the Bilma salt-pans on the Fezzan-Lake Chad caravan road, between Tuat on the north and the Niger on the south, to the border of the Arab belt that runs south along the Atlantic coast from Morocco to Senegal. The tribe is divided into seven main groups, the Azgers the most important section, in the east, the Haggars, in the west, and the Kel-owie of Air, who have been almost by Negro intermixture, in the south-east.

The Touareg suffer from a bad reputation, owing to the massacre of the Flatters Expedition and of some French missionaries who were thought to have completely won their confidence. Some travellers, however, have found them friendly and honourable. Lieutenant Bissat, their latest champion, remarks that "thefts, many thefts, of course they have. They are proud,

Photo by Levaux] [*Algiers.*

A TUAREG MAN.

MIXED TYPE, BERBER AND NEGRO RACE, SAHARA.

they are fierce, they rob, and they beg. One of their peculiarities makes it very difficult to deal with them—they are very ready to take offence. They are, moreover, in constant dread of being subject to servitude, and fear invasion above all things. Side by side with all this, however, many noble virtues must also be placed to the credit of the Tuaregs. Their courage is proverbial. The defence of a guest is with them, as with the Arabs, a positive religion; whilst their steadfastness of character is well known, and their powers of endurance are absolutely indispensable to their very existence. Lastly—and here I know what I say is contrary to the generally received opinion—the Tuareg is faithful to his promises and hates petty theft. 'Never promise more than half what you can perform' says a Tuareg proverb, and even in the opinion of their enemies this is no idle boast."

Physically the Tuaregs are typical Berbers, and resemble the peoples of Southern Europe. The men are tall and slim, and their complexion is fair until tanned by exposure to the sun and sand glare. Blue eyes are not uncommon. The women agree in most respects with the men, except in figure, which is altered by artificial diet. According to Hourst, the women "are pleasing, sometimes even very pretty. Delicate features, big eyes full of expression, and very long black hair, parted in the middle and plaited together at the back of the head, give them a charming appearance; but they have absolutely no figures—they are just one mass of fat; their arms are like the jellies exposed for sale in pork-butchers' shops, and the less said about the rest of their bodies the better."

The Tuareg dress consists of a tunic of black cotton reaching nearly to the ankles, a pair of baggy trousers, hide sandals, and a black veil which covers the face. As with the Tibbus, the veil is not worn by the women, except that they may put one on as a mark of

Photo by Lekegian & Co.] [*Cairo.*

A FELLAH WOMAN.

Photo by M. Pierre Petit] *[Paris.*

TWO NUBIAN GIRLS.

respect to strangers: the men, on the other hand, never take it off, even at meals or during sleep. The hair is shaved, but the men leave a ridge or cockscomb to keep the veil raised off the head.

The main ornaments of the Tuaregs are small leather bags containing charms, which hang round the neck. They also wear necklaces of copper beads. A stone ring, usually of serpentine, fastened on the left arm above the wrist, is an ornament which is also useful in hand-to-hand fighting. The main weapon of the Tuaregs is the dagger, hung on the left wrist by a leather loop: in war they carry a double-edged sword, an iron lance, used either for thrusting or throwing, and a round leather shield. Some of the Western Tuaregs use bows and arrows.

The horses are small but strong; their saddles are made of wood covered with leather; the stirrups are very small, and only the big toe rests in them. The camel is a more important domestic animal than the horse.

The dwellings of the Tuaregs are mostly of skins resting on a light wooden framework; but straw huts are also used. They have a few towns, especially in the south. Thus most of the people of Say are Tuaregs. But Say, though a large town, is very inferior to those of the Haussa. The houses are mere straw huts with pointed roofs. There is but one mud house, which is occupied by the chief. The stockade round Say is said to be also made of straw. Some other Tuareg towns are better built; thus Ghat, which is five miles in circumference, consists of houses made of mud and date-palm timber.

The military system of the Tuaregs is feudal. Each head of a district has to maintain a force of armed retainers ready for service whenever called for.

A Tuareg marries only one wife. The preferences of the women are consulted in marriage, and a woman may refuse any suitor for whom she does not care. After marriage her position is one of freedom, which is never abused, and of influence, which is always on the side of refinement. The women are more cultured than the men; and among one group, the Asgars, most of the women can read and write. The men are generally attached to their wives, and a good deal of the native poetry is devoted to the praise of women. Women, moreover, hold property in their own right; and as they are not bound to contribute to the household expenses, they are usually richer than their husbands. Daughters inherit an equal share with the sons in the ordinary property of their parents, while whatever has been captured in war falls to the lot of the eldest daughter's eldest son.

The domestic virtues of the Tuaregs are also illustrated by their treatment of their slaves, a Negro caste known as the Bellates. According to Lieutenant Hourst, the slaves are so attached to their masters that the French have not succeeded in detaching a single

Bellate from his allegiance: when taken prisoners, they escape back to their bondage at the first opportunity.

The Tuareg religion is Islam modified by fetishism. The Tuaregs are very superstitious, believe in demons and spirits, and never speak of the dead except as those who have disappeared. They regard the cross as a sacred symbol.

The Fulah.

The physical characters of the Fulah race show that they are not Negroes, and they have even been regarded as Malays, and some striking coincidences with Malayan culture exist in the West Soudan. But the Fulah are probably a Hamitic race of Berber affinities, and possibly are allied to the Tuaregs.

Photo by Richard Buchta.

TWO NUBIAN DANCING-GIRLS.

They present an interesting combination of physical features. The colour, as implied by the name Fulah, is reddish, varying from reddish brown to a light chestnut. The face is oval, the nose is straight and often aquiline, the lips are thin and delicate, and the hair is straight or grows in loose ringlets.

In mental characters they differ no less markedly from the Negroes. Barth calls them the most intelligent of African races. All were formerly pastoral, but many have now settled down to agricultural and industrial pursuits, in which they succeed by their shrewdness, pertinacity, and diplomacy. As soldiers they are brave and disciplined, although Lieutenant Hourst tells us that the Fulah of Fafa on the Niger, like the rest of the sedentary peoples whom he met, live in abject fear of the Tuaregs. But their courage and discipline are demonstrated by the fact that, though they are a minority of the population in Sokoto, they are politically supreme. Their army is large, disciplined, and well equipped.

The Fulah language is described by Keane as "of distinctly Negro type." It uses

suffixes in declension and adopts two genders, which are the "human" and the "not human," instead of the usual divisions of male and female.

The two chief Fulah states are Sokoto and Gando, to each of which there are various subject states, which have an even smaller percentage of Fulah people. Thus Bidé and Nupé on opposite sides of the Niger above the confluence of the Benue, and Borgu on the west bank farther north, are subject to Gando. And the provinces of Kano, Katsena, and Zaria to the east and south-east of Sokoto, and Yakoba and Adamawa still farther to the south-east were formerly tributary to Sokoto. Most of these groups are now comprised in British Nigeria, the rest in the French Soudan or the German Kamerún.

The Haussa.

The Haussa are essentially a nation of traders; they live in large populous towns, where they carry on their numerous industries and handicrafts. The products are distributed over most of Northern Africa. The Haussa language has become the medium of intercourse between the different races of the West and Central Soudan. It is spoken throughout the greater part of the Niger Basin; and in most of the principal commercial centres of Tunis, Algeria, Senegambia, and the British west coast protectorates there are traders who know the language.

The Haussa language has been studied by many workers, including Dr. Rat and Dr. Schön, who compiled the first grammars and dictionaries, and Canon Robinson, who has investigated Haussa literature. In the language, about a third of the words are Semitic, including all but one of the pronouns and most of the terms in commonest use; but owing to its structure the language is believed by Robinson to belong to the Hamitic group, whereas Professor Keane considers it to be Negro altered by Hamitic influence.

The relations of the three great languages of the West Soudan are admirably expressed by Cust in the remark that Arabic, Fulah, and Haussa are respectively the languages of religion, conquest, and commerce.

Photo by Richard Buchta.

A NUBIAN DANCING-WOMAN.

Though industrious and enterprising, the Haussa are said to be cowardly. This statement may be regarded as inconsistent with the reputation for valour of our West African Haussa police; but the men in that force are not Haussa, but only Haussa-speaking Negroes. When some real Haussa were once by mistake engaged for service in the Congo Free State, their natural timidity was only too well illustrated.

Owing to their lack of courage, the Haussa were easily conquered by the Fulah, who now rule over them. The two races are easily distinguished. The Haussa are darker in colour, shorter in stature, have boader noses, and more woolly hair than the Fulah. But in culture both peoples are on the same grade, which for Africa is very advanced.

The people dress in cotton, especially in the blue-dyed cotton of Kano. The chief garments are a long loose shirt reaching to the knees and a pair of baggy trousers. The men wear a straw cap, a turban, or a fez. The head is generally

shaved, except a tuft at the back; but the beard is long and worn full. Leather sandals of Moorish type are made at Kano and Katsena. Ornaments of embroidered leather, rings and trinkets of gold and silver of tasteful design, and decorated pottery show the artistic sense of the people. The chief weapons are a long straight sword, which tapers steadily to the point, and a long lance, with a handle 8 or 10 feet long; battle-axes, throwing-knives, knuckle-dusters armed with knife-blades, bows and arrows, are also used. The Fulah wear suits of quilted armour.

The houses are usually circular, and built of mud walls with a conical thatched roof; each house is placed in a court-yard or compound. The wealthier merchants and chiefs dwell in two-storeyed houses, comprising several rooms, with a flat roof and wide verandahs. The palace at Kano, which is several acres in extent, was designed on this plan; it consists of a series of buildings made of hardened mud, surrounding a large court-yard. The houses are collected into large towns, which are the most remarkable feature of Haussaland. Each town is surrounded by a wall, sometimes from 20 to 40 feet in height, pierced by gates and defended by towers.

Photo by Neurdein Frères [*Paris.*

AN ULED-NAÏL (ALGERIAN TYPE).

For the purposes of trade there is a shell currency, the recognised medium of exchange being cowries, of which 2,000 are equivalent in value to about eighteenpence. The religion of the Fulah and of most of the Haussa is Islam; but it is not followed with fanaticism: in Kano, for example, there is but a single mosque, which is small and neglected. In some places, unfortunately, the religion has not saved the people from intemperance.

b. THE PEOPLES OF THE CENTRAL SOUDAN.

West of the "empire" of Sokoto are the four states of the Central and Eastern Soudan, Bornu, Baghirmi, Wadai, and Darfur, which extend eastward from the Niger to the edge of the Nile Basin in Kordofan, but have retained a mere shadow of their political independence.

The peoples of the four states are of very mixed origin. The main basis of the population is Negro, mixed with Arabs, Berbers, Tibbus, and various half-breeds. The Arab influence is greatest in Wadai and in the plains of Darfur, whereas the Negro element is strongest in

Photo by Neurdein Frères [*Paris.*

AN ULED-NAÏL WOMAN, BISKRA.

Wadai, Baghirmi, and Bornu. The most typical of the Soudanese are the people of Bornu, a Negro nation with a strong Tibbu strain.

Bornu is ethnographically the most important and interesting of the four states. The ruling people are the Kanuri, who are clearly Negroes somewhat modified by interminglings, especially with the Dazas or Southern Tibbus. They were conquered by the Fulah, but recovered their independence in a holy war stimulated by the preaching of a native Mahdi.

They have been described as timid and peaceful, "with large unmeaning faces, fat Negro noses, and mouths of great dimensions, with good teeth and high foreheads." The men generally shave their heads, but the women wear their hair formed into three rolls, one on the top of the head, and with two smaller rolls hanging down over the ears. The tribal tattoo-mark is a series of twenty scars running from the corners of the mouth to the angle of the lower jaw and cheek-bone. The national weapons are the spear, shield, and dagger.

The country houses in Bornu are circular in shape, and made of straw, woven grass mats, or clay walls thatched with straw. But most of the people live in towns, where the houses are larger and better built. The houses of the better class consist of several walled courts, round which are the apartments for the slaves; the wives of the owner live in an inner court, where there is a thatched hut for each of them. From this court a staircase leads "to the apartments of the owner, which consist of two buildings like towers or turrets, with a terrace of communication between them. The walls are made of reddish clay as smooth as stucco, and the roofs most tastefully arched on the inside with branches and thatched on the outside with grass."

The towns are surrounded by walls 20 feet thick and from 30 to 40 feet high. The walls are pierced by four entrances, closed at night by massive wooden gates.

The people have few industries except agriculture. They grow grain crops, especially millet and dhurra, which, boiled into porridge, is the staple food. Beans also are largely grown. Fish is abundant in Lake Chad and the rivers which flow into it.

Baghirmi, to the south-east of Lake Chad, is the Soudanese state with the most Negro blood in the people; the population consists of Bornuese, Fulah, and Arabs, greatly altered by the large class of Negro slaves.

In Wadai the Arab type is strongest, and it is mixed with Negroes, Fulah, and some Tibbus. The people of Wadai are more fanatical and warlike than those of the other states of this group. In addition to the usual weapons, the lance or spear, knife, and dagger-shaped sword, the natives use the gun and revolver, and are protected by quilted armour like that of the Fulah.

In the hills of Darfur live the Fur Negroes, who have adopted Islam, but retain their old fetishes and Negro superstitions; but unlike the Nilotic Negroes, to whom they are allied, they neither tattoo nor remove the front teeth from the lower jaw. They are a brave race, as the Egyptians learnt by experience.

Photo by Leroux]

AN ULED-NAÏL WOMAN. [*Algiers.*

Photo by Neurdein Frères] [*Paris.*

AN ULED-NAÏL WOMAN, BISKRA.

c. THE PEOPLES OF EGYPT AND NUBIA.

Egypt, as might be expected from its geographical position, is inhabited by a mixture of races. The basis of the population consists of Copts and Fellahin, who are the lineal descendants of the ancient Egyptians.

The Copts.

The Copts now live mostly in Upper Egypt, especially near Assiut and around Lake Birket-el-Qurun in the depression of Fayum. In this district many "villages" are occupied solely by Copts, who live as agriculturists; whereas in Lower Egypt they are artisans, traders, and scribes. As the Copts are Christians, they have been brought into less intimate association with the Arab section of the population, and thus have remained less altered than the Fellahin by intermixture of Semitic blood. But though in religion and race the Copts have remained pure, in customs and spirit they have been greatly altered. Thus Klunzinger tells us that "the modern Copt has become from head to foot, in manners, language, and spirit, a Moslem, however unwilling he may be to recognise the fact. His dress is like that of the rest of the people, except that he prefers darker materials." He wears a black turban; in church he keeps on his head-covering and removes his shoes; in praying he faces Jerusalem, "and mumbles out psalms by the yard in a regular paternoster gallop"; he fasts periodically, and will not eat pig, camel, or goose.

The Coptic Church itself has not escaped alteration by contact with Islam. It arose as an offshoot from the Greek in the fifth century after the Council of Chalcedon. Its head is Patriarch of Alexandria, who is also the chief of the Abyssinian Church. The usages of the Church have preserved many relics of primitive Christianity. The priests dress like the

laymen, and are dependent for support on the free-will offerings of the people, which are generally given in kind. Marriage is forbidden to the priests after ordination, but they are allowed to marry before that event; and marriage bars their promotion to only the highest posts in the Church.

The Fellahin.

The Fellahin have been more altered by Arab and Berber influences than the Copts, but in physique and cast of countenance the old Egyptian type is recognisable. They are of middle height, on an average about 5 feet 6 inches high; they have a broad forehead, straight nose, which lacks the Semitic flattening at the tip, large black eyes, and thick lips. The Fellahin form the bulk of the Egyptian population, especially in the rural districts of the Delta and Lower Egypt. The country Fellah wears a brown woollen shirt, with large loose sleeves, and usually has also a shawl over his shoulders. On his head is a tight-fitting white cap or a red fez, covered by the turban. The townsmen, on the other hand, dress in cotton instead of wool; they wear a loose cotton shirt reaching to the knees or the feet, and often tied round the waist by a girdle; beneath the shirt is a loin-cloth or a pair of short drawers. The men of the upper classes have adopted Arab, Turkish, or European costumes. Their women live in seclusion and never appear in public places except closely veiled. Klunzinger has given a full account of their dress and ornaments. He tells us that they blacken their eyelids with antimony and decorate their bodies by tattooing and paint. Their hair is bound into slender tresses, some of which cover the sides of the head, and the rest hang freely down the back. Their ornaments are elaborate and costly, being mostly made of gold. The hair is fastened and adorned by golden pins and combs, and fringed with rows of ducats, tiny

Photo by Neurdein Frères] [*Paris.*

ULED-NAÏLS AND TWO NEGRO GIRLS.

Photo by Legrand] [*Algiers.*

A KABYLE MAN.

bells, and gold flakes; the tresses are tied at the ends by cords of silk adorned with spangles and gold coins. The main article of dress is a loose white robe, which extends from the shoulders to the feet; it has no sleeves, but there are wide side-openings from the arm to the knees. The under-garments consist of a gauze chemise and loose drawers fastened below round the knees or ankles.

The life of the people is regular and uniform. They all rise before the sun, say their prayers, take a cup of coffee, and then hurry off to the bazaar or the field. Business is mostly done in the morning. At midday there is dinner, followed by a long siesta; work is then resumed till sunset, after which comes the principal meal of the day. The main foods are flat cakes of unleavened bread made of flour paste baked over a fire, beans and lentils boiled with *ghee* or butter, fried fish, mutton, beef, or fowls. The women have their household work, which consists principally of cooking, washing, and sewing. They make morning calls on other women, when they smoke, drink coffee, tell stories, listen to songs, or watch dancing. They can only walk abroad veiled or under a canopy, but the large court-yards of the houses afford them plenty of open air. The lives of women in the harem are thus passed neither in harsh slavery nor indolent luxury, for they have their amusements as well as their duties.

Polygamy is of course allowed to the Fellahin. Divorce is easy, and is frequently due to a fit of anger, and is often followed by remarriage. But when the absolute form of divorce has been used direct remarriage is illegal. This can only be effected by the law of *mostahill*. The woman must marry another man, who can instantly divorce her, and then the first husband can remarry her.

Marriage in the first instance is arranged by the parents at an early age. Girls marry at from twelve to fourteen, and boys when about three years older. The bride and bridegroom do not see each other until a late stage in the marriage proceedings; but they can then, if they choose, stop the ceremony. Marriage is not by purchase, but a relic of this system is preserved in the payment made by the bridegroom's father to the father of the bride, which sum is, however, spent on her trousseau.

After birth a child is kept in seclusion for seven days, during which time no man, not even its father, is allowed to look at it, for fear of injury. On the seventh day the baby is placed in a sieve and carried in procession through the whole house, accompanied by lighted

Photo by Legrand] [*Algiers.*

A KABYLE WOMAN.

Photo by Leroux] [*Algiers.*

TWO KABYLE WOMEN, ALGERIA.

tapers, while the midwife scatters grain and salt as food for the wicked spirits. The child is shaken in the sieve to make it fearless, and it is held up to the sun to sharpen its eyes. If it be a girl, the house will be filled with women invited by the mother; but if it be a boy, the father also will have asked guests, and the child is carried in its sieve to the men's room, where the father sees it for the first time. There it is christened by the cadi sucking a piece of sugar-candy and allowing the fluid to trickle from his mouth into that of the child, after which he pronounces its name.

In addition to these two native races, and to the Berbers, who live in the Siwah Oasis, there are in Egypt many foreigners, Arabs, Turks, Armenians, and Jews. The main commerce of the country and the principal administrative appointments are held by these people. But, with the exception of the Arabs, these races have remained as foreign elements. The Arabs, however, have fused with the Fellahin to a considerable extent, both by the adoption of Egyptian women into their harems and owing to the influence of Arabised tribes on the Egyptian borders.

The Nubians.

The country of Nubia, between Abyssinia and Egypt, is occupied by a number of Negro, Semitic, and Hamitic tribes, altered by intermixture. The Semitic group occurs mainly in the Nile Valley, while the Hamites range over the plains between the Nile and the Red Sea. As a type of the former we may take the tribe of the Hamran Arabs of the Atbara, who are famous as great hunters.

The Hamrans physically resemble the other "Arabs" of this region, except that they have an extra length of long curled hair, worn parted down the centre. As a race they are neither powerful nor tall, but light and active; their average height is 5 feet 8 inches. Their methods of hunting have been graphically described by Sir Samuel Baker, of whose account the following is a summary.

Their main weapon is a straight two-edged sword about 3 or 3½ feet long. When used in hunting, it has a lashing of cord for about 9 inches round the upper end, so that it can be held by both hands. The Hamrans hunt elephants either on foot or on horseback. In the former case the hunters generally try to stalk the animal during its midday sleep, and with one blow of the sword cut off the trunk, whereby the elephant bleeds to death in about an hour. Should it be impossible to catch the elephant asleep, they creep up behind and sever the back sinew of the hind leg about a foot above the heel. This injury disables the elephant, and a cut can be given at the other hind leg with greater safety. The animal is

then left to bleed to death. Hunting on horseback is the more common method. Four men usually hunt together. They follow a herd of elephants, and attract the attention of the animal with the largest tusks. It is irritated into a series of charges, by which it is gradually detached from the herd. One hunter then rides close up to the head of the elephant, which, enraged at such impudence, makes a desperate charge. The hunter allows the elephant to keep almost within reach of his horse's tail. While the whole attention of the elephant is thus absorbed two other hunters gallop close up to it; one of them springs to the ground, and with one blow of his heavy sword, held in both hands, severs the sinew of one of the hind legs. The elephant is disabled by the first pressure of its foot upon the ground, for the enormous weight of its body dislocates the joint, and the limb is useless. The hunter who has led the chase then irritates the animal into attempting another charge, during which it is comparatively easy for the other hunters to cut the sinew of the other hind leg. The animal then cannot move, and slowly bleeds to death.

The rhinoceros is killed in much the same way, though the chase is even more difficult

Photo by Legrand] [*Algiers.*

ARAB CHILDREN AT PLAY.

and dangerous; for the rhinoceros is swifter than the elephant, and can run well on three legs; so it is not disabled by a single blow.

The Beja and the Ababdeh.

The Semitic race is also represented by the Hassanieh and the Jalin of Khartum. The Arab tribes, however, are clearly intruders, and the main element in the Nubian population belongs to the race of the Beja.

As an example of the Beja we may take the Ababdeh, who dwell in the hilly district about the frontiers of Upper Egypt and Nubia, between the Red Sea and the Nile. They are Hamites, and differ physically from the Arabs of Sinai and Northern Egypt, but they show many Semitic traces. Klunzinger describes the Ababdeh as varying in colour from deep brown to black: "The face is a fine oval, not so long as among the Arabs; the eyes large and fiery; the mouth and lips neither large nor small; the nose straight, and rather

short, broad and blunt, than long. The neck is long and thin; the ears small and roundish; the hair naturally straight or curled, but not woolly—it is artificially twisted into cork-screw ringlets and worn long and uncovered." Their dress in general resembles that of the Egyptian peasant, consisting of a long coat or shirt and a loin-cloth. The women wear a long white cotton robe, fastened under the armpits and reaching to the feet, while one fold of it covers the head like a veil. They wear necklaces of glass beads, brass earrings and nose-rings, and buckles on feet and hands.

Their houses are tents of skins placed over poles. They live on milk and dhurra. They keep herds of camels, goats, and sheep, in tending which most of their time is spent. Some have settled on the shore and live largely on fish, and others have settled in the Nile Valley, where they have become agriculturists. The number of the tribe is estimated at about 30,000. They are Mohammedans and speak Arabic.

Among other members of the Beja group are the Hadendowa, who live around Suakin, and the Bishari, who live along the Abyssinian frontier.

A KABYLE WOMAN.

The Nuba and Dongolawi.

In the Nile Valley the Beja are replaced by members of the Nuba race, who probably are a mixture of Hamite and Negro; the main Nile tribe of the Nuba is known as the "Barabra," which includes the Dongolawi of Dongola, the people of the great Korosko Desert, and the inhabitants of the Nile Valley from Wadi Halfa to Assuan.

In structure they have more of the Negro than either the Hamrans or the Beja: the average Dongolawi, for instance, have very wavy hair, a thin beard, and widely open nostrils. But in many of them the Hamitic type prevails, so that the nose is straight and thin, the hair long, and the lips are thinner than in the Negro. But the Negro characters become increasingly stronger as the Nile is ascended.

These Nile Valley Barabra are a race of peasants, who grow crops of rice and dhurra in the narrow belt of cultivable land between the river and the desert. They water their fields by the *shaduf*, which consists of a long lever having arms very unequal in length; at the end of the longer arm is a bucket, which can be lowered and dipped into the river, and then swung up over the bank. The Nile peasants are a peaceful, gentle people; but they are more intelligent and active than the Egyptian Fellahin. That they are capable of great achievements is shown by the fact that the Mahdi who in 1884–85 replaced Egyptian misrule in the Soudan by a worse tyranny

was a member of the Dongolawi clan.

d. THE PEOPLES OF ALGERIA AND MOROCCO.

THE peoples of Morocco and Algeria may be conveniently considered together; for though the countries are politically distinct, they are physically similar and their populations are ethnographically identical. The majority of the Moroccans and Algerians are Berbers; the rest are Arabs, Moors, Jews, and Negroes.

THE BERBERS.

The Berber is a Hamitic race which has been partly "Arabised." But as all are Mohammedans and many speak Arabic, they have often been regarded as Arabs, a mistake which has led to political disasters. Some of the Berbers are even regarded as Shorfa, or descendants of Mohammed, although they are Hamites and not Semites. The Berbers and Arabs are both Caucasian, and physically offer many points of resemblance; but the differences are important. The Berbers have a shorter, less oval face, a broader nose, which is rarely aquiline, a larger mouth and jaws, a stronger build of body, and a fairer complexion, with sometimes blue eyes and light-coloured hair. They are more industrious, more inquisitive, and less restrained than the Arabs, and their turn of mind is more practical than contemplative.

Photo by Leroux] [*Algiers.*

KABYLE CHILDREN.

The Berber tribes are numerous; they are said to number over 1,000 different clans in Algeria alone. These clans are divided into three groups. The first is that of the Kabyles, or Akbails, of the north, including the piratical Riffs. The second group includes the Sus around Mogador and the Shulluhs of the Atlas. The third group comprises the Haratin, or Black Berbers, of the southern slopes of the Atlas Chain.

As a rule the Berbers are peaceful and very industrious; but there are exceptions. The Riffs of the north-western coast of Morocco are turbulent and aggressive, and were once notorious as pirates. It is said that the greatest insult that can be given to a Riff is to say, "Your father died in his bed."

The costume of the Berbers is simpler than that of the Arabs. The men wear a cloth tunic reaching down to the knees, while the women have a longer tunic fastened by a girdle round the waist, and a coloured cloth over the shoulders. The Arab veil is not worn. The women are not secluded, and freely take part in open-air festivals and dances. The men

Photo by Lekegian & Co. [*Cairo.*

STREET MINSTRELS, CAIRO.

have their hair cut short, but the beard is allowed to grow to fair length; they wear a fez, and the women use a looser, fuller cap. The main ornaments are elaborate necklaces, large silver bracelets, and sometimes nose-rings. The tribal weapons are a straight sword, guns of any pattern, and smooth-bore cannon, made by drilling out a cast block of metal.

The Berber houses are generally two-storeyed buildings of stone; they are often crowded together in the villages, which are surrounded by a stone wall or bank. In the country districts the people mostly dwell in tents or beehive-shaped straw huts. These huts simply rest on the ground, and are moved about from place to place. Two or three men get inside each hut, lift it up, and then walk off with it to the new site selected for the village. Colville describes a Berber village on the move as looking like an army of gigantic snails on the march.

The Berbers are industrious agriculturists. They grow wheat and barley, which they cut with the sickle, while the ground is prepared with a wooden, iron-shod plough; they also grow maize, onions, beans and lentils, coffee, and various fruits, especially walnuts and olives. They practise most of the primitive industries; they smelt iron-ore, burn clay into tiles, spin flax and cotton, and weave cotton and woollen fabrics, including carpets; they make pottery and soap.

Politically they are grouped into *sofs*, or associations, and into great confederations, or *kabails*. The government of each community is by a council, or *jemaa*, presided over by an *amina*, or mayor, an office which is often hereditary.

Though Mohammedans, the Berbers are not very rigid in their religious observances. Circumcision, for instance, is often neglected. They drink wine made from their own vines, but abstain from imported liquors; and they are usually monogamous.

The North African Arabs.

The supplementary elements in the population of Morocco and Algeria may be grouped into classes, excluding the Europeans and some remains of Roman colonies. The most important intruders are the Arabs, who conquered Algeria and Morocco in the seventh and eleventh centuries. They are still politically predominant in Morocco, and were so in Algeria until the French occupation. The Arabs live mainly in Western Algeria and Morocco. The latter country ranks next to Arabia as the most sacred land of the Arabs, and its sultan is head of the Western Mohammedans.

The Arabs are widely scattered in Algeria, but are most numerous in the west. They form numerous clans, most of which are prefixed by the word "Aulad" or "Uled," such as

"Uled-Naïl," Arabised Berbers living to the west of Biskra. Some Berber clans have, however, also adopted the term, so that it is not altogether distinctive of the Arabs.

The Arabs of Northern Africa retain the physical appearance, customs, and mode of life of their ancestors, and do not call for special remark, except to notice the points of contrast between them and the Moors and Berbers. Thus the women differ from the Berbers by their use of the *adjar*, or veil. The lower-class women wear a loose wide-sleeved linen mantle, tied round the waist by a cord like that of a monk. Out of doors they wear a long robe coming from the head to the feet; the face is then hidden either by a fold of this garment or a special veil, and usually only one eye is left exposed. They wear a profusion of ornaments, large earrings, bead and coral necklaces, and metal anklets. They dye their hands and nails yellow with henna, and blacken the eyebrows with powdered antimony.

Photo by Leroux] [*Algiers.*

AN ALGERIAN MOORISH GIRL.

The Moors.

Allied to the Arabs are the Moors, or town-dwelling Arabs. They are fairer in complexion than the country Arabs, which may be partly explained by the fact that many are descendants of the Moriscos expelled from Spain, who had absorbed Spanish blood.

The Moors are a cultured and intellectual race, with far less reserve than is affected by the Arabs. Leared describes the lower-class Moors as people of extraordinary vivacity and of inexhaustible spirits, with a keen sense of humour and inimitable powers of mimicry.

The national dress is white. Men wear an embroidered shirt fastened down the breast by many buttons and loops, a pair of loose drawers, and a large-sleeved coat. Out of doors a red fez on the head, a pair of yellow slippers, and a long wrap of cotton or silk in warm weather and a thick woollen cloak in winter are also worn. The costume of the women is often elaborate, and is described by Gaskel as follows: "A coloured jacket, embroidered with gold or silver, is worn over a white muslin chemisette. A pair of wide cashmere trousers, of blue, yellow, or green colour, beautifully worked, meet the vest at the waist, where a handsome silken sash or girdle is folded round them. Sometimes a scarf or

A MOORISH LADY.

other drapery, fastened in front, is made to fall gracefully over the lower part of the person behind, forming a train on the floor, leaving, however, one leg, adorned with a massive silver anklet, uncovered, whilst the points of the feet are tipped with tiny Morocco slippers. Half a dozen bracelets on each arm are the fewest they wear, whilst the rich deck themselves with pearls, diamonds, and precious stones. Such as cannot afford an expensive *parure* cover, if they do not adorn, their persons with all procurable pieces of old or even modern coins, gold or silver, which fall in long necklaces as low as the waist. Amongst Turkish money we have seen the effigies of Queen Victoria and his Holiness the Pope. The jingle made at every movement by these bits of metal is music to the ear of a Moorish lady. Dyes and perfumes, which are the delight of all women of the East, are in especial favour with the ladies of Algeria. Moorish women in particular, not content with trying to deepen the colour of the darkest of black eyebrows, are dissatisfied when they do not extend and meet in an uninterrupted line across the forehead—a mistake of nature they correct by the aid of art."

Moorish architecture is the finest in Africa, and a typical house has been thus described by Colville: "As the house in which I found myself is a fair specimen of a Moorish habitation, I give a somewhat detailed description. The most important feature is the court-yard, which is entered from the street by a narrow passage. It is generally paved with pretty tiles and partly roofed in; the upper rooms overhang it to the extent of about 6 feet, supported by pillars. There is always a stream of running water in some part of the court, often a pretty fountain. Out of the court three or four long narrow rooms open by high Moorish archways. These are closed by large carved wooden gates, having a smaller or postern door in one of them. The floors of the rooms are tiled, and are frequently surrounded by a tiled dado; the walls are whitewashed, the ceilings often beautifully ornamented with arabesques in gold and bright colours. The upper floors are reached by one or more narrow dark staircases, usually much out of repair. They are nearly all at different levels, and are very puzzling to find one's way about. One of the rooms in my house could only be reached from the upper floor. The room which I occupied at the far end of the court was overlooked by a gallery, of which, although I wandered all over the house, I could find no entrance. The room to the right of the main staircase was some 12 feet above the level of the court, yet there was no doorway to indicate that any room was beneath it. On the second floor was a doorway opening on to the *stahr*, or house-top. Here the women sit and talk, safe from male intrusion, for the *stahr* is tabooed to the lords of creation."

The principal Moorish foods are cakes of barley flour and buttermilk, and a kind of porridge made of flour rolled into small granules like Italian paste; this is generally flavoured with rancid butter, which is made in a goat-skin bag, tied at the mouth and rolled and

Photo by Leroux] [*Algiers.*

AN ARAB MAN.

Photo by Legrand] [*Algiers.*

AN ARAB CAMP.

kneaded about on the floor until the milk is churned. A kind of sausage, made of minced meat plastered round a wooden stick and toasted over a charcoal fire, is also an important national food. These sausages are prepared and sold in special cookshops, which abound in all the Moorish towns. Bread is mostly used by the women, who are fattened before marriage by being crammed like poultry with finger-shaped pellets of soft bread. This course of treatment lasts for some twenty days. Tea is the national beverage; spirits and wine are made from grapes, figs, and dates. Tobacco is smoked.

Leared, for some years a doctor in Morocco, thus describes a Moorish dinner-party: "The company sit in a circle, cross-legged, on the floor. Sometimes, indeed, an apology for a table a few inches in height is placed in the centre. Upon this or on the floor a huge case made of straw sewn together and decorated with coloured leather-work is placed. A conical cover of the same material fits over the case, and when the former is removed a wooden bowl or tub filled with *kuskusu* [a kind of porridge] is displayed. Before eating every one says grace for himself by exclaiming 'Bismallah!'—'In the name of Allah!' Each person then thrusts the fingers of his right hand into the smoking mess, and, taking up a considerable quantity, forms it into a sort of ball or lump, and then by a clever jerk tosses it into his mouth, which the serving hand is never allowed to touch. The left hand is never used in eating. From this it will be seen that the etiquette of the Moorish dinner-table is quite as exacting as the corresponding etiquette among ourselves. After each meal water and napkins are brought for the hands."

The Moors are all Mohammedans, but their creed is not free from Negro superstitions. Thus the word "five" is never mentioned at the Morocco Court, the number being expressed as "four plus one." The *lex talionis*, the law of a tooth for a tooth, is still part of the Moorish jurisprudence. An English merchant at Mogador, who was accused of having knocked out two teeth from a beggar, was compelled to allow two of his own teeth to be extracted; but as the charge was false, he was compensated by the Government.

CHAPTER XVIII.

EUROPE: RUSSIA, CAUCASIA, FINLAND, LAPLAND, NORWAY, SWEDEN, AND ICELAND.

RUSSIA.

Of all the peoples constituting the Slavonic branch of the so-called Caucasian type, the Russians are the most conspicuous and the most powerful. They inhabit an empire more than twice as large as Europe (exceeding 9,000,000 square miles in extent), with a population estimated in 1897 at 129,211,113, of whom about 100,000,000 are in Russia itself. In appearance Russians of the present day do not suffer by comparison with any other people in Europe. Formerly they were of somewhat heavier build and full average stature, with a swarthy skin, small deep-set eyes, dark hair, heavy beard, and moustache. Both figure and face, however, have been greatly changed and improved by intermixture with fair Scandinavian and other races. The Russians are now frequently referred to by ethnologists as supplying some of the best examples of the highest Caucasian type.

The peasants are remarkable for their power of enduring both extreme cold and extreme heat. When a coachman takes his master or mistress to a theatre, he never thinks of going home and returning at the appointed hour. He does not even walk about, stamping his feet and swaying his arms to keep himself warm, as English cabmen do; hour after hour he sits placidly on his box. Though the cold be of an intensity never approached here, even in our severest winters, he can sleep as tranquilly as the idle lazzaroni in Naples at midday.

Photo by J. Daziaro] [*Moscow.*

A RUSSIAN MENDICANT.

Once a week the Russian indulges in a vapour bath, an occupation usually reserved for Saturday afternoon. In some parts of the country the peasants take their vapour bath in the large household oven in which the family bread is baked. The temperature is raised to the extreme limit of human endurance, such as few English people could bear.

Sir D. Mackenzie Wallace, describing among his experiences in Russia a vapour bath, says: "I only made the experiment once; and when I informed my attendant that my life was in danger from congestion of the brain, he laughed outright, and told me that the operation had only begun. Most astounding of all," he continues, "the peasants in winter often rush out

Photo by J. Daziaro] *[Moscow.*

A RUSSIAN COACHMAN.

of the bath and roll themselves in snow!"

Much of the sentiment and disposition commonly regarded as part of the national character is due to outside influences, and does not appear to be inherent. His cunning, indolence, intemperance, instability, and reckless prodigality are the outcome of a too rapid change from a simplicity which was quite patriarchal to a higher stage of civilisation, which is often of a very artificial character. Broadly speaking, the Russian of the interior, where the truest types of the race are to be found, is simple-minded, of a quick disposition, by nature more prone to good than to evil, with unlimited faith in God, almost as strong a belief in fatalism or chance, and a remarkable trust in the wisdom, power, and rectitude of the Czar. In spite of the Nihilists and their sensational doings, the revolutionists are but a very small minority of the people. The Russian is strongly attached to old customs and established institutions. He is naturally conservative, and to that cause his loyalty to the Czar is largely due.

Living in towns develops the seamy side of the Russian character; it weakens respect for the sovereign, and breeds discontent. These feelings are foreign to the bulk of the people, who are the more typical Russians. They see in the Czar the "father" of his people as well as their master. They submit willingly, even gratefully, to a despotism which would move others to rebellion. They like to be ruled firmly, and the Czar who excites their genuine admiration must be as absolutely autocratic as Nicholas I. when he decided how the railway from Moscow to St. Petersburg should be constructed. During the preliminary survey for this undertaking the Emperor heard that the officers entrusted with the task had received inducements to make it wind about so as to enhance the value of several estates and reduce that of others. It seemed almost hopeless to decide on the most practicable route. The Autocrat of all the Russias determined to cut the Gordian knot in true Imperial style. When the minister laid the maps before him, and explained that certain long detours were necessary owing to natural difficulties in the way, the Czar took up a ruler, and, placing it on the map, drew a straight line from one terminus to the other, 400 miles apart; then in a tone which precluded discussion he said, "You will construct the line *so!*" The line *was* so constructed, and remains a magnificent monument of his power.

The Russian is a sociable being; but he is also improvident, and accepts with comparative indifference the smiles or frowns of fortune. Long-continued work on one task he dislikes. His great desire is to finish the work on which he is engaged as quickly as possible, that he may the sooner enjoy himself in dancing, sleeping, doing nothing, or perhaps even in getting drunk. Thrift and economy have no place in his moral system. The gravest defect in the Russian character is dishonesty. Highway robbery and murder are indeed rarer in Russia than in some countries claiming to be more highly civilised; yet greed for other's property, so often glaringly revealed in official classes, pervades nearly all grades of society. Turning to the bright side of the Russian character, one finds that the peasants of the north commonly

display an enterprising, independent, and self-reliant spirit, which proves that they are by no means the submissive automata they have been frequently held to be.

Sir Donald Mackenzie Wallace, K.C.I.E., relates that he was once waiting at a post-station for the horses to be changed, when a boy appeared, dressed in a sheep-skin wrap, with a fur cap and gigantic double-soled boots. All these articles had been made on a scale adapted rather to future requirements than to present needs. He must have stood in his boots about 3 feet 8 inches, and could not have been more than twelve years of age; but his appearance showed that he had already learned to look on life as a serious business. The boy wore an important air, and his little brows were as anxiously knit as if the cares of an empire weighed upon his young shoulders. He filled the responsible office of driver of the post-car, but found it necessary to leave the putting in of the horses to larger and older specimens of humanity. He watched closely, however, to see that everything was done properly. When all was ready, he climbed up to his seat, and at a signal from the station-keeper shook the reins, artistically flourished the whip, and dashed off at a pace rarely attained

A GROUP OF RUSSIAN WOMEN.

Photo by J. Daziaro] [*Moscow.*
A SERGEANT IN THE RUSSIAN ARMY.

by post-horses. He had the faculty of emitting a peculiar sound —something between a whir and a whistle—that appeared to have a magical effect on his team. The road was rough, and at every jolt the young driver was shot upwards into the air; but he always fell again into his proper position, never for a moment losing either his self-possession or his balance, and at the end of the journey it was found that they had been carried over the rugged way at the rate of fourteen miles within each hour.

A remarkable instance of the energy and enterprise claimed for the Russian working classes of the north was supplied to an English traveller in the country just after he had expressed a doubt as to their industry. He was in the province of Kostroma. One part of it has a special reputation for turning out carpenters and stove-builders. Another part, he was surprised to learn, sends yearly to Siberia—not as convicts, but as free labourers—a large contingent, consisting almost entirely of tailors and workers in felt. A bright-eyed youth of sixteen or seventeen, who was among the apprentices accompanying one of these bands, informed him that he had already made the journey twice and intended to go every winter. "Because you always bring home a pile of money, I suppose?" inquired the traveller. "*Nitchevo!*" gaily replied the young fellow, with an air of self-confidence and pride. ("*Nitchevo,*" it may be remarked, is equivalent to the phrase "Right you are, sir," which would have been used by a British working lad to express emphatic assent.) "Last year," the youth continued, "I brought home three roubles!" "There! Can you now say our people are not industrious?" exclaimed the Russian to whom the Englishman had expressed that opinion a few minutes before. "A Russian peasant goes all the way to Siberia and back for three roubles and his food! Could you get any Englishman, young and strong, to work at that rate?" "Perhaps not," the traveller replied evasively. He could not help thinking, however, that if an English youth were required to go in the depth of winter from Land's End to John o' Groats and back again, performing the double journey in carts and on foot, he would expect, as fair pay for his time and labour, something more than three roubles, or, in our money, seven and sixpence.

A people numbering as many millions as the Russians must of course differ widely in characteristics. In Russia, as in most other countries, wealth has a demoralising tendency. The even temper, kind heart, and loyal disposition, which seem to be his natural characteristics, are apt to disappear as the *moujik* rises in the world. The Russians are tolerant of strangers in their midst, but not imitative. A Russian village in the middle of German villages does not appear inferior in the eyes of a Russian. To him it is as natural that Germans should live in larger houses as that the birds should live in nests. It never occurs to him that he should build on the German model. The other is German; he is Russian—and that is enough.

The Russians first appear in the light of history about the middle of the ninth century. The exceptional energy and vitality of the race will be seen by comparing their present position with their state at that period. Then they were comprised in a few small tribes on the banks of the Elbe, the Danube, and the low country lying south of the Baltic. They were frequently assailed by more powerful neighbouring tribes. In order to escape extermination, they offered the leadership of their clans to three brothers, members of a warlike

A RUSSIAN SCHOOL.

Photo by C. I. Razan.

TARTARS.

Scandinavian family in friendly relations with the Slavs. Rurik and his brothers willingly accepted the posts offered. Under their command the Russians beat back the tribes which invaded their lands to drive off the flocks and herds at that time forming their sole wealth. Gradually they acquired power and overcame the neighbouring peoples. They absorbed within their own society the tribes they defeated, annexed their lands, and constantly carried on the slow but certain process of extension till their empire reached its present size.

Others affirm that the Russians were practically slaves until the emancipation of the serfs. The Russians themselves declare that serfdom was in no sense slavery; that the nation did not in the past, and could not possibly in the future, submit to slavery; in short, that slavery never existed in Russia. It is impossible, however, for any one who considers the subject dispassionately to avoid the conclusion that the serfs were to all intents and purposes domestic slaves—chattels sold and bought in open market within the present century. Sir D. Mackenzie Wallace quotes from *The Moscow Gazette* of 1801: "To Be Sold: three coachmen, well trained and handsome; and two girls, the one eighteen and the other fifteen years of age, both of them good-looking and well acquainted with various kinds of handiwork. In the same house there are for sale two hairdressers: the one, twenty-one years of age, can read, write, play on a musical instrument, and act as huntsman; the other can dress ladies'

and gentlemen's hair. In the same house are sold pianos and organs." This advertisement is undeniably suggestive of slavery as an institution of the country. A little further on in the same paper a first-rate clerk, a carver, and a lackey are offered for sale. The reason assigned by the vendor is superabundance of the articles named. In some instances human beings were classed with cattle: "In this house one can buy a coachman and a Dutch cow about to calve." The style of the advertisements and the frequent recurrence of the same address show plainly that there was at that time a regular class of slave-dealers openly carrying on business in human beings—Russians buying and selling their fellow-countrymen, and in Russia.

The costume worn by men in St. Petersburg, Moscow, and other large cities is like that of London, Paris, and the centre and west of Europe generally. It is not specially characteristic. In the more retired provinces, however, the people still cling to what may be regarded as the national garb. The commonest head-covering is a black or grey fur cap, with a brim drawn down so low on the forehead as frequently to touch the eyebrows. The whole body is covered by a long, loose, shapeless dark blue or brown great-coat from the shoulders to the heels. The favourite outer garment of the peasantry is made of sheep-skin, which is greasy enough to keep out rain or snow, and woolly enough to preserve warmth; while the feet and legs are encased in heavy top-boots that reach to the knees. In some cases the wearer desires more ease than he can enjoy while closely covered from chin to feet. Then, beneath the folds of the great-coat, you may catch sight of the red blouse or the broad red sash and velvet breeches which were common among the people in the country districts before town fashions tabooed the picturesque in favour of ugliness. As a rule, the dark, long outer garment conceals everything else on the person of the ordinary Russian. Men who have attained any grade in society above that of constant labour evince a passion for uniforms. Nearly all who can be classed as gentlemen appear in some specially regulated dress, either military or civilian. Even they, with hardly an exception, wear over all the heavy riding-cloak, without which a gentleman's dress is held to be incomplete. In the hottest days of summer, as well as during the Arctic cold of a Russian winter, rich and poor, old and young, encumber themselves, as far as their means will allow, with large fur cloaks and caps, which they constantly wear.

Photo by J. Daziaro] *[Moscow.*

A RUSSIAN NURSE.

The Russian peasant's food is generally of the simplest kind, and seldom includes flesh. It is not that he dislikes animal food; but such luxuries as beef, mutton, and pork are too expensive for ordinary use. The Russian is hospitable, and takes pride in a reputation for the quantity and quality of the food he occasionally sets before his guests. On a holiday there is always as great a variety of dishes on the table as he can afford. In the house of a thriving peasant will be found not only the universal greasy cabbage soup, and a dish, made from buckwheat, called *kasha*, but also mutton and pork—perhaps even beef. During the meal light beer is supplied in unlimited quantity, and *vodka*, a distilled spirit representing to the Russian every exhilarating drink from champagne to gin, is frequently handed round. When the repast is at an end, all at the table rise together. Turning towards the picture or small statue—the *icon* of the house—on its little triangular shelf or shrine in the corner, they bow gravely,

Photo by J. Daziaro] [*Moscow.*

TWO DANCERS, LITTLE RUSSIA.

crossing themselves repeatedly. Thus do they give thanks to God for the good things enjoyed. The guests then say to their host, "*Spasibo za khleb za sol*" ("Thanks for bread and salt")—the customary acknowledgment of hospitality in Russia. The host responds, "Do not be displeased. Sit down once more for good luck." All comply with this request, as an expression of their friendliness and goodwill. The *vodka* is handed round again, and in all probability the feast will be supplemented by an intemperate carouse. The Russian misses no opportunity to drink deep and drown trouble in the flowing bowl.

The use of tobacco is universal in Russia. Both sexes smoke. No public, and hardly any private, dining- or drawing-room is free from tobacco. Ladies, when travelling, will draw from pocket or satchel a little cigarette-case, and have no scruple in asking the first male stranger they meet to "oblige them with a light." Princess Gagarine, however, denies this; she says, "It is generally thought that in Russia all women smoke. As a matter of fact very few do, and those few are nearly all middle-aged. Their generation thought it was the thing to smoke. In the 'seventies the writings of Tolstoï, Tourguéniev, Dostoievsky, who were then at their best, produced some quite unexpected changes in society."

In spite of the stories of Russian ferocity and inhumanity, repeated and generally believed for more than half a century, no people are more humane than the Northern Slavs, and none are more generously hospitable. A stranger is entertained with pleasure, and all is done to make him feel one of the homely family circle. The beggar, the benighted traveller, the fugitive from the tyranny of a too oppressive master—all are made equally free of what the household has to offer.

The Russians are a religious people. The Orthodox Greek Church is the State Church; but dissenters from its teaching, as well as Roman Catholics, Mohammedans, Buddhists, and others, are tolerated to a certain limited extent. Religion is supposed to be absolutely free. The Czar is the political head of the National Church, and membership of that Church is accordingly almost identical with nationality. Hence the public observance of rites and ceremonies by Russians of all classes. That people may not be prevented from performing their devotions by having to walk too far, there are little chapels open, like shops, at the street corners, often facing one another in the same street. In Moscow these open chapels are more numerous than beer-houses and gin-palaces in London. In addition to the chapels there are *icons*, put up in nearly every wall, over many doors, in the bazaars, the exchange, every public office, and almost every shop. These are beset with worshippers nearly every hour from morning till night. Moscow is an exceptionally pious place, as the Russians there, more purely Slavonic than the inhabitants of St. Petersburg, are more pious than Russians elsewhere.

In Russia marriage does not disqualify a man for the office of priest. It is true that a stringent law of the Greek Church forbids a priest to marry. A man cannot legally take unto himself a wife after he has been admitted to clerical orders, but a married man is as eligible for ordination as an unmarried man.

CAUCASIA.

To-day the Caucasus is still full of races differing in religion, language, aspect, and character; but it will only be possible to mention here the more important tribes.

The *Svans*, or *Svanithians*, inhabit the Upper Inghur Valley in South-western Caucasus, forty miles long by about fifteen in width, shut in on all sides by glacier-crowned ridges. The only access from the outer world is by a narrow, and at times impassable, ravine, or over lofty mountain passes. Nominally subject to Russia, as are all the Caucasians, these people are practically independent, and left to govern themselves as they please. Though only 14,000 in number, they successfully resist in their mountain fastnesses every attempt of the Russians to collect taxes from them. This is the more remarkable when we remember that they are in a state of perpetual feud with one another, village against village, family against family. There is no organisation among them; each man rules over his wife and children, and cares nothing for his neighbour. Doubtless the nature of their country has contributed to form the wild and savage character of this people. Herr Radde, the eminent botanist, who spent several weeks among them, thus sums up the result of his experiences: "Amongst the Svans intelligent faces are seldom found. In their countenances insolence and rudeness are prominent, and hoary-headed obstinacy is often united to the stupidity of savage animal life. Amongst these people individuals are frequently met with who have committed ten or more murders, which their standard of morality not only permits, but in many cases commands."

The appearance of the people does not create a favourable impression on a stranger. Their clothes are tattered and shabby, the Caucasian style being undistinguishable in the collection of rags. Men are seen wearing sheep-skin caps turned inside-out—an arrangement which, while it shades their eyes, adds to the ferocity of their appearance. The women are said to be uniformly ugly, and their costume a mere shapeless bundle of rags.

The men and women, even small boys, are all armed with daggers. Many have pistols attached to their belts, or guns, in sheep-skin covers, slung across the shoulder. The children run about nearly naked. Some of the girls have faces more savage in appearance and expression than those of the boys.

Wives are bought, or if the intending husband is too poor, the bride must be carried off by force. Remains of churches found here and there testify to the effort of Queen Tamara to introduce Christianity in the twelfth century, but her work has not left much mark on the character of the people. They are highly superstitious, and believe that some of their number have the power of foretelling the future.

The *Lesghians* inhabit Daghestan, on the north-eastern side of the Caucasus main ridge, and extend

Photo by Ch. Bergamasco] [*St. Petersburg.*

A RUSSIAN BRIDE OF THE BETTER CLASS.

THIS MAP IS BASED (BY PERMISSION) ON PROFESSOR KEANE'S LANGUAGE MAP OF EUROPE IN "STANFORD'S COMPENDIUM OF GEOGRAPHY."

to the Caspian Sea. Including some minor allied tribes, they number not less than 590,000.

Physically the Lesghians are one of the finest races in Caucasia. As the Caucasians hold the highest rank in the ethnological divisions of mankind, the Lesghians are consequently one of the finest races in the world. Their long and fierce wars with Russia amply prove that they are courageous. At the same time there is a proneness to abuse all the power they possess or may acquire. They gained the greatest distinction they have won in modern times by the heroic resistance they offered to the advance of Russia for over twenty years. Their leader was the warrior-prophet Shamyl (Samuel), who was a Lesghian, and not a Circassian, as has been generally believed.

There is nothing specially striking in the dress of the men. The *chodka*, or close-fitting frock-coat, extending below the knee, and usually confined round the waist with a belt, is almost universally worn. Its grey colour is relieved by trimmings of fur. The general head-covering is a cap of cloth or fur, sometimes shaped like a hemisphere, and sometimes of fantastic height. Socks knitted in tasteful patterns, and often with a gold thread running through them, and leather slippers with pointed toes, are part of the costume of the well-dressed. The women also wear a close-fitting coat, with long baggy trousers, gaudy in colour. A blue shift and low cap like a fez form part of their attire.

The Lesghians are naturally most abstemious. The conditions under which they live would not admit the use of luxuries, even if their inclination tended towards them. Though badly fed and poorly clothed and generally barefooted, these mountaineers are hardy and strong. Sickness and fatigue are almost unknown to them.

Photo by the Photochrome Co [*London.*

RUSSIAN PEASANT IN COSTUME.

Although Christianity is said to have been their religion at one time during the Middle Ages, they are now fanatical Mohammedans. Their women, however, rarely veil the face.

The *Georgians*, who occupy the centre of Transcaucasia, are the principal, and till the arrival of the Russians they were the dominant, race in the country. It has long been generally admitted that, of all the Caucasian peoples, the Georgians, whom the Russians call Grusians, most nearly correspond to the ideal type of physical beauty. They have tall, powerful figures, are clear-skinned, with brown or black hair, and dark or grey eyes. Their physiognomy is strongly marked, owing to the broad, low forehead, prominent nose, and full, oval face. "They are certainly a splendid race to look at, these Georgians, both men and women," says Mr. Bryce, recounting his impressions during a visit to Tiflis, their

A GEORGIAN WOMAN, CAUCASIA.

capital. Every one has heard of the Georgian beauties. Regular, finely chiselled features, clear complexions, large, liquid eyes, and erect carriage, combining natural dignity with voluptuousness, are their general traits. They are numerous and influential in all the harems of the East, and their blood flows in the veins of Turkish, Egyptian, Persian, and Tartar grandees. The Georgian ladies are, however, deficient in vivacity and expression. The men are sufficiently good-looking, but with a shade of effeminacy in their faces, expressive of their moral character. The Georgians are simple and hospitable people; they love ease, and will not weary mind or muscle unnecessarily.

Georgian intelligence is not high. Their brains are generally befuddled with excessive wine-drinking. Few of the humbler classes are able to read and write; many even of the higher are in the same state of ignorance. Picturesquely attired, they lounge away their time with music, dancing, and idling.

The *Circassians* ceased to exist as an independent nation when their country was occupied by the Russians in 1864. Before that time they numbered 300,000 in the valleys and defiles of the Western Caucasus, east of the Black Sea. Now, owing to emigration, they cannot muster more than 123,000.

It has long been an axiom of ethnology that the Circassians are a magnificent race. Poets and writers of romance have made the charms and virtues of Circassian ladies the subject of their art. Mr. Barkley, however, formed a less favourable opinion. He saw nothing to admire in the women except their hands and feet. He acknowledged, however, that the men are magnificent, and are to the rest of the human race what Arab horses are to humbler steeds. "Just as a pretty Circassian girl is rare, so a plain Circassian man is seldom to be met with. No people have more beautifully shaped heads, more perfectly chiselled features, or sharper, more intelligent, and yet bolder expressions. They are quick and active in every movement, and as restless as a weasel (an animal they greatly resemble in character); but the most notable parts about them are their hands and feet. I observed hundreds of them, and never saw one that an English girl of sixteen might not envy for shape and size."

The Circassian is energetic in his movements. He is always in a hurry. He never saunters, but goes so rapidly that he may be known at a distance by his short, sharp step, erect carriage, and general bearing, suggestive of great vitality. Though energetic and active, he hates work. He has no scruple in helping himself to the fruits of other people's labour.

CAUCASIAN SOLDIERS.

Robbery is not regarded as a crime among the Circassians, but as an honourable calling for a free man. The Bulgarians and others among whom they settled soon found it necessary to take strong measures to protect their crops and flocks.

The Circassians are incapable of intellectual exertion. It follows that science, literature, and art were, and still are, unknown to them. The wisdom of their sages preserved from generation to generation in proverbs, maxims, and stories, the legends preserved in verse, and the practical knowledge each man could acquire during his lifetime, constituted all the knowledge the race possessed. The boys and youths were taught to ride, shoot, fence, and hunt, but not to respect truth. Audacious lying was regarded as a useful accomplishment. The sole end of education was to train the young for the perils and hardships of a mountaineer's life.

Turning to marriage customs, we find that the bride was generally bought and carried off by force from her parents. Many of the girls were sold into the harems of Eastern pashas and princes. It is said that the Circassian maidens welcomed this practice as a means of escaping from the life of toil and hardship which would otherwise have been in store for them. Mohammedanism was the religion of the race.

From the Ethnographical Museum at Stockholm.

A FINLANDER.

FINLAND.

THE once prevalent idea that nearly all the European peoples belonged to the various branches —Teutonic, Celtic, Slav, Hellenic, Italic—of the Aryan family has long been exploded. We now know that account must also be taken of several non-Aryan groups, notably the Finns, who form the bulk of the inhabitants of Finland, and were formerly widely diffused over the greater part of Northern and Eastern Europe.

Finland, a grand duchy of the Russian Empire, has a population of 2,000,000 full-blooded Finns, besides nearly 500,000 Russians, Swedes, and Lapps. The Finns are accounted a stalwart people, blond in general and with blue eyes. The Teutons, through the Scandinavians, have influenced them for centuries, and it is to the Scandinavians that they owe their first knowledge of the metals bronze and iron. There is a great deal of Swedish blood in the

people, and many speak the Swedish language. Their own national tongue is, however, being rescued from the obscurity into which it had been forced in the centuries during which the Finns were Swedish subjects.

The Finns are not wanting in intellectual vigour. This is seen from the important contribution they have made to the world's literature in the *Kalevala*, an epic poem, embodying their ancient myths and traditions, preserved in Runes, or ballads, which have been orally handed down from times long prior to the dawn of history. In the first quarter of the nineteenth century Lönnrot undertook the collection of the Runes, sifted the miscellaneous and often fragmentary material, and put together the national heroic poem, which is now classed by some enthusiasts with the works of Homer and the great epics of India and Persia.

The early Finns were chiefly hunters and fishermen. The dog was their most important domestic animal, although they were acquainted in early times with the reindeer, horse, and ox, but not with the pig, sheep, or goat, which were introduced about A.D. 1000. Their agriculture was limited, barley and rye being the only grain crops cultivated. They lived in tents made of hides stretched on poles, and in huts consisting of holes dug in the earth, with only the roof above-ground, many of which are still common sights in Finland to-day. They wore skins, which they stitched together, using as needles small, sharp bones; they also had sledges and snow-shoes.

With regard to religion, though a few belong to the Greek Church, the bulk of the people are Lutherans. Though they are clear-minded and intelligent, among the lower classes Christianity has not entirely driven out old superstitions and belief in sorcery and magic. A curious veneration of the bear is general among them. Ursus takes rank as a kind of divinity. He is lord of all the spirits, and endowed with supernatural power and wisdom. The sorcerer is credited with power to make good or bad weather by spells and incantations, and is half

Photo by the Photochrome Co.] [*London.*

A LAPP CHILD ON REINDEER.

Photo by Valentine & Sons, Ltd. [*Dundee.*

A MOUNTAIN LAPP.

man, half woman. He can take his eye out and eat it, or allow a bullet to be shot through his head and feel none the worse! We are told "his demeanour is that of a maniac; his utterance becomes vehement; he foams at the mouth, and his hair stands up straight," when the spirit possesses him. It is surprising to find such beliefs common among people who are exceptionally intelligent, who have schools throughout the land, a national press, and are industrious, shrewd in trade, polished in manners, and prosperous.

LAPLAND.

THE country of the Lapps, which belongs partly to Russia and partly to Sweden and Norway, lies almost wholly within the Arctic Circle. Though few in number, they are a distinct race, and interesting for two reasons. In the first place, their origin is so ancient as to be hardly traceable; secondly, they still live under primitive conditions which have undergone little change during the last thousand years. At one time they enjoyed a great reputation for witchcraft, and English seamen used to go to Lapland to "buy a wind" from the natives. Some writers derive the name from Lap, or Lapp, an old Swedish word for "enchanter."

The latest estimate of the population puts it at between 28,000 and 30,000; but it is impossible to ascertain the precise number of a people of whom half are wanderers. Statistics show that, of the estimated total, 25,000 live in Lapmark and Finmark, which are provinces in the extreme north of Sweden and Norway respectively. That would leave about 4,000 to inhabit Russian Lapland, including the Kola Peninsula in the Arctic Sea.

It was the custom some years ago to speak of the Lapps as dwarfs. This is not quite the case, although they are certainly the shortest people in Europe. It appears, from a large number of measurements that have been made, that the average height of the men is about 4 feet 11 inches, and of the women 4 feet 7 inches. A striking feature among the Lapps is the shortness of their legs and arms. Small feet are universal. The shape of their faces

Photo by Valentine & Sons, Ltd.] [*Dundee.*

A FAMILY OF LAPPS.

Photo by J. A. Coldevin] [*Mosjöen.*

A LAPP WOMAN.

reveals certain Mongol characteristics, and it is now generally admitted that, originally of Mongol stock, the characters of the yellow race have been largely obliterated by crossing with the Caucasian type. Professor Keane says, "The Lapp still retains the round, low skull, prominent cheek-bones, and somewhat flat features of the Mongol." Yellow and reddish tints are noted in the colour of the skin. No other coloured race contains so many men of very light hue as the Lapps. Many of the women have delicate complexions and rosy cheeks, and Du Chaillu describes the appearance of freshly washed specimens as positively dazzling. The Lapp language is a member of the Finnish branch of the Mongolo-Tartar family.

The different tribes are bound together by hardships which are the common lot. Some are hunters, some fishermen; others, again, herdsmen of deer. All have to struggle equally hard for existence. They are, however, cheery and contented. They endure with indifference and even manage to enjoy hard conditions of life under which more civilised peoples could not possibly exist.

The dress of the Lapps has now almost lost its old Arctic character, and assumed that of the northern Europeans with whom alone they communicate. Coarse woollen stuffs are gradually but certainly taking the place of skins. But in winter both men and women wear reindeer-skin with the hairy side in. The men's head-gear is a huge, four-cornered cap; while that of the women somewhat resembles a helmet on a wooden frame. In summer men and women are clad only in a long shirt of *wadmal* with sleeves reaching to the wrist, and as a rule the old national costume is better preserved by the Mountain Lapps than by those of the seaboard. In summer they wear tight-fitting trousers of reindeer-skin, shoes of leather turned up at the toes, and a woollen shirt. They are nomads, and on their journeys wear a strong belt with a knife in it. This belt is occasionally adorned with bear's teeth after a successful hunting expedition. They carry leather bags on their back for provisions. Where European influence is most strongly felt, the dress becomes more like that of the Norse peasant, the women wearing a woollen under-garment, and over that another reaching to the knees, with red and yellow stripes on its lower border. An ornamental belt, with knife and scissors, girds the waist; and the dress is completed with blue stockings.

The weapons of the Lapps who do not live by fishing are the bow, knife, and bear-spear. The bow, about 6 feet in length, is usually made of birchwood and fir, fastened together with fish-glue, and is further secured and strengthened by being bound all over with birch-bast. Some of the bows are thick, and show none of the elegant work which other semi-wild peoples lavish on their weapons. They use blunt arrows for shooting fur animals

when it is desired not to injure the skin. The bear-spear has a strong blade, and is stoutly made, so as to contend successfully with the strength and ferocity of the game against which it is used.

The dwellings of the Lapps are still most primitive. Those of the Coast Lapps are often mere earth-huts, made of turf with a few sticks in support, or of timbers leaning together covered with turf, without windows, and with not a foot more space than is absolutely necessary. In some of the more permanent settlements on the coast they live in log-huts modelled on those of the Norwegians. The nomad Lapps, who depend for support on the reindeer, pitch their tents wherever pasture can be found. The skins formerly used to cover these tents are now replaced by a coarse woollen stuff, which, being loosely woven, allows a little ventilation, and is very durable, lasting twenty years and more. The cloths, in two pieces laced together, are stretched over a frame of poles, the door being formed by a piece of sail-cloth. In the tent, which often covers only 70 square feet, the inmates, with their dogs, huddle together on the reindeer-skins strewn on the floor, in the middle of which is a fire of juniper-wood under a kettle hung by an iron chain. The furniture is scanty, but always includes one or two skin sacks, to hold small articles for domestic use, besides reindeer-paunches, and reindeer-calf or goose-skins, in which are kept coagulated blood and a preparation like sausage-meat.

The reindeer and the dog are the only animals they use. The former is easy to tame, gives little trouble, and is allowed to pasture at will; but the females do not produce much milk. The Lapps make only a little butter, but a good deal of cheese. The reindeer is the most valuable of their possessions, since it is used for drawing sledges and riding, and also supplies food and clothing.

The Lapps are Christians. They impress strangers by their sincere devotion; but, as in the case of the Finns, their religion has not entirely freed them from belief in magic.

Photo by Sostrene Persen] [*Bergen.*

A NORWEGIAN GIRL IN BRIDAL DRESS.

NORWAY.

THE Norwegians, with the Swedes, Danes, and Icelanders, constitute the Scandinavian or Norse branch of the Teutonic stock, which belongs to the Caucasian type. Though inhabiting the same peninsula

Photo by Photochrome Co. [*London.*

A HARDANGER GIRL.

and under the same sovereign as the Swedes, the Norwegians are in many ways different. The population of Norway was 2,135,500 in 1897. The best authorities no longer hold the view that the whole of the Scandinavian Peninsula once belonged to the Lapps, who were driven north by the Scandinavians.

The Norwegians are not of exceptional height, but are thickly and strongly built. The *bonde*, or farmer, who may be taken as fairly representing the Norse character, is manly, self-possessed, and brave. Beneath his rough exterior he has a kindly heart. Outwardly cold, he is easily moved to anger or affection. He is kind to his family and considerate to his beast. Being industrious and resourceful, he is clever at all kinds of handicrafts. When building his house, he fells his own trees in the forest, and is his own carpenter. As occasion requires, he can turn tanner, harness-maker, blacksmith, shoemaker, or miller. Along the coast the Norwegian can build boats, and is an expert fisherman. In the mountains he hunts the bear, wild reindeer, and brings down the ptarmigan.

Like other nations in Northern Europe, the Norwegians imitate the styles of London and Paris in their dress. But fashions do not change so rapidly as in warmer climates, and a style which once becomes popular may last for generations.

For the men the characteristic dress is a short round jacket, much like that known to us as the "monkey-jacket," buttoned below the neck only. It is ornamented with two rows of metal buttons, which, in the case of well-to-do peasants, are often made of silver. The material of the jacket is thick homespun cloth. They have waistcoats to match, with smaller buttons, and knee-breeches, at one time invariably of leather, but now of homespun cloth. Their legs are covered with coarse woollen stockings, and the shoes are generally ornamented with buckles. The head-dress is usually a round skin cap; but in some parts of the interior they wear tall, cylindrical felt hats, strikingly like those till recently worn by Welsh women.

The full costume of the women is distinctly national and picturesque, though it is now rarely seen except at fancy-dress balls and on similar occasions. It consists of a dark skirt of green or blue, and a bodice of scarlet, edged with ribbons or gold lace, over a muslin shirt, with full sleeves, and much pleated in front. The married women have caps of exquisite white muslin, but the unmarried go bare-headed. Round neck and waist are worn specimens of fine, old filigree silver-work, heirlooms which have often been in the possession of the same family for many generations.

Du Chaillu gives an interesting description of the peculiar dress worn by the people of

Photo by Valentine & Sons, Ltd.] [*Dundee.*

HARDANGER PEASANT WOMEN.

Photo by Gosta Florman] *[Stockholm.*

A SWEDISH GIRL IN BRIDAL DRESS.

Saetersdal, a valley in the south of Norway. They are not typical Norwegians, being the tallest and most powerful people, not only of Norway, but the whole peninsula. Their average height is 5 feet 10 inches, but men who exceed 6 feet 2 inches are perhaps more often met with than in any other part of Scandinavia. Their food and accommodation are of the plainest kind. The men wear pantaloons extending up to the armpits. Above these, and covering only the upper part of the breast, they wear a short vest adorned with silver. The women have the shortest dresses in Norway. Their dark blue-black woollen skirts, trimmed with three or four brightly coloured bands, end just below the knee. This costume shows the well-shaped limbs, of which they are very proud. The bodices are trimmed with bright metal ornaments, frequently of silver. Sometimes they have round their waists handsomely worked belts of burnished copper. These people, however, often sleep on sheep-skins without a particle of clothing over them.

In no country in Europe are the duties of hospitality held more sacred than in Norway. Even beggars are not allowed to go away without an offer of food. It is a curious custom of the Norwegians that a guest shall eat alone. In the room devoted to his use the table is covered with a fine white cloth, and the best forks and spoons are set out. After the meal is served, the mistress of the house, who waits upon the guest, leaves him alone, returning once or twice to urge him to partake heartily of the food. Should the guest, after a day or two, insist on breaking the national rule, he will be allowed to eat at the plain board with the family and farm-hands. He may then decline to use the silver spoon, and ask for a wooden one. The Norwegians take pride in these rude spoons. Each member of the family has his or her own, with the owner's initials carved on the handle. The guest may, like the others, plunge his spoon into the large dish of *grod*, or porridge, made of barley-meal or rye-meal, the Norwegian's daily dish, and help himself to the accompanying sour milk. Potatoes are also a staple of daily food. Fish, which is plentiful along the coast, and butter and cheese are also freely eaten.

In the Norwegians, who are nearly all members of the Established Lutheran Church, the religious sentiment is deep and sincere, without fanaticism or bigotry.

SWEDEN.

THE Swedes, who occupy by far the larger portion of the Scandinavian Peninsula, numbered in 1898 nearly 5,063,000, and are steadily increasing. They are of Teutonic origin.

The Swedes are physically a fine race, and are said to have the highest average height of any European nation. The typical "good old English gentleman" has been described as a fair representative of the Swede in face and figure. The Swedes have not taken much part in the military and commercial activity of the great European Powers during the present century. Their comparative isolation has probably tended to develop the national character and preserve their physical characteristics unchanged through successive generations.

Their dress is in essentials like that which is common throughout Europe between the forty-fifth and the sixty-fifth degrees of latitude. The costume of the women, however, has an individuality of its own. Until recently hat or bonnet was unknown to the ladies of the interior. Even now at a country church on Sunday one may fail to see a single hat or bonnet among the women of the congregation. A black silk handkerchief is the favourite wear for ordinary use. In winter this may be replaced by a knitted three-cornered woollen tippet. Black, indeed, is the hue generally adopted for church dress in the country, and it sets off to advantage the fair hair and skin of the wearer.

The food of the Swedes is simple and wholesome. Soil and climate are unfavourable to the cultivation of wheat, but rye grows well, and rye-bread is the staff of life for the Swedes. It is found everywhere, on the king's table as well as in the peasant's hut. Sour milk, solid and firm as jelly, is second only to the rye-bread in importance as an article of diet. It is placed in the centre of the table in a large wooden dish. The creamy surface is sprinkled with brown sugar and ginger, and the family and guests, if there are any, mark out with their big wooden spoons in a V-shape what each considers a fair proportion. A few words of grace are said, and the meal begins.

An interesting institution has been established among the Swedes from remote antiquity, and is still common. It is called "foster-brothering," and in some respects reminds one of the comradeship of the ancient Greeks. Two men, inspired by ardent mutual esteem, desire to be as brothers to each other. A proposal is made by the elder or the more important socially; and when the other assents, the ceremony is performed. Each pours out a glass of drink. They then stand up; vow that from that hour each

Photo by Valentine & Sons, Ltd. [*Dundee.*

A TELLEMARKEN PEASANT.

From the Anthropological Collection in the Muséum de Paris.
AN ICELAND WOMAN.

will regard the other as himself, promote his interests, protect him, and avenge his injuries; and declare that no difference of fortune shall interrupt their true brotherhood. Clasping the left hands together, they touch glasses, and drink simultaneously. This act is considered as solemnly sealing the compact.

ICELAND.

THE inhabitants of Iceland are Scandinavians, being descended from Norwegians who occupied the island early in the tenth century. They therefore belong to the Teutonic branch of the Caucasian family, of which they are amongst the purest representatives. Their speech also is the most archaic of all living Teutonic tongues, having changed little from that of the early Norse settlers.

It is somewhat difficult to present a correct description of the Icelander. In physical characteristics he does not compare favourably with his fellow-Scandinavians. The face is round or square rather than oval; the forehead often rises high; the malar bones stand out strongly, while the cheeks fall in. Perhaps his most characteristic feature is the eye, which is nearly always hard, cold, and expressionless. The stony stare has caused the women to be described as generally ill-featured. The colour is clear grey or light blue, seldom brown, and never black. The younger people have a fresh, pink-and-white complexion. The hair has seldom the darker shades of brown, but in different persons shows all shades from decided red to pale yellow. The Icelanders have thick, clumsy bodies, apparently too long and heavy for the legs, which, if short, are sturdy, while the feet are large and flat. The tread is heavy and the gait ungainly, although women, when young, are sufficiently light-footed and graceful.

The people are reserved and dignified in their intercourse with each other as well as with strangers, but cannot be described, with some hasty observers, as morose. However distant in appearance, the temperament is really both cheerful and even animated, combined with a frank, unstudied manner, which, however, often betrays an almost excessive self-esteem. Their directness in criticising and ridiculing other people's weaknesses has, in fact, created an impression that they are boorish and ill-natured. They have strength of intellect, joined with penetration and shrewdness. Lovers of liberty, hospitable, truthful, they are exempt from most vices, except the national failing—drink. In their secluded, insular home they have preserved many usages and traditional beliefs, betraying in this respect a conservative spirit comparable to that of the Hindus. The Icelanders have emigrated largely during recent years, and the energy, industry, and intelligence they display in American cities and other places are highly creditable to them.

The men dress in breeches, jackets, and vests of strong cloth, with from four to six rows of bright metal buttons. The fishermen wear overalls, coarse, smooth waistcoats, and large paletots of sheep-skin or leather made waterproof by coating with grease or fish-oil. There is nothing specially remarkable in the women's costume.

The food of the Icelander consists, now as ever, mainly of fish. In summer he fares on cod's head boiled; in winter, on sheep's head soused in fermented vinegar, or sour milk, or in juice of sorrel. Wheaten bread he eats only on high days and holidays; the ordinary bread is of dark rye-flour, which is procured mainly from Copenhagen, and kneaded into broad, thin cakes.

CHAPTER XIX.

GREECE AND ISLES, TURKEY, BULGARIA, RUMANIA, SERVIA, MONTENEGRO, BOSNIA-HERZEGOVINA, AUSTRIA-HUNGARY, THE GYPSIES.

GREECE AND ISLES.

GREECE forms the end of one of the peninsulas projecting from the south of Europe into the Mediterranean. It is naturally divided into three parts,—the mainland portion, bounded on the north by Turkey; the Peloponnesus, or Morea, connected with the mainland by the narrow isthmus of Corinth; and the islands which mainly lie east and south-east of the peninsula, with the Ionian Islands on the west. In 1896 the population was 2,433,806, distributed over an area of 25,000 square miles.

The modern Greeks have been the subject of much dispute among ethnologists. It is generally admitted, however, that the coast and island Greeks of Asia Minor have kept their blood comparatively pure. By some writers it has been maintained that the Greeks of the present day are Slavs speaking a corrupt form of Greek. Slavonic settlers advanced into the Peloponnesus from time to time, and have left their influence in dress and customs. They were, however, swamped by the inhabitants, and it is much more probable that the Greeks hellenised the Slavs than that the Slavs slavonised the Greeks. Another race influence which has been exaggerated is the Turkish. In the days of their supremacy the Moslems filled their harems with Grecian beauties, but in this case also Greece may be said to have influenced Turkey rather than Turkey Greece. After the War of Independence many of the Phanariot* Greeks of Constantinople, who were remarkably pure specimens of their race, returned to Greece. The classic type may still be seen in many parts of the country, such as Patras, and especially in the islands.

In appearance the average Greek is of medium height, spare, and well proportioned, with oval face, long straight

Photo by A. Rhomaïdes] [*Athens.*

A GREEK GIRL IN NATIONAL COSTUME.

* The Phanariot Greeks were so called from *Phanar*, the suburb of Constantinople chiefly inhabited by them.

Photo by A. Rhomaïdes] [*Athens.*

A GREEK GIRL.

nose, white regular teeth, eyes full of animation, short upper lip, and small hands and feet. He is clever and energetic, and of a cheerful temperament, but has an unenviable reputation in matters of business, and his name is often regarded as synonymous with "cunning rogue." His faults are in no small measure due to a long period of subjection to the Turks. The Greeks take a passionate delight in politics, and are intensely proud of their nationality, a trait which has helped to preserve their racial purity. They are hospitable, temperate, and thrifty. The moral tone, however, is low; and although many of the urban populations are well educated, illiteracy still largely prevails in the rural districts. In 1896 about 30 per cent. of the recruits could neither read nor write, and 15 per cent. could read only.

The spoken language of Greece differs considerably from the classical type, and Slavonic influence has made itself felt in the introduction of new words and forms. In writing, however, scholars and literary men do their best to follow classical models. A well-written newspaper article is quite intelligible to an English reader who has not forgotten his school or college teaching. It is naturally in the more distant villages that the manners and customs specially characteristic of the Greeks are to be found. The national dress, which has been adopted from the Albanian, consists of a short white kilt. Round the waist is worn a wide leathern belt, with a pouch containing pipe, tobacco, flint and steel, and a long knife. The poorer countrymen wear white woollen leggings, descending like gaiters over the shoes. Over the shirt, which has loose hanging sleeves, is worn a short jacket, and a red cap with long silk tassel completes the costume. Some simply knot a handkerchief round the hair. The dress varies in small details in different localities. The costume of the peasant women is also of the Albanian type. They wear a short white jacket, with wide sleeves, plain or embroidered with silk, over which is a long sleeveless coat, reaching to the knee, of white wool, trimmed with red, blue, or black cloth, and embroidered with a similar colour at the corners. The skirt is also white, and has extra embroidery of wool or silk for feast days. A yellow handkerchief is knotted round the face on working days; but veils of silk and muslin, with a string of coins across the forehead, are worn on full-dress occasions.

The social life of the Greek peasants abounds in symbolism and ceremony. The newly born infant is washed with an infusion of myrtle leaves in lukewarm wine, and then generally covered with a layer of salt. In the island of Rhodes an elaborate ceremonial is practised. On the eighth day after the birth the child receives a final aromatic bath of the wine and myrtle infusion, and is then placed by the midwife in a cradle surrounded by lighted tapers. Another child, who must be the eldest of a family, goes up to the babe, touches its lips with honey, and says, "Be thou as sweet as this honey." In Cyprus, when an infant's first tooth appears, the friends of the family assemble. Songs are sung to celebrate the event, and the child is

bathed in water and boiled wheat. Thirty-two of the boiled grains are then strung upon a thread and stitched to its cap or bonnet, to promote the safe cutting of the other teeth. In Athens, among the poorer classes, it is customary to cover the new-born babe with a dress made from one of the father's old shirts. Under the pillow, if the child be a boy, are placed a black-handled knife, a gold coin, and a gospel. In the case of a girl ornaments and jewels are placed instead of a knife. These articles are significant of the gifts it is hoped life will bring—courage, wealth, and piety.

There are numerous observances in connection with marriage. In one district after the feast the newly wedded pair stand on a wooden press or on the sofa, while the rest of the company surround them, singing or making speeches in their honour. Rice and cotton-seed are thrown after them as they leave the bride's house to go to the bridegroom's cottage. His mother, standing at the door to receive them, holds a glass of honey and water in her hand. From this the bride drinks, in order that her words may thenceforth be as sweet as honey. The lintel of the door is smeared with the remainder of the liquid, that strife may never enter that dwelling.

There are several interesting burial customs. For example, in the funeral procession several bearers walk in front, carrying the coffin with open lid, and with the corpse exposed, propped up on a pillow, and dressed as if for a festival. Boys carrying the cross and banners of the Church follow. Then come the priests in their bright robes, and one or two professional mourners in plain clothes, who sing a sort of low, wailing lamentation as they pass along. Until a few years ago high dignitaries of the Church were borne to the grave sitting erect on the episcopal chair, and dressed in the full canonicals of their office. This would seem to indicate the high antiquity of the custom of burying the dead uncovered. At the grave a pillow filled with earth is put under the head of the corpse, and the lid of the coffin, which is made of the lightest material, is put on, when the body is lowered into the grave. In Cyprus the pillow is not stuffed with earth, but with flowers and leaves of the lemon-tree; and a dish of flour or grain is interred with the deceased, as a provision for the last, long journey. When the earth is filled in, the wooden bars on which the coffin is carried by the four or six bearers are stuck upright in the ground, and a candle is left burning on the grave. After a death the house is left unswept for three days, and it is important that the broom which is then used should be burned immediately. In Northern Greece the women of the family in which death has occurred dress in white for mourning, and keep the head uncovered, with the

Photo by A. Rhomaïdes] [*Athens.*

A GREEK SOLDIER.

A TURK.

hair hanging down. The doors of the house where the body lies are left open, and the neighbours come in and out as they please.

Our space will permit of but a very few words on the Albanians, who are remotely akin to the Greeks, being a remnant of the Thraco-Illyrian group. To the Turks they are known as Arnauts, a corruption of Arvanites, which is the Byzantine form of Albani; but the national name is *Skipetar*, i.e. "Highlanders." There are two main divisions, the northern GHEGS, and the southern TOSKS, the former the ruder and finer race, the latter more cultured, and more akin to the Greeks in speech and religion. Most of the Ghegs are Mohammedans, the rest Catholics of the Latin rite, and these come more in contact with the Slavs than with the Greeks. As a race the Albanians are handsome, with high forehead and well-chiselled features. Their women and children also have a reputation for remarkable beauty. They are active and hardy, as might be expected of a mountaineering people, and they supply valuable recruits to the Turkish army. As enemies they are cruel, but as friends they are true and hospitable. They are independent and intractable, but have never attempted to develop an organised state, being still constituted in small tribes or clans without national cohesion.

Their dress varies according to local divisions; but the chief features of the national costume are a gold-embroidered vest, bright sash, leathern pouch, containing pistol and yataghan, and the national kilt. The Albanian women wear a good deal of gold embroidery on their dress. They are for the most part veiled. The Mirdites, a sub-division of the Ghegs, are Roman Catholics, but despised by the rest of the clansmen as traders and hucksters. Their position under the Turkish Government has been compared to that of the Jews in mediæval Europe.

TURKEY.

THE European Turks are chiefly confined to Constantinople and the neighbouring maritime districts, where they number probably not more than 2,000,000. They belong to the Osmanli

Photo by P. Sebah. [*Constantinople.*

A TURKISH PEDLAR.

Photo by Mr. W. Rau] *[Philadelphia.*

A RUMANIAN BRIDE.

of costume. A frock-coat buttoned up to the throat, trousers, and fez form their usual attire, the fez alone representing an Oriental element. The peasant still wears his prodigious turban, and seldom exchanges it for the fez. As a rule, he is worse clothed than the Christian peasant.

As among the Greeks, many curious customs are observed on the birth of a child. They are mostly directed to averting the ill effects of the *hazar*—the evil eye. Charms, amulets, prayers, and incantations are all employed for this purpose. If cloves, thrown into a brasier, should burst, the evil eye has evidently exerted its influence; and to avert the threatened danger some hair from the head of the mother and child must be cut and burned, and the mother and child fumigated with the smoke thus produced. The slightest indisposition in children is put down to the evil eye.

Early marriages are the rule among the Turks. Men marry in their eighteenth year, and girls at twelve or thirteen. Polygamy is almost unknown among those of the poorer class, branch of the widespread Turki people, who undoubtedly formed originally one of the main divisions of the Mongolo-Tartar family. But by frequent admixture with Caucasian races the European Turks have lost nearly all their Mongolic characteristics, and may be classed in the sub-division of the Caucasian type which is distinguished by dark complexion and dark hair. They are of full build, with stately carriage and grave and dignified manner. The peasants especially are well built, strong, and possess great capacity for endurance.

In temperament the Turkish peasant is quiet, submissive, and generally ignorant and improvident. His mode of life is simple, and he is sober in his habits, his coffee and chibouque being almost his only enjoyments. His house, though clean, is badly built and comfortless. The peasant women, some of whom have regular European features, do nearly all the household and much of the farm work.

The Turks of the upper class have almost entirely adopted the ordinary European style

Photo by Mr. W. Rau] *[Philadelphia.*

A RUMANIAN DAIRY-MAID.

and they seldom seek divorce. An old maid is absolutely unknown among the Mohammedans in Turkey. The preliminary negotiations for marriage are undertaken for the young people by their parents. The dowry is given by the bridegroom, the bride being expected merely to furnish her outfit. The husband has no right over his wife's property. The Turk has only to say, "Cover thy face; thy *nekyah* [marriage contract] is in thy hands," when she ceases to be his wife and must leave his house instantly. Her dowry still remains to her, and this is a safeguard against hasty divorce. The marriage contract is religious as well as civil, and is made verbally. When concluded, the bride and bridegroom are not allowed to see each other till after the *duhun*, or celebration of the wedding feast, which may extend over a few weeks or even months. No messages or communications of any kind are allowed to pass between the wedded pair. When at length the *duhun* is ended, they meet possibly for the first time.

Photo by P. Sebah] [*Constantinople.*

A MONTENEGRIN.

The Moslem regards the approach of death with stoical indifference. *Kismet* (destiny) and *edjel* (which means the time of death) are decreed unchangeably by Allah. The dying man appears perfectly resigned to his fate, which no power can alter. The Turks do not keep their dead long unburied. The eyelids of the corpse are pressed down and the chin bandaged. The body is then undressed and laid on a bed called the "couch of comfort," with the hands stretched by the side and the feet tied together. A veil is then laid over the body; and if it be that of a man, it is carried on a stretcher into the court-yard to be washed. This is a religious ceremony, and is performed by an Imam and two subordinates. The lower part of the body is kept covered, and it must be handled with great care and gentleness, otherwise those engaged may draw upon themselves the curse of the dead.

BULGARIA.

THE Bulgarians are found not only in Bulgaria proper, lying between the Danube and the Balkan Mountains, but also in Eastern Rumelia, south of the Balkans. Since 1885 the two provinces have been united, and Eastern Rumelia is now known as South Bulgaria. The total population is 3,376,467.

Although they speak a Slavonic tongue and are now ranked among the Slavonic peoples,

Photo by Hon. Mrs. Kennedy]

NATIONAL DANCE OF MONTENEGRO AT THE PRESENT DAY: DANCING THE "HORA."

the Bulgarians are, like the Turks and the Magyars, of Mongolo-Tartar origin, being descended from the Finno-Ugrian branch of that division. Even the Slavonic dialect, adopted with Christianity in the ninth century, still shows traces of this connection.

The Bulgarians of the present day are on the whole of smaller stature than their neighbours the Servians. They are, however, powerfully built, and carry the head erect. Both men and women are broad-shouldered, wide-chested, and large-limbed. They are dark-skinned, black-haired, and black-eyed. The complexion is muddy, and the features are generally coarse and ill-formed, the Tartar element thus still showing itself in the physiognomy.

Their long subjection to Turkish rule has rendered them less aggressive than they were in their heroic age. Indeed, the Bulgarian of the present day is remarkable chiefly for stolidity. He is quiet, but determined. The peasants are fairly prosperous, and are a peace-loving and hard-working folk. They have no great liking for strangers, towards whom they are reserved and undemonstrative.

The prevailing styles in dress are European rather than Oriental, and there is little to remind one that this was till a comparatively few years ago a Turkish country. The peasants dress in sheep-skins, with their legs swathed round with woollen cloth, tied on with strings at the ankles and calves. The women wear a kind of embroidered jacket of many colours, hanging loosely down to the knees. Underneath is an embroidered flannel petticoat, falling almost to the sandalled feet. The head is covered with a turban, bound in folds round the hair. The turban is generally white, and to it are attached two long tails, which stream down the back. Among the younger women the hair is frequently decked with strings of coins.

The following account has been given of the best class of houses in which Bulgarians live. Every house is one-storeyed. Inside the wall enclosing the house and grounds are wooden sheds and stables, with plots of open ground, half waste, half kitchen-garden. Pigs, fowls, and ducks strut about round the cottages, where they seem as much at home as the human occupants. The kitchen is also the living-room, and behind it is a sleeping-room, with a bedstead for the head of the family. The sons and daughters sleep on mats stretched upon the floor, which is of hardened mud; while the furniture consists of wooden tables, benches, and chests, with crockery and household utensils of the commonest kind. There is, however, a good deal of rough comfort. Everything is kept in good order; and the cookery, if plain, is at all events clean and palatable.

On market days the peasants troop into town from the country, with their long heavily laden waggons, formed of a pole with planks on each side, and drawn by oxen or buffaloes. Men and women tramp along together, the men in front, the women behind. They seldom speak to each other. The women carry the household burdens, while the men walk unloaded, as did their Eastern forefathers before them. Smoking is not common among the men; and although on festivals they indulge freely in wine, drunkenness is not often seen. The

Bulgarians are as a rule sober and quiet. Street quarrels, rows, shouts and cries of any kind, are of rare occurrence; even children in the street play in silence.

The country is governed by a prince, elected by the National Assembly, with a popular legislature. It acknowledges the suzerainty of the Porte; but this is little more than nominal. The bulk of the population belongs to the Orthodox Greek Church; but there are large numbers of Mohammedans, Jews, Roman Catholics, and Protestants.

RUMANIA.

To the ethnologist the Rumanians are perhaps the most interesting of the Balkan peoples. The kingdom of Rumania, comprising the united provinces of Moldavia and Wallachia, was recognised as an independent principality in 1878, and was promoted to the dignity of a kingdom in 1881. The population is estimated at over 5,800,000, but it must be remembered that this does not include more than half of the Rumanian people; quite as many of the race are to be found in adjoining territories.

Physically the Rumanians are characterised by dark skin, black hair, and black eyes. It may or may not be the case that they have been influenced in this respect by an infusion of gypsy blood. Gypsies are to be found in great numbers in Rumania. The Rumanians are well built and muscular, and are altogether a fine race.

In the cities French manners prevail, and the moral tone is decidedly lax. The people are mostly agriculturists, and in the country they are primitive, lazy, and inclined to be suspicious of strangers, though hospitable. The artistic sense is well developed, and some of the designs of their textile fabrics and household utensils seem to date from Roman times.

The men generally wear a long blouse of coarse, white linen, drawn in at the waist by a number of cords passed round the body or a wide belt. The trousers are made of the same material as the blouse. Some wear boots, but sandals are most usually worn, the cords used to keep them on their feet being wound some distance up the leg. Hats of common felt or cheap cloth are commonly worn, but a high cylindrical hat of sheep-skin is the national head-dress. In winter the coarse linen blouse is replaced by a garment of sheep-skin; and when

Photo by F. Topiq] [*Sarajevo.*

BOSNIAN FALCONERS.

Photo by F. Topiq] *[Sarajevo.*

A BOSNIAN BELLE.

wrapped in this, the Rumanian is impervious to snow or frost. The women usually wear a kerchief folded over the head and fastened under the chin. The upper part of the body is clothed in a loose-fitting jacket or bodice, sometimes white, but often of some showy material. The lower limbs are covered with a skirt, which is generally of a darker material than the jacket, though sometimes bright and showy in colour. This is the every-day dress of the Rumanian peasant. The Sunday and holiday dress is naturally more elaborate in colour.

The Rumanian peasant is frugal in his diet, which consists principally of milk, eggs, maize, porridge, and pig's flesh. Drunkenness is common, however.

The dwellings in some of the rural districts are still of a rude type, consisting in great measure of pits dug in the earth and then covered with more or less art. A large hole is dug deep in the ground. Often it is lined with clay. From the surface of the ground, or from a wall raised a foot or two above the soil round the edge of the pit, a roof is formed of branches and twigs. In the centre of this a hole is left for the smoke. Sometimes a simple doorway at one end gives entrance, and the occupants descend to the floor either by steps or on an inclined plane, while at the end opposite the door a window is often inserted. There are two rooms, in which the entire family live; and as animals share the accommodation, dirt and disease are widespread. Marsh fever is especially prevalent. Yet there are some who maintain that these dwellings are not unhealthy. They were originally constructed in this way in order to escape the notice of the marauding bands which from time to time overran the Danubian territories. They were formerly surrounded by trees, which have been cut down for firewood. The spirit of conservatism causes many peasants, otherwise well to do, to prefer these underground dwellings to the modern cottages found in the villages of the higher lands.

The Rumanian women, like the women in several other Continental countries, do most of the work that is done in the fields, and are said to be more industrious than the men. They are even called on to do the work of navvies, and toil with the men in making roads, digging out railway-cuttings, and in heavy labour generally. Men may be seen working in the fields with square-bladed spades, while the women use an implement with a heart-shaped blade and a handle as long as a broomstick.

Of the amusements of the Rumanians, the most striking is the *hora,* or national dance.

Photo by F. Topiq] [*Sarajevo.*

A NATIVE OF BOSNIA.

Photo by F. Topiq] *[Sarajevo.*

A BOSNIAN SOLDIER.

The following description has been given by an eye-witness. After the dancers had gone one or two paces in pairs, moving in a circle, the men separated from the women. The latter then moved singly round the men, as if they were seeking some object dear to them. The men then drew together, and moved their feet like marching soldiers; next, using their long sticks, they made irregular springs and uttered loud cries, as though engaged in battle. The women wandered about like shadows. At last the men with joyful gestures rushed towards them, as though they had found them after great danger, led them back into the circle, and danced with joy and animation.

This dance is said to be illustrative of the conquered condition of the people. M. de Richard, whose interesting account appeared in 1895, describes it as a complete poem. "Who knows," he continues, "of what long-forgotten incursion of the barbarians it is preserved as a reminiscence?"

SERVIA.

As in the case of the Rumanians, the Servians are by no means to be found only in the country to which they give their name. There are Servians in Austria-Hungary, for instance, and in Herzegovina. Servia, which is separated from Hungary by the Danube and Save, has an area of 19,050 square miles, and the population was estimated at 2,314,153 in 1895.

The Servians are physically a stalwart race. They are hospitable, energetic, and brave. Though proud, quick-tempered, and apt to fight on comparatively slight occasion, they are fond of social intercourse, and cling to old customs and old beliefs.

Their dwellings are of the poorest kind, consisting merely of mud-huts, which are usually small, low, and without anything in the way of ornament. The Servian farmer could afford a more pretentious house if he chose. Centuries of oppression under Turkish rule drove the people to conceal whatever wealth they possessed; and this habit, now become a second nature, accounts for the lack of ostentation in the Servian manner of living.

The Servians are thoroughly democratic in their institutions; each family owns the ground it tills, so that in the country day-labourers are scarce. Few will consent to become household servants, and cooks and men-servants come mostly from Croatia or Hungary. When a farmer is unable, with the help of his family, to gather in all the produce of his land, he applies to his neighbours, who will readily come to his assistance, but would be insulted by the offer of money. They act on the principle of service for service, and expect in a

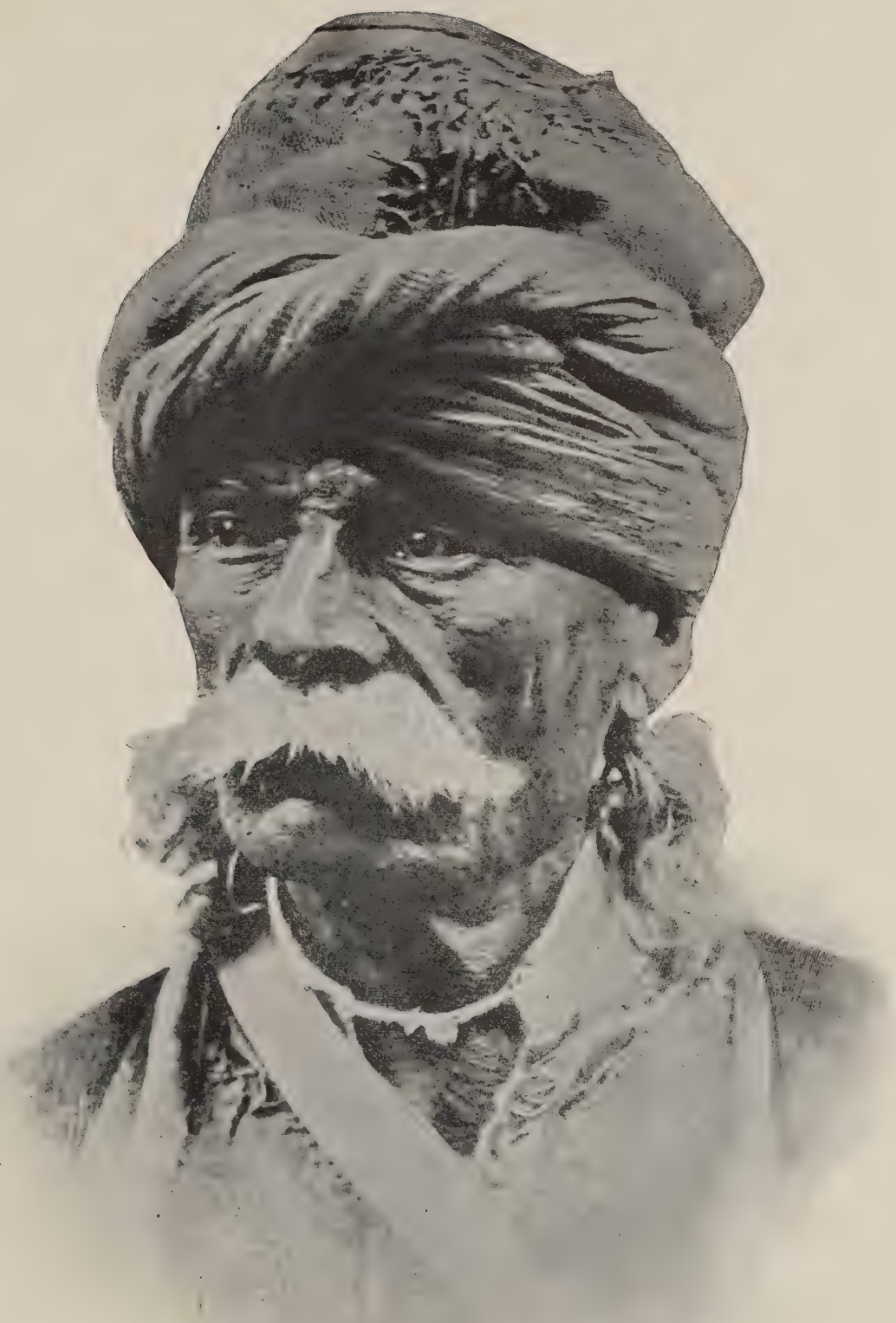


Photo by F. Topiq] [*Sarajevo.*

A NATIVE OF BOSNIA.

similar emergency to receive help in their turn. All Servians are proud, and are equal under the King. There is no aristocracy, and the middle class, merchants, shopkeepers, and others, are few. The Servian who works in the field does not recognise a superior in the better-dressed and better-educated official.

There is no pauperism in the country. The old and sick are maintained by their neighbours in the rural districts, and in the towns by the commune or the workmen's associations.

Education is compulsory and free, and is making rapid strides. There are schools in every village. Not only do children of all classes receive free education, but very poor children obtain a small allowance from the Government to support them during the time they must study in the secondary and higher schools. When they can do so, poor students eke out this allowance by doing work of some kind in the houses of their richer fellow-students. In this way low birth and poverty are no barrier to the attainment of the highest administrative and official positions.

Photo by Levy Bros.] [*Paris.*

A BOHEMIAN WOMAN.

The Servians are an eminently pious race. The fasts of the Church are rigidly observed, and the peasant never fails in the morning to invoke a blessing on the coming day. Every family in Servia has its patron saint. The care of this patron saint is committed to the sons, and not to the daughters, who concern themselves with the saints allotted to their future husbands. The feast of the patron saint is an ancient custom, going back to the times when the patriarchal family lived together under the same roof. It is practised everywhere even at the present day, the busy towns not excepted, and it lasts several days. The house is decorated with branches and flowers, and the nearest relations meet at a banquet presided over by the head of the family. A loaf made of the finest wheaten flour is set in the centre of the table. A cross is hollowed out in the middle of the loaf, and in the centre is fixed a candlestick with three branches, all of which are lighted in honour of the Trinity. A prayer is said, in which the blessing of God is invoked upon the

whole family. Dessert follows with toasts and songs, and the party give themselves up to merry-making.

MONTENEGRO.

THE little Balkan state which is known by this name—literally the "Black Mountain"—occupies an area of not more than 3,630 square miles, with a population of about 230,000. Beyond the low and narrow coastal fringe washed by the Adriatic, the country rapidly becomes a maze of peaks, crags, ravines, and gorges. The peaks range in height from 6,500 to 8,000 feet. The mountains are in places heavily timbered, and also afford good pasturage for sheep, goats, and cattle.

The Montenegrins have been called the flower of the Slav race. They are tall, well formed, and handsome. The women, however, who have to do nearly all the hard work in the home and on the farms, while the men hunt, fight, or idle, soon contract a worn and aged appearance, and lose their good looks early in life. The Montenegrins are brave and warlike, simple in their manners, and honourably celebrated for their honesty and their chastity. The honour of women is sacred and safe among them. They are polite and hospitable, and may be regarded as one of the most picturesque peoples of the present day.

Photo by J. Tauber] [*Taus.*

CHEKHS.

The people live in little villages consisting of small stone houses. In all Montenegro there is not a single group of dwellings which can be correctly designated a town, except Cettinje, the capital.

The principal business of the Montenegrins for many generations apparently has been to fight the Turk. At the present day the chief occupation of the people is agriculture. They cannot be said to display any keenness in adopting new methods. Farming is conducted by them on very much the same principles which their remote ancestors probably considered satisfactory. It cannot be denied that the Montenegrin regards the arts of peace as rather derogatory, and a very poor substitute for the livelier pursuit of war. This is a not uncommon trait in half-civilised mountaineers all the world over. One has only to remember the Albanians and the Afridis, for example—not to mention Scotch Highlanders.

The Prince of Montenegro, although absolute in theory, is far from being an arbitrary or irresponsible governor. In making new and administering the ancient laws of his little state, he is assisted by a council and ministry of six members. The patriarchal form of government really prevails in the State as well as in the separate families. The Prince decides all matters in dispute, and the tree of justice under which he sits and dispenses law and equity to all comers free of cost is a well-known institution. A few years ago an English member of Parliament found himself in the course of his travels at Cettinje, and was much impressed by the simplicity and efficiency of this patriarchal mode of legal procedure. The real statute-book is national custom.

The Montenegrins are making rapid strides in the direction of a higher civilisation.

Photo by A. Otto] [Altenburg.
A WEND (FRONT AND BACK VIEW).

Education is becoming more general, and new roads have been constructed. Every male person above the age of seventeen has to serve in the army, which can muster about 35,000 men. Not more than 150 are on permanent service. These form the bodyguard of the Prince. It is not necessary to maintain soldiers or police constantly on duty in Montenegro, where crime is almost unknown.

The Montenegrins have the poetical faculty, but that they are not necessarily a literary people may be inferred from the fact that the first bookshop in this ancient country was opened as recently as 1879. They have always had more to do with the sword than with the pen. "Every man, dressed in the picturesque costume of his tribe, carries his pistol and yataghan in his girdle," says one who has lived among them. When war breaks out, the schoolboy and the veteran will be found equally eager for the fray.

WEND WOMAN IN FULL DRESS.

It has been said that courage and energy, with other kindred virtues, may be seen in their highest perfection among the Montenegrins. When a girl is born, the mother says, "I do not wish thee beauty, but courage. Heroism alone gains the love of men." Two incidents of the war of 1879 illustrate the devoted heroism of which Montenegrin women are capable, and the desperate steps they will take to avoid contamination by submitting to a foe. A Turk named Mehmed Pasha carried away a Montenegrin girl, the beautiful Yoka. They were in the mountains. The girl implored her captor to desist from his endearments, which were doubly disgraceful as they were in the presence of the Turkish soldiers. The road they had to traverse was only a narrow ledge of rock above a precipice. Overcome by emotion, she sank to the ground. Mehmed seized her in his arms. She embraced and clung to him. Suddenly she turned and drew him to the edge of the rock. Clinging to him with all her force, she dragged him with her over the precipice into the deep abyss, where their bodies were subsequently found. The other incident occurred in a frontier village. The men had left the village to join the main body of their forces. Soon after their departure the Turks entered the place. The women took refuge in an old tower, where they defended themselves like Amazons. The only weapons they had were old guns, and successful resistance was hopeless. The women and children heaped the powder-barrels together. When eventually some fifty Turks dashed into the tower, a torch was applied to the powder,

Photo by J. G. Kranzkelder] [Taus.
CHEKHS.

there was a terrible explosion, and the victorious Turks as well as the heroic women were buried in the ruins.

BOSNIA-HERZEGOVINA.

THE inhabitants of these two Turkish provinces, which are now administered by Austria, have many characteristics in common. They are of the same race—the Servian branch of the Slavs—and speak the same language.

BOSNIA.

The prevalent physical type of the Bosnians is suggestive of pride, activity, and endurance. Of moderate height, with oval face and aquiline nose, deep-set bright eyes under bushy brows, black hair, and black moustache, they look at once dignified and handsome. They are warlike, independent, and jealous of their liberty, and enjoy the reputation of being straightforward, trustworthy, and sincere, as well as truly Oriental in their hospitality. From the moment you have shared a meal with your host he is your friend. Friendship is as sacred as hospitality. Compacts of friendship are often made in church before a priest, or in the presence of others. The pair then exchange their weapons and give each other the kiss of peace. There is a legend that two of these adopted brothers fell in love with the same woman, and rather than quarrel with each other, killed her.

Costume differs according to locality. A large white turban, brown vest braided with black, wide-flowing trousers of a deep red colour, and gaiters form the dress of a well-turned-out man. An almost indispensable feature is the leather girdle or silken sash, in which, among other articles, he carries a knife, tobacco, and a long cherry-wood pipe.

The food of the Bosnian peasant consists principally of flour made from maize and a kind of black wheat, mixed with milk. They distil from the fruit of the plum-trees which are to be found growing round the houses of even the poorest a kind of spirit, which is their chief solace in life.

The shops in Brod, an ancient Bosnian town, are typical of those seen in nearly all the Balkan countries. At night they are closed with two large shutters placed horizontally. When a shop is opened, the upper shutter is drawn in, and forms the ceiling. The lower falls out-

Photo by J. Tauber] [*Taus.*

GERMANS OF SOUTH AUSTRIA.

Photo by Calderon es Turba] [*Budapest.*

HUNGARIAN PEASANTS.

is yet only his betrothed. Preparations for the formal marriage extend over a week. The bride's parents usually appear violently opposed to the match at first, but end by consenting, as their daughter would be disgraced if she returned home unmarried. Another method is called "at sight." The bridegroom is allowed to see the girl face to face at least once before making up his mind. If he decides to have her for his wife, he sends her a ring, on which his name is engraved. This amounts to a contract to marry. Festivities are kept up for a week before the bride is taken to her husband's home. The third form is merely a business transaction, and obtains only among the rich. The marriage is arranged by the parents without the bride and bridegroom ever having seen each other. When a death takes place, the members of the family meet together. The body is washed; the nose, mouth, and ears are stuffed with wadding to prevent evil spirits from entering. The corpse is then buried, wrapped in a white shroud, and not enclosed in a coffin.

ward, and becomes the counter. On this the proprietor takes his seat among his goods, and waits for his customers.

In the towns the houses are square and roofed with wood. When not used as a shop, the ground-floor often serves as a stable. The house is divided into two parts, each with a separate entrance. One part is occupied by the women, the other by the men. The peasants live in mud-huts, which are covered with thatch or lime-tree bark, and consist mostly of one apartment, which swarms with pigs, goats, fowls, and children. There is no chimney, and the smoke gets out as best it can.

There are three forms of marriage. The first is by capture. When he has carried off his beloved, the captor places her in the women's department of his house; but she

Photo by J. Tauber] [*Taus.*

A SOUTH AUSTRIAN PEASANT.

Photo by R. Lechner] [*Vienna.*

A TYROLESE GIRL.

Till recently most of the Bosnians were Mussulmans; now (1901) the majority (673,000) are Orthodox Greeks, 548,000 Moslem, and nearly all the rest (334,000) Roman Catholics. The Bosnian Mohammedans do not practise polygamy, and have remained faithful to many of the Christian customs which prevailed in the days before they changed their creed for that of their Turkish conquerors. Should a child fall ill in a Mussulman family, the father hastens to the nearest monastery to order masses. When he is ill himself, he goes to the Greek monks to have the Bible read over his head. "At nightfall," says Victor Tissot in "Unknown Hungary," where he speaks of Bosnian customs, "one may often see a young bey secretly conducting a pope to pray over the tomb of his father."

Herzegovina.

Herzegovina is a rocky, limestone region, and of a far more rugged nature than the sister province of Bosnia. The Herzegovinans are tall and broad-shouldered, and generally of darker complexion and of greater personal bravery than the Bosnians. In form and character they approach more nearly to the Montenegrin type. In the Yablanitza district especially the men are of powerful build, independent, and defiant. Their features resemble those of the Italians more than the Greeks. The women are taller than their Bosnian sisters, and they are generally believed to be more handsome and prepossessing.

By permission of Dr. Amel.

A HUNGARIAN WOMAN FROM SZIROK.

The dress of the Herzegovinans resembles the Montenegrin rather than the Bosnian style.

In Bosnia the walls of the houses and the dividing-walls between fields and gardens are made of wood. In Herzegovina the buildings contain hardly any wood. The houses in Yablanitza are to a great extent built of black-and-white scorified lava, and are roofed with slabs of slate.

The social customs of the Herzegovinans are similar in most respects to those of the Bosnians. The more truculent characteristics of the former are no doubt largely due to the sterner nature of their country.

As in Bosnia, the Moslem has ceased to be the dominant faith. In the Yablanitza district the

women have not adopted the Mohammedan custom of veiling the face, although it is strictly observed in other parts of the country.

AUSTRIA-HUNGARY.

THE dual monarchy has for the ethnologist no meaning whatever. It is merely a political expression. The population, returned in 1896 at 41,058,000 (excluding the people of Bosnia-Herzegovina), consists of a great variety of races, having nothing in common except their allegiance to Francis Joseph in his dual capacity of Emperor of Austria and King of Hungary. Thus there are 18,764,000 Slavs, including the Chekhs and Slovaks of Bohemia, Moravia, and Hungary, the Poles and Ruthenians of Silesia and Galicia, the Slovenes, Serbs, and Croats of Slavonia, Bukovina, Croatia, and Dalmatia. There are also 8,628,000 Germans, 7,435,000 Magyars, 2,615,000 Rumanians, and 681,000 Italians.

It will be readily understood that, from the point of view of race, it is out of the question to speak of either an Austrian nation or an Austrian language. The characteristics of some of the peoples which make up this political tower of Babel are dealt with elsewhere. Space will allow of only a very brief survey of the leading features of the rest.

AUSTRIA.

Under this heading come most of the races just enumerated, Hungary comprising chiefly Magyars, Germans, Rumanians, Croats, and other Slavs. The Austrian of Vienna is of Teutonic stock, and German is the official language. The people of the capital are characterised by levity, and love of gaiety may be said to be the prevailing note. Their indolence and lack of energy may be attributed partly to the enervating life of a great city and partly to Oriental influences. The women are celebrated for vivacity and brightness of disposition, and physical beauty and womanly grace are present in all classes. It is notably among the working classes that their good qualities are apparent. A devoted and capable wife is generally found under the roof of the Austrian workman.

Photo by R. Lechner] [*Vienna.*

A HUNGARIAN.

The Chekhs, who belong to the Slav family of nations, may be reckoned among its finest specimens, and are noted for their high intellectual qualities. Their keen sense of nationality and the stubbornness with which they cling to their language have been a source of difficulty to the Austrian Government. German is the official language of the empire, but the people of Bohemia have never submitted to the disuse of their own, and their representatives in the Austrian Parliament have always insisted on its use. A few years ago the Emperor, yielding to their demands for its recognition, caused his ministers to decree that it should be placed on an equal footing with German. The wrath of the German party in the State was kindled, and the decree was rescinded. At the moment of writing the Chekhs are once more carrying

on a determined agitation, and it seems that the "languages question" will be a permanent thorn in the side of the Austrian Government.

The Chekhs are reputed to be industrious and excellent workers, and have produced talented musicians.

The Moravians are so closely akin, in race, language, and customs, to the Bohemians, that they call for no special mention.

The Poles are found principally in the Russian Empire, where there are about 10,000,000; but a large number of them are under the Austrian Crown. They appeared under the name of Lekhs about the seventh century of this era, and by some writers are supposed to have been a Norse tribe which overcame and amalgamated with a Slavonic people. They may be regarded as one of the numerous subdivisions of the great Slav race. Physically they are of medium height, the Poles of the south being generally of darker complexion than those of the north. They have always been distinguished for bravery, polite manners, and great intellectual gifts. Their women are handsome and vivacious.

From the Anthropological Collection in the Muséum de Paris.

A PURE GYPSY, ALSACE (PROFILE).

Hungary.

Before dealing with the Magyars, who constitute the great majority of this kingdom, a few words ought to be devoted to the inhabitants of Croatia and Slavonia, which form an annexe of the Hungarian Crown.

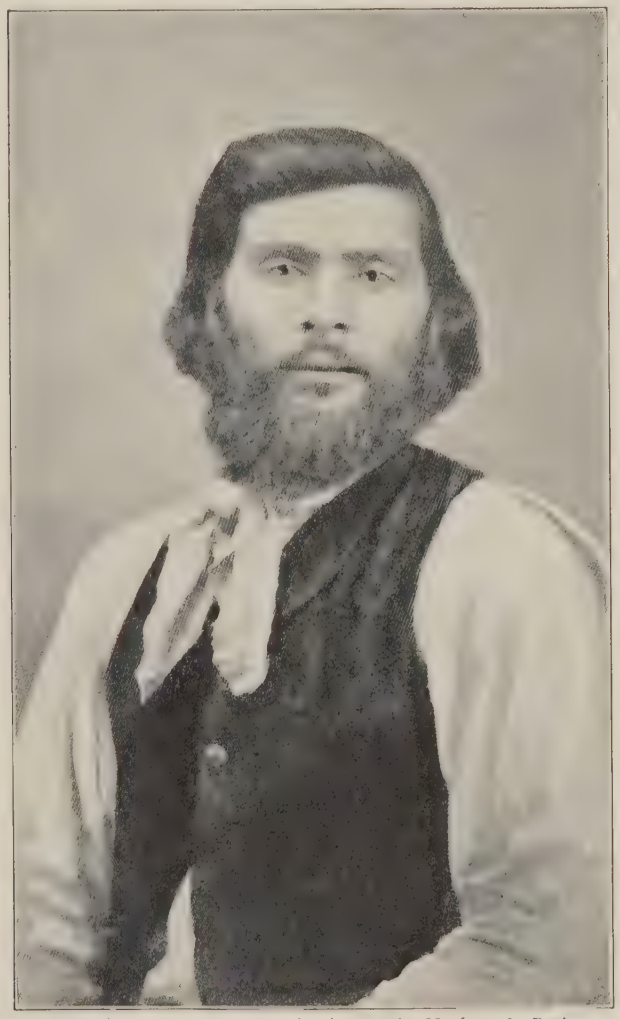
The Croats are a branch of the Slav race, and are closely akin to the Servians. They differ in being Roman Catholics and in using the Latin alphabet for their two dialects—the Sloveno-Croatian and the Serbo-Croatian (Brown). The author here referred to, in his interesting account of this people, describes them as having for their physical characteristics black or very dark brown hair, and greyish or blue eyes, with a countenance suggestive of cruelty and suspicion. They are lazy and intemperate, but good-humoured and hospitable. Their women, who do most of the work, are both ignorant and superstitious, and do not rank high in the scale of civilisation. They are noted for the beauty of their costume, which is usually radiant. The white tunic, scarlet waistcoat, and red sash or belt of leather with beautiful patterns are among the various articles of attire, which differ in every village. A love of gorgeous colours and silver ornaments is displayed everywhere.

The Slovaks, who are found associated with the Ruthenians in Moravia and Galicia, are carefully to be distinguished from the Slovenes, who are numerous, especially in Bukovina and Slavonia. They are a pastoral people, and are generally regarded as hard-working and contented.

The Magyars spring from the Ural-Altaic stock. At the close of the ninth century of our era a horde of mixed Turkish and Finnish origin entered Hungary, and it is from these

immigrants that the Hungarians descend. "An indefinable Oriental air may be noted in most Magyars of good family. The fact that the structure of the Magyar language is Ugro-Finnish, while it contains Mongol and Turkish words, and has in more recent times borrowed from German and Slavonic, points to a good deal of mixture in the composition of this people" (Ratzel).

Physically they are accounted one of the handsomest races in Europe. They have a manly, upright carriage and an energetic air. Their frames are tall, athletic, and robust. Their eyes are intensely black, the nose straight, the teeth white and regular, and the hair bushy. Their women are even better-looking than the men. The Magyars have pushed their way into the front rank of nations by their physical strength, bravery, and strong patriotic sentiment, which engenders a vanity bordering on self-conceit. Their hospitality is proverbial, and has brought many wealthy families to the verge of ruin. Trade and the industries have in recent years been greatly developed.



From the Anthropological Collection in the Muséum de Paris.

A PURE GYPSY, ALSACE (FULL-FACE).

The national dress is exceedingly picturesque. Its principal characteristics are the *bunda* (a long outer cloak), long boots, and spurs. A Hungarian nobleman attached to the Austro-Hungarian Embassy in London attracted universal attention at a levee at St. James's a few years ago by the magnificence of his attire.

A Hungarian wedding is a remarkable ceremony. The feast lasts for several days. "After the wedding ceremony is ended, the bridegroom's friends, headed by a band of musicians, come to fetch the bride, who, thus escorted, goes to her new home; here, as well as during the procession to the church, firearms are discharged and other noisy demonstrations made by the guests, who afterwards sit down to the table and prolong the feast far into the night. It is the custom—and a curiously suggestive one it is—for each guest to dance in turn with the bride, and then to give her a few *kreutzers* (or pence), in exchange for which he receives a kiss. Each guest also brings a present, which consists of a fowl, a pigeon, some fruit, or other articles of provender. This is duly handed to the bride, who, by accepting it, binds herself to dance with the donor" (Brown).

The dominant religion of the Austro-Hungarian Empire—or rather of the various races composing it—is the Roman Catholic. The members of this Church numbered, in 1898, 32,240,000. There are also 4,268,000 Protestants, 3,178,000 members of the Greek and Armenian Churches, and 1,870,000 Jews.

THE GYPSIES.

BEFORE taking leave of the peoples of Central Europe, a few words may appropriately be devoted to the Gypsies, who are here found in larger numbers than in any other part of the world, over which they wander at large.

From the Anthropological Collection in the Muséum de Paris.

A BOHEMIAN GYPSY GIRL.

The Gypsies are undoubtedly of Hindu origin, as is clearly shown by the structure of their language. They first appeared in Europe early in the Middle Ages, when they were believed to have come originally from Egypt. This theory is now exploded, and survives only in the name by which they are known in some places. Their language bears traces of all the countries through which they have passed at different times, so that it may be said that they have no language and no country of their own. They have adopted whatever country has suited their taste, and have absorbed a little of its speech into their original dialect. Wherever they are found, they are strangers and outcasts, and have no part in the government or national life of their adopted country.

Physically the Gypsy of pure blood is strongly suggestive of an Eastern origin. His bright black eyes, oval face, black hair, and dark brown complexion render him easily recognisable wherever he is seen. His mental characteristics are not such as to earn for him the respect of his fellow-men. He leads a shiftless, vagrant life, and his propensity for thieving is ineradicable. Of religion the Gypsies have little, and they are generally as ready to adopt that of the country they find themselves in, whenever it suits their convenience, as to borrow from its language or its hen-roosts. Although their moral conceptions are not of a high order, they have certain beliefs and superstitions which redeem them from absolute barbarism.

Their customs differ widely in the various regions in which they live. Everywhere they display a passion for bright colours in their dress and for glittering ornaments. They have no liking for sedentary life, and their pursuits are such as can be best carried on in a life of movement. As tinkers and metal-workers, and in making baskets and brooms, they show much skill.

A good description of the Gypsies of Bosnia is given by Tissot, who says: "Their complexion is as brown as old leather. They have keen black eyes and oval faces, and their long curly hair falls in oily masses over their shoulders; their figures are athletic and muscular; they lead a vagabond and wandering life, braving carelessly the inclemency of the seasons under their tents of ragged cloth, and too often exercising the calling of brigands and thieves. I must tell you further that the Bosnian Gypsy women are often of a rare beauty, and know how to make the most of their charms. As dancing-women and ballet-girls they enter the harems, distracting the hearts of the beys and pashas, and they are often to be met in public places dancing in picturesque costumes on a piece of carpet. The Tziganes were for long the only people who worked the rich mines of Bosnia, but they contented themselves with dragging a fleece of wool in the bed of the torrents, and picking out the spangles of gold which in some streams are found in abundance."

CHAPTER XX.

GERMANY, SWITZERLAND, ITALY, FRANCE, SPAIN, AND PORTUGAL.

GERMANY.

THE Germanic or Teutonic stock forms the basis of the Scandinavian, Dutch, and to some extent the British peoples. In the previous chapter we have already pointed out that a large number of Germans are to be found in Austria-Hungary. The Teutons form one of the principal branches of the Aryan family of nations. But in the every-day use of language we generally mean by the word "German" a person who owes allegiance to the Kaiser, or Emperor, of Germany. Its significance is therefore rather political than scientific. The German Empire is a confederacy of five-and-twenty states, dating from the year 1871, with more or less independence in their internal affairs, presided over by the King of Prussia, who bears the title of Kaiser, or Emperor. The united provinces of Alsace-Lorraine, annexed after the Franco-Prussian War, now form part of the empire, being administered as a kind of Crown colony.

In the year 1895 the German people numbered 52,246,589, but at the present time the population is probably not far short of 55,000,000. Racially the Germans may be divided into two great branches, corresponding to the two very different physical divisions of the land. To the south and west of the Hartz Mountains Germany consists of high tablelands and valleys; to the north and east, of a vast tract of lowland country, in which the only important elevation is the Teutoburger Wald.

The inhabitants of the southern portions of the empire are generally known as the High Germans, while those who dwell in the low-lying regions of the north are called the Low Germans. The former are also known as Swabians, the latter as Saxons. There is a well-marked distinction in the physical type of these two branches of the race. The Swabians represent that portion of the Teutons which, in its early migrations, displaced a Celtic people at one time settled in the mountainous part of the country. They are darker than the Northern Germans, and perhaps this may be accounted for by partial fusion with the conquered Celts, who had in their turn already absorbed a dark race of the time of the New Stone Age—

Photo by V. Scheurich] [*Berlin.*

A LITTLE GERMAN BOY.

Photo by V. Scheurich] *[Berlin.*

A GERMAN LADY.

that is, a Neolithic people, to use the scientific term. The Saxons, on the other hand, have for the most part the blue eyes and light hair which are generally taken as typical of the modern German. The Germans, however, are no exception to the rule that all European peoples are so mixed that none of them can be resolved into their primary Celtic, Teutonic, Scandinavian, or Slav elements. The Slav element is indeed prominent in Germany, although the purely Slavonic inhabitants are slowly but surely becoming Teutonized. Of these, the Letto-Lithuanic people in the extreme north-east of the empire are a sort of connecting-link between Russia and Germany, as they are found in large numbers in the western provinces of Russia. This race may be described as handsome, well built, and fair, with blue eyes and clear white skin. They are mostly Protestants, and bear a great reputation for piety. It is said that nothing is ever allowed to keep them away from church on Sunday. They retain, however, a great number of pagan superstitions which were blended with their Christianity. The Wends of Lusatia are another survival whose name, supposed to mean "Wanderers," has been identified with that of the ancient *Veneti* (Venetians). They still retain the old dialect known as Sorb, which, however, is destined in time to give way to the German which they are rapidly learning to speak. In the provinces of Silesia and Posen there are as many as 2,920,000 Western Slavs, nearly all Poles, with a few of the kindred Cássubs and Mazurs. These last, being Protestants, are naturally more susceptible to German influence.

About 50,000 Chekhs, on the Bohemian frontier, are under German sway, as are the Schleswig Danes. The French are numerous, especially in Lorraine, where are also a few Walloon communities. Nor must the Jews be omitted, who number about 1 per cent. of the population, and exert a powerful influence on the art, literature, music, and finance of the country.

Before we can arrive at anything like a correct estimate of the mental characteristics and temperament of the typical modern German, it is necessary to take into consideration the immense influence which the State has exercised in modifying the national character. One of the chief agencies by which this has been brought about is of course the army. Military training is compulsory and universal. The Germans of the upper class devote as much time and serious attention to the profession of arms as English gentlemen do to politics, or the various pursuits of country life, such as hunting, shooting, fishing, or racing. A German officer, as a rule, lives for nothing but his work, and his one ambition is to become as proficient therein as possible. The consequence is that Germany now possesses the finest army in the world. Nor is it by the army alone that discipline is taught; the State controls the education of the citizen, directs the post and the railways, and assists trade and commerce by encouraging technical instruction and subsidising growing industries and transoceanic shipping. Everywhere and over everything the influence of the State makes itself felt.

It is perhaps not too much to say that Germany is the most thoroughly organised and completely drilled nation in Europe. It would obviously be outside the scope of the present work to inquire into the advantages or defects of German methods from the standpoints of statecraft and of commerce. Yet their influence in moulding the character of the German citizen is of the utmost importance, as has already been pointed out by more than one thoughtful English observer. In travelling about Germany, the writer has been pleased to note the absence of that rowdy behaviour so frequently seen in the streets of London.

Education, both in the public or national schools and in the universities, is systematic and thorough. It differs from our English system in two respects. In the first place, it is open to men in every rank of life, and the average German has acquired a far greater amount of scholastic knowledge than the average Englishman on leaving school. In the second place, it is directed almost exclusively to training the intellect, and has little or no effect on the

Photo by the Photochrome Co.] [*London.*

THREE SWISS GIRLS.

manners or the morals of the pupil—a defect which cannot be justly ascribed to the training of an English gentleman. The masters at our public schools have undoubtedly exercised a strong influence for good on the boys committed to their care, and the same may be said of many of our private schools.

What are the mental characteristics of the German? From the excessive militarism of his country he acquires a somewhat brusque and off-hand manner, which is especially marked in members of the aristocracy. His education, with its tendency to specialism at an early age, makes him learned and narrow, and lacking in the graces which a more general culture and wider training might bestow. The constant interference of the State in his domestic and business concerns is apt to weaken his independence and rob him of individuality and character. Behind his acquired conventionality, however, he is honourably distinguished for loyalty to the Fatherland and his friends, as well as for kindly disposition and family affection. Not the least attractive characteristic of the German is his fondness for music, which does much to soften his asperity of manners. A strong vein of sentimentality has often been noticed in the Teutonic disposition, although it is kept well in hand by discipline and training. A curious instance of this was related by the correspondent of an English newspaper during the Franco-Prussian War. When the Germans entered Paris, a good deal of looting and violence took place. An officer broke into a house, and, entirely disregarding the trembling occupiers, sat down at the piano in one of the rooms and ran his fingers over the keyboard. Presently he broke out into a plaintive melody which celebrated the charms of his lady-love. The performance affected him to tears. He was able, however, to master his emotion sufficiently to call in his orderly and direct him to have the instrument packed up and sent to Germany! He then left the house without so much as a word to his unfortunate hosts. The Germans are, as a rule, frugal and unostentatious in their habits. Mere wealth has less social power among them than in England. It will not buy the *entrée* into high society. Class distinctions are well marked, and even the poorest nobleman of a long line is recognised as a far superior being to the wealthiest parvenu. In this respect Germans take themselves very seriously. To omit the *von*, denoting gentle birth, before the name of an untitled gentleman would cause him to feel much aggrieved. Even official titles are guarded by their possessors with the same strong jealousy. Wives are addressed in such a way as to show that they share in the official title—*e.g.* "Mrs. General" or "Mrs. Stationmaster."

Photo by the Photochrome Co. [*London.*

A SWISS MAN.

Photo by Schroeder] [*Zurich.*

A YOUNG WOMAN OF BERN.

Photo by the Photochrome Co. [*London.*

A SWISS GIRL IN BRIDAL DRESS.

Domestic life in Germany is apt to strike the stranger as decorous, but distinctly dull. Women are by no means badly educated, but they are not expected to share the intellectual or business interests of their husbands. Their proper sphere, even in the upper classes, is supposed to be the kitchen and the nursery. Many are expected to attend a church regularly; hence the saying one so often hears in Germany, "*Kirche, Kinder, Küche*," which means "Church, children, and kitchen." Although, on the whole, German wives are well treated by their husbands, they are often little better than a kind of upper servants. A German girl is not expected to have a higher ambition in life than to become in due time an efficient *Hausfrau*. The Germans are fond of amusement, although their pleasures are of a mild nature. In youth, however, they are much given to fencing and other gymnastic exercises. Even duelling is encouraged in the highest quarters, being still a noticeable feature of student life. The present Emperor, however, has checked it to some extent among the officers of the army, owing to the scandalous frequency with which these "affairs of honour" occurred. In holiday time they throng the public gardens and listen to the excellent military bands for which Germany is famous. Here they will sit for hours at the small tables which hold the ever-replenished glass of Munich, Pilsener, or other beer, and smoke cigars made in Germany, and therefore inexpensive.

It is reckoned that about 63 per cent. of the inhabitants of the empire are Protestants and 36 per cent. Roman Catholics, while the remainder are by creed and extraction mostly Jews.

SWITZERLAND.

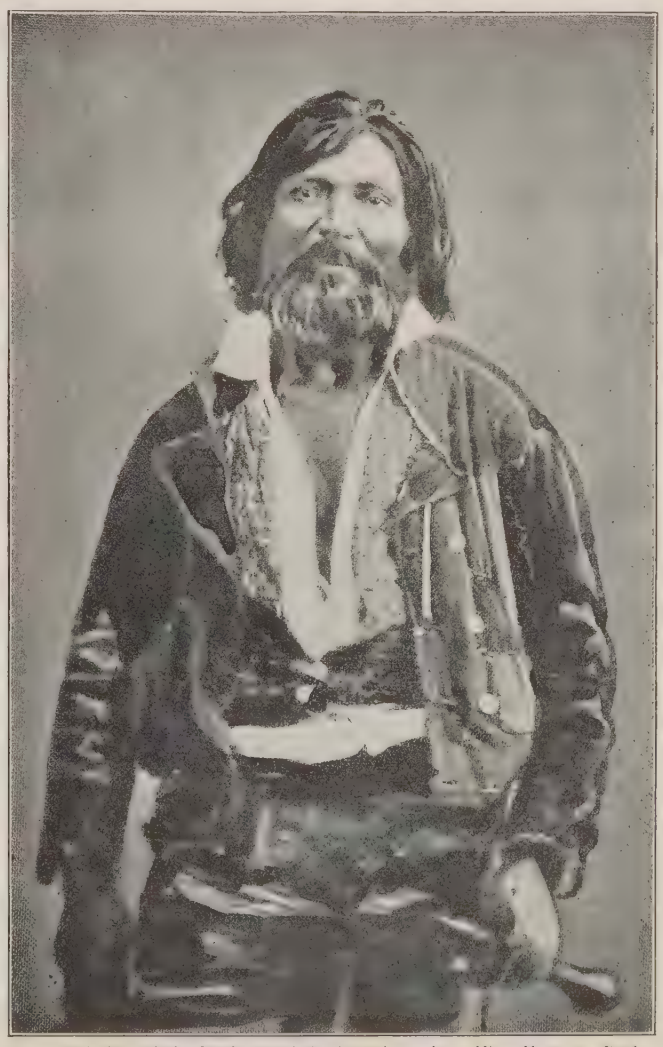
THE union of the Swiss people as a nation is entirely political, and in an ethnographical sense there is no such thing as a Swiss nation. Their country has an area of only 15,976 square miles, and in the year 1898 the census showed a population of rather less than 3,120,000. In this small compass, however, three if not four distinct nationalities have their home. In the valley of the Upper Rhine as far as Basle (or Bâle), and in the valley of the Upper Rhone as far south as Sitten, the people are of Teutonic stock, speaking a German patois. They are sprung from the Alemanni, one of the Teutonic tribes which descended on the Roman Empire. The German Swiss are by far the most numerous, being about three-sevenths of the entire population. Part of the Upper Rhine Valley and the slopes of the Jura in the west are known as French Switzerland. Here the people are descended from the Burgundians.

Though the Burgundians were also one of the German tribes which contributed to the break up of the power of Rome, their descendants now speak the French tongue in the district which comprises Neuchâtel, Geneva, the Valais, and the Pays de Vaud. In the basin of the Po—canton of Ticino—the people are Italian and speak the Italian language.

Besides these three main groups there is a small fragment which may be described as an ethnical survival, destined in language, at any rate, to disappear before the German or Italian elements by which it is surrounded. This fragment comprises the Rhæto-Romance people, living in the Grisons and the hilly region between the upper tributaries of the Rhine and the banks of the Upper Inn. They are believed to be descended from the Rhætians, an ancient tribe which had settled in the district before the German or Teutonic migration, and even before the Romans, who had already conquered and mixed with the primitive inhabitants. Their language is the Rumonsh, which has two dialects, the Rumonsh proper, spoken on the Vorder Rhine and in some parts of the Hinter Rhine, and the Ladin of the Engadine and the valley of the Inn. Both represent in a somewhat modified form the Latin spoken by the Roman peasant of the time of Livy. But however interesting the Rumonsh-speaking race may be from the ethnographical point of view, its members are numerically unimportant. According to the latest returns (1898), 2,150,000 of the inhabitants of Switzerland were of German, 700,000 of French, 170,000 of Italian, and 38,000 of Rumonsh speech. While French is stationary, Italian appears to be encroaching on the German and Rumonsh territories.

The various nationalities found in Switzerland are held together by a confederacy, or union of twenty-two cantons, each of them quite independent in its local administration, somewhat in the manner of the United States of America. It follows, from what has been said, that the Swiss must present a variety of types, both physically and mentally. Not only have the racial differences to be taken into account, but also the difference in character and manners which we should expect to find in a country where every little commune is practically free to go its own way without interference from its neighbour.

Physically the Swiss may be described as well built and hardy, with a vigorous physique, due to plain living and mountain air and an outdoor life. They are sober, frugal (quite as much from necessity as from choice), cleanly, and fairly honest, except where rich English and American tourists offer an irresistible temptation to ask exorbitant prices. The late Mr. Ruskin spoke in his "Modern Painters" of the sad deterioration that had taken place already at that date in this respect; and his wise words of warning might be equally applied to Scotland, or even Norway. Education flourishes, and technical instruction is well attended to. The Canton



By permission of the Professor of Anthropology, Nat. Hist. Museum, Paris.

AN ITALIAN MAN.

Vaud has been called the paradise of peasant-proprietors, and here the agricultural Swiss may perhaps be seen at their best. In contrast with their French neighbours the Vaudois are thrifty and intelligent in their husbandry. Their cottages are not only picturesque, but scrupulously clean. They supplement the living they obtain from the soil by such industries as clock- and watch-making. In this business they have shown their extraordinary aptitude for delicate and minute workmanship. In La Vallée, the centre of the industry, the inhabitants are said to have taken to this employment on account of the hard winters and short summers, which made a purely agricultural life rather precarious. Agriculture, which can alone be carried on in the valleys, is not sufficient to support the whole community; and even with the rapid growth of their commercial industries the Swiss are obliged to go abroad in large numbers and look for employment in other countries. As servants, couriers, hotel-keepers, and waiters, they are found in nearly every great city of Europe and America. In the summer months the country is invaded by a large army of tourists, who contribute largely to the support of the people. In spite, however, of their financial difficulties the Swiss are free from pauperism as it is known in England. They set a good example to the rest of the world by assisting each other in times of distress. Every commune has its fund out of which the children of parents who have died have their education paid for, and the old folk who are past working are maintained from the same source. The smallness of the commune makes it easier for public opinion to enforce a high standard of self-respect.

Each canton has its own manners and its own institutions. Taken as a whole the Swiss are undoubtedly democratic. As in Greece, there are no hereditary titles, and the only trace of anything approaching to an aristocratic state is to be found in the canton of Bern. Here many of the citizens are descended from the lords of Bern who ruled that republic in former days with the majesty of the doges and princes of Venice and Florence. These are held by their less illustrious brethren in great honour. But although a democratic people, the Swiss are conservative in clinging to old customs. The little commune of Gersau, now incorporated in the canton of Schwytz (from which Switzerland takes its name), was at one time an

Photo by G. Sommer] [*Naples.*

THE "TARANTELLE" IN NAPLES.

Photo by Alinari] [*Florence.*

AN ITALIAN SHEPHERDESS.

Photo by J. S. Compton] [*London.*

AN ITALIAN MONK.

independent state. The memory of its grander days is kept alive by an interesting ceremony which takes place annually. On a certain Sunday in May the people meet together under the presidency of the chief magistrate (who is glorious on this occasion by reason of being girt with the sword of state), elect the various administrative functionaries, and discuss generally the affairs of the commune.

The Swiss have always been proud of their independence, and have clung tenaciously to their liberty. In this they were aided by the conformation of their country, which offers a natural barrier to invasion. When first forming part of the Holy Roman Empire, the forest cantons revolted against the Emperor Albert in 1313. From motives of prudence subsequent sovereigns favoured their spirit of independence. It was not until their defeat of the forces of Charles the Bold in 1477 that the Swiss attained to a full consciousness of national existence. The Emperor Maximilian made a final effort to reduce their growing pride, but after a protracted struggle he was forced in 1500 to recognise their practical independence by treaty, although it was not until the Peace of Westphalia in 1648 that the Swiss Confederation was recognised by the world at large as a sovereign independent state. That the Swiss are still prepared to guard and, if necessary, fight for their freedom is shown by the attention paid to military training, which is obligatory on every male subject of the State. The last occasion on which the Swiss were nearly being called upon to take up arms was in 1857, when a war with Prussia seemed by no means improbable.

By the Treaty of Vienna the Prussian Crown retained certain rights of sovereignty over the canton of Neuchâtel, and appointed its governor, although in all other respects the people of Neuchâtel enjoyed the full liberty of Swiss citizenship. This anomaly gave rise to a considerable amount of friction, which culminated in a threat on the part of the King of Prussia of a military occupation of the canton. This the Swiss Confederation would have certainly resisted. The matter was, however, ultimately settled without recourse to arms.

The legislative power of the Confederation is vested in a Federal Assembly, which consists of two chambers—a National Council of 147 members, and a Council of States of forty-four members. The executive power is in the hands of a Federal Council composed of seven members. This body, which is elected by the Federal Assembly, is presided over by the President of the Confederation, who is the head of the State for the time being, and holds office for a year only. Some idea of the modest scale on which the Swiss pay their national servants may be gained from the fact that the highest salary, that of the President, is only £540.

In Switzerland the adherents of the Roman Catholic Church are estimated at 40 per

Photo by Lévy Bros.] [*Paris.*

YOUNG WOMEN OF VALENCE.

Photo by Pilotti & Porpel] [*Milan.*

AN ITALIAN PEASANT-GIRL IN HER WEDDING-DRESS.

cent. of the population, and the Protestants as 59 per cent. In 1888 the Jews numbered 7,400. Geneva, long noted for its manufacture of watches, was the home of Rousseau and Necker, and has been a chief stronghold of Calvinism since the sixteenth century.

ITALY.

To some extent the political relations during the last three decades have been much the same in Italy as in Germany. Before 1870, when its unity as a kingdom was first achieved, it was divided into a number of separate states. Italy at the present day comprises the states of Sardinia, the Two Sicilies, the Pontifical States, the Lombard and Venetian provinces formerly belonging to the Austrian Empire, the duchies of Tuscany, Parma, and Modena. With a total area of 114,410 square miles, it has a population estimated in 1900 at 31,856,000.

It would be hopeless to attempt to arrive at a just estimate of the racial elements of which the modern Italian is composed. To describe him as Latin would merely be an easy means of getting over the difficulty by giving him a classical name. When Italy first emerges into the light of history, it is seen to be the home of a number of tribes destined afterwards to be absorbed in a great linguistic family to which the people of Latium gave their name. The Umbro-Sabellian group were the most important of these early inhabitants, although their arrival in Italy was comparatively late. The Latin race, with which the Greek was closely allied, was probably the advance-guard of the great Aryan migration into Southern Europe. The Etruscans were established in Italy some time prior to the arrival of the Latins, and have left a deep impression, both as regards physical character and mental culture, on the Italian race. In later times they were associated more particularly with the portion of Italy now known as Tuscany, but there can be little doubt that they once extended over a much wider area. They were a non-Aryan people, and have been classed by some writers with the Iberians, as a survival from Neolithic times. Others have put forward the untenable view that the Etruscans were a branch of the Finno-Tartars. In appearance they seem to have been small and dark. They attained to a high degree of

culture, and remains of their inscriptions and monuments have been found in abundance. They gave a good deal of trouble to the Roman people in early days by their warlike habits and character, but in the end were conquered. Even the Gauls had at an early date settled in North Italy. The Ligurians are considered to have been an older non-Aryan race. In the south and in Sicily the Greek element has combined with another pre-Aryan race, the Iapygian, while Phœnician settlers from Africa helped to create still more variety. When the Roman Empire fell to pieces, Italy was swept by barbaric tribes which brought Slav and Teutonic blood into the nation. Huns, Bulgars, and others of Mongol and Ugrian origin gave an Oriental touch to the blend. In her later history the land has seen foreign dynasties, Spanish, Austrian, and French, exercising their sway. How far these waves of foreign immigration have modified the physical and mental attributes of the old Italian people it is impossible to say. That they must have influenced its moral character is practically certain. Taking the Italian as he is to-day, we naturally expect to find differences of type in the various states which have been but lately welded into one. Space, however, will admit of our noticing only some of the more important characteristics.

The Italians are a remarkably handsome race, with well-formed, symmetrical features and limbs. An average Italian makes a better model for the painter than the average member of any northern race. Owing to Celtic and Teutonic influences, the Italian of the north is of a lighter complexion than his brother of the south. In Genoa blond representatives of the race may frequently be met with. The dark hair and rich colouring of the Southern Italian are generally accepted as marking the true Latin type.

The Italians are an agricultural people. Though naturally of a cheerful and patient disposition, they have been plunged by centuries of bad government, oppression, and high taxation into a state of poverty and misery. In the north the cultivation of the olive and the silk industry are the principal means of supporting life, and here the peasants are industrious, and have a better character for steadiness and sobriety than the fickle southerner. The Lombards were at one time celebrated for commercial and industrial energy, and this character the people of to-day still retain. In Milan the townsfolk are more reticent and thoughtful than the idle people of Naples. The lot of the peasant throughout Italy is extremely hard. He has received no assistance in the shape of intelligent government in his efforts to cope with difficulties. The Campania, which in classical times was a rich tract of corn land, has, on account of neglect, become marshy and malarial, and its unhappy cultivators find their rough sheep-skin garments afford but scanty protection against the poisonous night air. It is perhaps in Naples and Sicily that the degradation of the people from maladministration is most apparent. Things are much better now than they were under the Bourbon rule, but the conditions both in town and country are still far from what they ought to be. In Naples the visitor may see little

Photo by M. Berthaud [*Boulogne.*

A FISHER-WOMAN OF PORTEL.

but what is picturesque and pleasant, but in the poorer quarters of the town disease, pestilence, filth, and dirt exist in their most repulsive forms. Sicily barely conceals beneath the smiling exterior of her fair vineyards and orange-groves the extreme destitution of her peasantry. It is here that secret societies like "La Mafia" flourish.

If Italian morals compare unfavourably with those of colder northern races, one can easily perceive some of the causes at work. Although passionate and deceitful, the Italians are warm-hearted, generous, and hospitable. For a good-natured people, their cruelty to animals is, at first sight, extraordinary; but it must be remembered that the bigoted and uneducated Latin of the lower orders, whether Italian or Spaniard, regards it as superfluous to bestow kindness on beasts which have no souls to be saved. Italians of all classes are noted for their charming manners, keenness of wit, and vivacity of expression. The intellectual gifts of the race are considerable, but they do not exhibit any of that stolid earnestness which we associate with the Teutonic peoples. Facility is one of their chief characteristics. In dress they show a natural instinct for arrangement and effect. In matters of diet they are extremely frugal. But little meat is eaten; polenta (maize porridge), with bread and vegetables, forms the staple meal of the northern peasantry. A genial climate enables the southerner to exist for an incredible time on a little fruit and some bread and wine. The Italians are fond of amusement, and the carnival still forms one of their national institutions.

The State religion of Italy is the Roman Catholic. The fusion of the Papal dominions in the secular kingdom of Italy has deprived the Pope of all territorial power; and although he still rules over the Vatican, his position in Rome is only that of a foreign prince. There is a Protestant community of Waldenses, numbering about 20,000, in the district of Pinerolo in the Cottian Alps.

Photo by M. Emil Frechon [*Biskra.*

AN OLD FRENCHWOMAN.

FRANCE.

THE French people are connected geographically and by language with the Italians. In the year 1896 the population of France was 38,517,975, and the annual increase is so slight that these figures are probably not far short of the actual number of inhabitants at the present moment. In early historic days the land was peopled by the Gauls, a branch of the Celtic stock. Some older race was there before them, the race which erected the wonderful stone circles, dolmens, and avenues of upright stones seen in Brittany. Archæologists are inclined to think that these prehistoric builders are represented at the present day by the Basques or Iberians; but these questions cannot be discussed here. The reader who wishes to follow up this subject may refer to the present writer's "Prehistoric Man and Beast."

Photo by M. Emil Frechon] [*Biskra.*

TWO FRENCH PEASANTS.

After Cæsar had invaded and conquered Gaul, Roman civilisation transformed the country. It was not the policy of the conquerors, however, to fuse with the conquered, and from Rome France received only her language and her laws. France was afterwards overrun by tribes of Teutonic stock, Goths, Burgundians, and Franks, from the latter of whom the French have acquired the name they now bear. Later came the Normans, a Scandinavian people. Thus it will be seen that the French are a Latin people in language only, while the ethnic basis is undoubtedly Celtic, with a tinge of Teutonic and Scandinavian elements in their composition. In the south-east of France Greek colonisation had gained a slight footing centuries before the Roman conquest. Marseilles, Antibes, and Nice were, with one or two other places, the sites of their settlements.

Photo by M. Emil Frechon [*Biskra.*

A FRENCH FISHERMAN.

Two physical types have been noticed in France. In the north there are people of tall stature, light hair, light eyes, and oval-shaped head. These are generally taken to represent the purely Celtic Gaul unmixed with the pre-existing inhabitants, though possibly they owe these characteristics to the Teutonic and Scandinavian elements that have been mentioned. South of the Loire the average stature is lower, the head rounder, and the eyes and hair dark. This phenomenon is explained to be due to the persistence of the Iberian type. It must be admitted, however, that the highly civilised races of Western Europe have undergone so many racial transformations that it is impossible to analyse them with minute precision.

Mentally the French are characterised by the vivacity and quickness which are the typical traits of the Celtic intellect. They share with the inhabitants of Southern Europe generally the habit of temperance in diet, which is due in a large measure to the lighter strain undergone by the system than it is subjected to in the more bracing climate of the North.

It is from the *bourgeoisie*—the great middle class—and the peasantry that we get the most typical Frenchman. In the various political catastrophes that have befallen France the aristocracy have practically disappeared as a social force. The possession of a title is of little assistance to its owner in obtaining State employment, and the few remaining representatives of noble families, for the most part impoverished and retired, exercise hardly any influence on the character of the country at large.

The *bourgeois*, however—a name which covers professional men, merchants, tradesmen, and public functionaries—is the central figure in French life, at all events in the towns. Frenchmen of this class are by no means wanting in alert intelligence and the power of forming independent and shrewd judgments. They are, however, terribly afflicted with a

desire for uniformity, at any rate in outward conduct. Their lives are regulated entirely with a view to observing *les convenances*, which means that they are more conventional and subservient to the opinions of their neighbours than even the corresponding classes in our own country. Thrift is one of their most important characteristics. They have a horror of debt, and it is almost second nature to a Frenchman to economise and live within his means, however small. This trait in their character sometimes appears ridiculous, but it has done much to restore France to the great position among nations which she came near to losing altogether after the Franco-Prussian War. Ostentation in dress or style of living is rarely seen. On the other hand, the French are generous in setting before strangers the best they have to offer. Consequently the tempting variety of the dishes and the simplicity with which they are served, combined with the good taste and absence of stiffness shown by his hosts, procure for the guest in a typical French house far more enjoyment than he would experience in a more showy mansion.

We are rather apt to suppose that the frequency with which the French have changed their forms of government is due to fickleness and levity of disposition. This, however, is not altogether true. The ordinary Frenchman troubles himself very little about politics, and makes the best of whatever *régime* he may happen to be living under for the moment. He is far too much concerned in the care of his small fortune to wish for social upheavals. Politics he leaves to the professional politician and the journalist.

Photo by Willard.

A BRITTANY BOY.

Until 1882 France was badly off in the matter of education, and this accounts to some extent for the lack of depth and knowledge displayed in the easy rattle of French conversation. Now, however, education is general and compulsory. Primary instruction is given in the communal schools found everywhere throughout France, while secondary education is provided in *lycées* or *collèges*. Higher education of the kind afforded by English universities is to be obtained in the "academies," of which there are sixteen. Technical training is also supplied, and the whole system of education is under the direction of a Minister of Instruction.

The *lycée* is eminently a republican institution. Boys of all grades meet on a footing of equality. They wear a plain, dark uniform, and their life is conducted on semi-military principles. Although the teaching is of excellent quality, there is none of the training in manners which is found in English public schools. The State does not aim at turning out gentlemen, and recognises no class distinctions. *Lycées* and compulsory service in the army supply the country with a monotonous type of citizen, and establish a cut-and-dried pattern to which everybody and everything must conform. The *collège*, on the other hand, is slightly more aristocratic in its methods. It is the last stronghold of clericalism in France. Instruction is given by priests, and the sons of the nobility are generally sent to

Photo by Valentine & Sons, Ltd. [*Dundee.*

A GYPSY OF GRANADA.

these schools. More attention is paid to manners, and the pupils are more strictly looked after than in the *lycées*. The relations between the sexes are regulated with less freedom among the French than in most civilised countries. Girls and boys do not come much into contact with each other. Until she is married, the young girl is kept in strict seclusion. Marriages are arranged by the parents of the young couple, and are generally business transactions. When a young man wishes to marry, his parents look out for a suitable wife among their friends, and arrange the matter of the lady's dowry for him. Every girl is expected to bring something into the common stock of married life. Although it must not be supposed that these marriages turn out badly as a general rule, there can be no doubt that the system tends to make French women rather insipid. Until marriage their minds are almost a blank, and even after it their conversation, full of sparkle and Celtic gaiety as it often is, lacks depth and character.

The French peasant must next occupy our attention. France is the largest wheat-producing country in Europe, and the land is held by a vast number of small proprietors, each farming a minute portion. This arises from the system of *partage forçé*. At the death of a proprietor his property is divided among his children, so that it is seldom possible to find large holdings anywhere. Even if a man by saving and diligence add to his small estate, the inexorable laws of nature—and the Republic—soon reduce it to tiny proportions. The French peasant is industrious and frugal. He is, as a rule, intensely ignorant of every thing that goes on outside his little sphere of life, which is of the narrowest and most conventional type imaginable. Such intelligence as he has—and he is not without considerable native shrewdness—he concentrates entirely on his life-long struggle to win a scanty subsistence from the soil. His ownership of his little plot gives him a sturdy independence which saves him from the degradation in which the agricultural classes of other countries are so often sunk. His dwelling is of the poorest description—an unplastered hut of at most two rooms, bare and frequently far from clean. Meat he seldom tastes. Life is chiefly supported on a soup made of vegetables and scraps of bacon, and on bread and milk.

The blue blouse is the universal dress of the French lower classes, even in towns, where the postman goes his rounds usually dressed almost exactly like the peasant in the fields. Education is doing much to raise the intellectual level of the peasants, and before very long

the narrowness of their outlook may be expected to disappear. The brighter members of the family often become priests, and this tends to raise the standard of culture throughout the class. Like the *bourgeois*, the peasants form a very stable element of the community; and political changes, of which they are often entirely unaware, find no sympathy in them. They are conservative to the backbone; and so long as they are left to go their way undisturbed, empires, monarchies, and republics may succeed each other without affecting the character of the people. It is only when their life is made absolutely intolerable by oppression and taxation that they stir themselves to political activity. What they are capable of when roused in this way, the Revolution of 1789 has shown the world.

In religion the French are generally Roman Catholic, the peasants, especially in Brittany and Normandy, being devout and rather superstitious. The old noble families are Roman

Photo by Valentine & Sons, Ltd.] [*Dundee.*

A SPANISH "FANDANGO," GRANADA.

Catholic; but among the *bourgeoisie*, whose education is almost entirely secular, there is a good deal of indifference to religious forms, and free-thinking is common. In 1900 there were 660,000 Protestants, and the Jews numbered 87,000.

SPAIN.

To the same extent and in the same manner as the French the Spaniards are a branch of the great Latin family of nations. The Roman conquest gave to Spain her language and her institutions, without perceptibly modifying the physical attributes of the population.

Spain occupies, with Portugal, the great peninsula south of the Pyrenees. The lion's share, at least five-sixths of the whole tract, falls to the former country, with 17,550,216 inhabitants, according to the estimate of 1887.

Although it is now under one king and government, Spain formerly consisted of a

number of separate kingdoms, and even at the present time the people of the different provinces have their distinctive dialect, customs, and national characteristics. Before glancing at these subdivisions, it will be well to give some account of the racial elements found in the country.

According to a generally accepted theory, before the Aryan migration there existed in Europe at a period known as the Neolithic Age a race of small, but sinewy, dark-haired people. These were the Iberians. Wilhelm von Humboldt, who originated the theory, believed that they were scattered throughout Sicily, Corsica, Sardinia, Southern France, and the British Isles. Spain was the last stronghold of these people, who were conquered by and fused with the immigrant Celts, and thus produced the Celtiberian race. The Basques, who are found principally in the north-west of Spain, although there are a few over the French side of the Pyrenean border, are considered to be the direct representatives of these Neolithic Iberians.

Taking the ethnic basis at the time of the Roman invasion to be Celtiberian, we find that Spain has been influenced by considerable admixture with other races. Greece and Carthage both established colonies on her shores. Teutonic invaders gained a footing—Alani in Catalonia, Suevi in Galicia, Vandals in Bætica, and Visigoths in Castile—though of course their influence must not be confined by too hard and fast a rule to particular localities. It is, however, in the long dominion of the Moors that we find the most important modification of Spanish characteristics. The Arabs and Berbers who crossed to Spain from Africa under the name of Moors (the Mauri of the Roman writers) intermarried with the people, and have left their traces on the art and rich architecture of the country. The Moors were finally driven out, but their blood still shows itself in the people of certain districts. These are the descendants of the Morescoes, the Spanish Moors who escaped the terrors of the Inquisition by adopting the creed of their Spanish mothers. The Gypsies have also contributed to the ethnical amalgam.

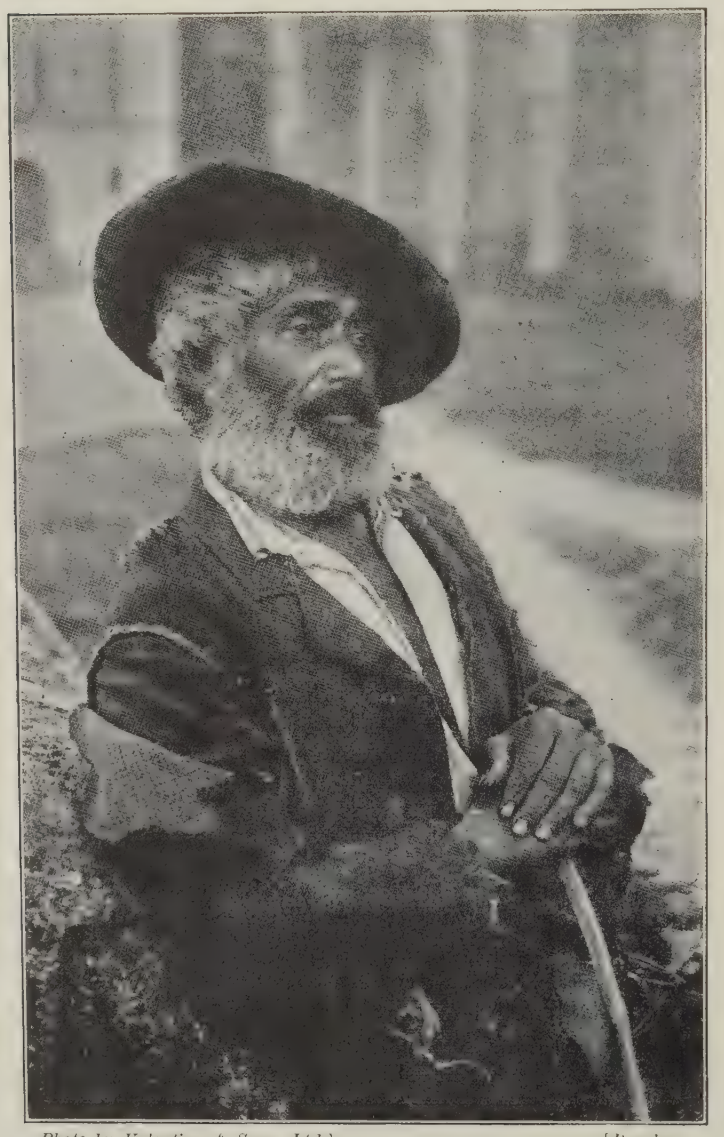


Photo by Valentine & Sons, Ltd. [*Dundee.*

A GYPSY OF GRANADA.

The people of Andalusia in the south are muscular, but incorrigibly idle. They are good-natured, contented, clever, and distinguished for gallantry to the fair sex. The Castilians may be taken as the representatives of the proud *hidalgo* of history and fiction. They are dignified and solemn, and the maintenance of an intense ceremoniousness may be taken as their most notable characteristic. Too proud to work, they are past-masters in the art of

Photo by Valentine & Sons, Ltd.] [*Dundee.*

A SPANISH LADY.

TWO PORTUGUESE BOYS.

starving pompously. The Aragonese, being reserved and suspicious, are accounted hard to govern, though of a less revengeful nature than their Valencian neighbours. The Catalonians in the north-east are enlightened and energetic, and make good practical tillers of the soil. The considerable element of Teutonic blood in their composition may have made them more vigorous than some of their less industrious neighbours. The inhabitants of the Balearic Islands are of mixed origin, with a language like that of Catalonia, Valencia, and Provence in France, being a branch of the Langue d'Oc. Their literature is rich, especially in poetry; but the language is being gradually displaced by the Castilian dialect. They are remarkably honest, courteous, and hospitable.

It is, however, in the north-western provinces of Spain that we find the most vigorous physically of the Spanish race, or rather races. The Asturian makes a good household servant, is accommodating and markedly honest. The Galician, who has been called the helot of the peninsula, is uncouth and unpolished, but always ready to undertake rough work of any kind. As labourer, artisan, coachman, groom, or porter he is invaluable, being clean, sober, hard-working, and faithful to his employer. The Basques, who have already been mentioned as a probable pre-Aryan survival, are slim but wiry, and are a hardy mountaineering folk. In temperament they are lively and independent, but extremely hospitable and courteous. They make excellent farmers, and those who have settled in America, particularly in the Argentine Republic, have shown themselves good colonisers. The Basque women are even more handsome than the men, and possess, as a rule, attractive features and a graceful carriage. The language of the Basques is peculiar to themselves, and is unlike that spoken by any other people. The difficulty of learning it is increased by its great variety of forms.

Allowing for the local variations, we may describe the physical type of the Spanish people as consisting for the most part of a medium-sized but compactly built frame, capable of more endurance than it would at first sight appear to possess. The hair is dark and the complexion olive or sallow. In disposition the Spaniards are brave, gay, and quick to anger. They are inclined to take life easily and generally ready to make the best of things. Their manners are pleasing and gracious. Quarrelsome and ready with the knife as they often are, their wrath will generally subside if they are not goaded into ungovernable passion by a needless fanning of the fuel of contention. Perhaps the least attractive feature in their character is the cruelty displayed in the treatment of animals. As has been suggested in the case of the Italians, a narrow and bigoted view of their religious obligations may have much to do with this.

Fanaticism and superstition play a much larger part than intelligence in the religion of the lower classes especially. All classes, however, show their indifference to animal suffering in the enthusiasm evoked by the national pastime of bull-fighting, in which bulls are worried to madness, horses disembowelled, and sometimes men killed, without any protest from the public opinion of the country.

Spanish ladies are kept in more seclusion than anywhere outside the Eastern countries. Bright eyes and pleasant voices are generally to be numbered among their charms. Their beauty, which comes early to maturity, is not so lasting as that of their northern sisters. Their lives lack variety, and a natural indolence, coupled with a very superficial education and much ignorance, makes prolonged pleasure in their conversation impossible.

The entrance of more vigorous nationalities into the arena of competition has ousted Spain from the great position she once held as an imperial power. The war with America in 1898 may be said to have brought her colonial history to a close. Cuba, Puerto Rico, and the Philippine Islands were given up to America; while in the following year the Ladrone, Caroline, and Pelew Islands were ceded by purchase to Germany. Her over-sea possessions now consist only of Fernando Po and Annabom in the Gulf of Guinea, the Canary Islands, a strip of territory on the west coast of the Sahara, and some settlements on the north coast of Morocco. Spanish influence will, however, long be felt all over the world. The language is spoken over a large portion of the earth's surface. Nearly the whole of Central and about half of South America are Spanish in speech, and to some extent in blood. The Spaniards have amalgamated freely with the black races with which they have come into contact, and it must be acknowledged the result has not, on the whole, made for the moral improvement of the human family.

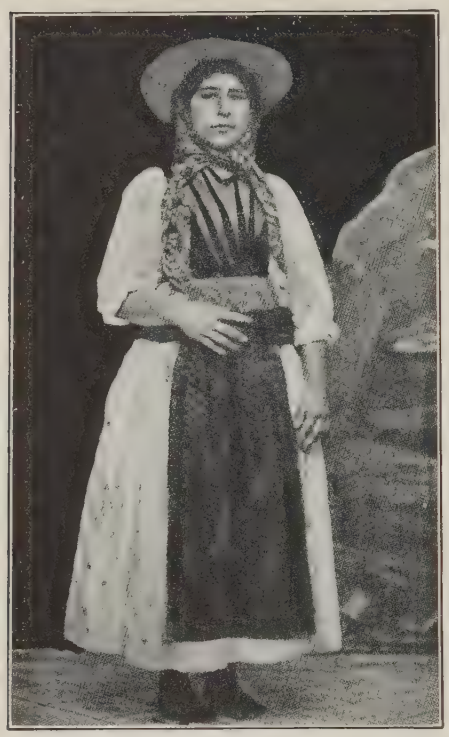
In their own country the Spaniards of the lower classes are sunk in poverty and ignorance. Their methods of agriculture are antiquated, and their lot is made harder by burdensome taxation. The solution of economic and social problems is scarcely attempted by their rulers. The Spanish Parliament is filled with politicians who make speeches of extraordinary eloquence to one another. If a country could be governed by rhetoric, Spain would be among the most fortunate. Oratory is a gift in which the Spaniard is seldom wanting. He is by nature an incessant chatterer, and parliamentary life gives him an opportunity for developing the rhetorical art of which he gladly avails himself. It is not surprising, therefore, that the work of administration, with its prosaic details, should receive less than its due share of attention, amid all this clamour of fluent tongues. Bribery and corruption flourish in a country where the officials are poor and depend largely for their living on impartial robbing of the Government and the governed. If the country is backward, however, there are signs that the low-water mark has been reached and the tide is beginning to turn. The spread of railways has done much to quicken the trade of Spain, and foreign capital and foreign enterprise have been largely introduced of late years. France and Great Britain, and more recently Germany and America, have been thus instrumental in awakening the Spaniards from their economic slumber. The land is being brought more and more into cultivation; and its mineral wealth—lead, copper, and iron—is being more actively developed. It is unlikely that the Spaniards will again take so prominent a place among the nations as they formerly held; but with improved education and more intelligent development of their material resources there is no reason to suppose that "the decadence of the Latin races," which they are popularly held to typify, is so irretrievable as it appears at first sight.

A PORTUGUESE WOMAN.

PORTUGAL.

THE Portuguese occupy a narrow strip of land on the western side of the Iberian Peninsula, amounting only to about one-sixth of the whole territory which lies south of the Pyrenees. In 1890 they numbered 5,082,247, including the inhabitants of the Azores and Madeira.

The division of the inhabitants of the peninsula into two nations, Spanish and Portuguese, is historical and political rather than ethnical. Much of what has been said of the former will apply to the latter people. As with the Spaniards, the basis of the Portuguese is Iberian,



A PORTUGUESE WOMAN.

afterwards modified by fusion with the Celts into Celtiberian. The Greeks and Carthaginians doubtless formed sporadic settlements in the west as well as in the east of the peninsula. The Romans spread their institutions and language here as well as in Spain, and the Teutonic tribes mixed their blood with the Romanised Celtiberians of Portugal as well as with the Romanised Celtiberians of Spain. The Moors have influenced the Portuguese quite as much as they have the Spaniards, and many of the every-day phrases heard in Portugal are directly traceable to an Arab source. One element in the mixed composition of this people deserves especial notice. In the days of her colonial activity Portugal had an extensive trade with Africa and India, and slaves were largely imported into the country. A pronounced Negro type has been frequently noticed among the Portuguese in certain districts, and this may be attributed to the readiness of the Portuguese, no less than the Spaniards, to mix with the inferior races with which they have come into contact. How far the Jews may be said to have influenced the physical characteristics of the race it is difficult to say, but travellers have remarked on the prevalence of the Jewish type of features in Portugal. In spite of mediæval oppression the Jews have flourished amazingly in the peninsula, and at the present day the Spanish or Portuguese Hebrew is looked on as the aristocrat of his race.

Physically the Portuguese cannot be said to be as handsome as the Spaniards. Their features are generally irregular and their frames ill-knit. The complexion is sallow and dull. In the north the peasants are much darker than in the south, and their hair is often jet-black. On the other hand, many impartial observers are inclined to think that the women are more attractive than their Spanish sisters. Their eyes are especially fine, being full and lustrous, while their dark hair and regular white teeth add much to their charm.

In character, too, the Portuguese are in many respects the more pleasing of the two peoples. The former possess a kindlier temperament, which shows itself particularly in the treatment of animals.

The Portuguese are of a bright and careless disposition, and are more talkative even than the Greeks or Italians. In this respect they are true sons of the South. The guitar is a great outlet for their exuberant feelings, and a good deal of spare time in country districts is whiled away by the soothing strains of this instrument. Frugality is a leading characteristic of the people, as indeed of all the southern races. Dried cod-fish forms one of the principal articles of diet among the peasantry, and the *olla-podrida* may be said to be the national dish. This consists, as a rule, of pork or ham, olive oil, and onions or garlic, stewed into a savoury, if not altogether nutritious, mess.

Agriculture forms the principal occupation of the people. They are, however, extremely backward and unenterprising. The same methods of husbandry are handed down from one generation to another; and being for the most part ignorant and uninformed, the peasants have little notion of making the best use of their fertile soil. Education, however, is spreading and the Government are believed to be alive to the necessity of stimulating the people by general and technical instruction. The manufacturing industries, of which hardware is perhaps the most important, are steadily improving, and the foreign trade is increasing. Of this, about one-third is in the hands of the British. There is a considerable demand for British goods in Portugal, so that we may claim to be more or less instrumental in the gradual awakening of the Portuguese to a more active industrial life.

CHAPTER XXI.

DENMARK, BELGIUM, HOLLAND, GREAT BRITAIN AND IRELAND.

DENMARK.

PHYSICALLY the Danes are a yellow-haired and fair-skinned people, belonging to the Scandinavian branch of the Germanic family; they are of full medium height, with frames and limbs well proportioned and strongly knit.

Although an offshoot of the Germanic family of nations, the most characteristic intellectual traits of the Germans are so much modified in the Danes that they fail to be distinctive. The Danes are as courageous, industrious, and persevering as any people in Europe. Judicious and practical in the general affairs of life, they are in science solid and earnest thinkers. On the other hand, one finds a quick susceptibility and a degree of vivacity seldom or never apparent in the ordinary phlegmatic Dutchman, who may be regarded as the typical representative of the racial stock. The celebrated geographer Malte-Brun, himself a Dane by birth, has sketched the character of his countrymen. He cannot be charged with attributing to them imaginary virtues or concealing their shortcomings in his picture. "It may be," he says, "that the humidity of the air and the quantity of flesh and fish they consume have contributed to make this nation heavy, patient, and difficult to move. In former times insatiable conquerors, they are now brave, but peaceable; little enterprising, but plodding and persevering; modest and proud, but not over-assiduous. They are cheerful and frank among compatriots, but somewhat cool and ceremonious towards foreigners. Imitators of other nations, we also find them discriminating observers. Constant, romantic, and careful of their cherished aims, they are capable of a rush of enthusiasm, but rarely of flashes of inspiration. Although bound by strong

Photo by Solveig Lund.

A DANISH BRIDE.

Photo by Hansen & Weller] *[Copenhagen.*

A DANISH COUPLE.

ties to their native soil and to the interests of the fatherland, they are not jealous enough of the national glory; and though accustomed to the calm of a monarchy, enemies of servitude and despotism. This is the portrait of the Danes."

There is nothing which calls for special remark in the Danish costume. In the towns the people are always ready to follow the lead of Paris in the way of fashion. Consequently the apparel to be seen in a street of Copenhagen is, in make and material, very much the same as that which is generally displayed on the boulevards of the French capital or in the streets of London.

Denmark has made surprising progress in the last thirty years. Her loss of territory in the war with Germany has been compensated for by the development of her internal resources. Less than a century ago she was one of the poorest countries in Europe. In proportion to her size she is to-day among the richest, and can boast of possessing the most cultured, thrifty, and self-reliant peasantry in Europe.

Denmark has justly been described as the paradise of peasant-proprietors. Nearly two-thirds of her population make their living from the land, about half being their own masters. A sixth of the whole area is owned by about 150,000 agricultural labourers, some 35,000 being only small cottars. About a third is in the hands of small freeholders. Landlords with farms of more than 275 acres possess a sixth. The remarkable success of Danish agriculture is chiefly due to the excellent system of general and technical education, and to co-operative enterprise. A brief sketch of the leading features of agricultural and educational institutions in Denmark may be of some interest. It will afford an illustration of the way in which the energetic and practical qualities of a nation may be brought out and turned to the best advantage. We have here a lesson much needed in England to-day.

Scattered about throughout the country are butter-factories. Of these there are altogether more than 1,200. They are controlled by large co-operative associations. The farmers who belong to these associations act under uniform regulations. Rules, to which they must strictly adhere, are laid down for their guidance in the feeding and tending of their cows. The object aimed at is twofold. In the first place, it is sought to ensure excellence of quality in the products of the dairy—milk, cream, and butter; and, secondly, to facilitate the distribution of these articles in the most expeditious and economical manner. The farmers send their produce

to the butter-factories and centres of distribution. The associations then undertake to send it to its destination. In this way the individual farmer is spared the waste of needless competition and the cost of transit to the markets, while he is assured of a ready sale for his wares. The expenses of distribution are borne entirely by the associations, which are naturally able to export butter in large quantities to other countries in a more remunerative manner than agriculturists acting independently. The profits are divided as a bonus among the farmers who belong to these associations. So well has the system been found to work that it has lately been introduced with no small success in Ireland.

Education, on sound and sensible lines, supplements the work of the co-operative associations. The *folkehöjskoler*, or people's high schools, play an important part in preparing the Dane for a life of intelligent industry. They are a sort of continuation schools in which young people of both sexes who have passed through the elementary schools may receive instruction throughout part of the year. The sessions are so arranged as not to interfere with their wage-earning work. There are about eighty of these schools, attended by some 8,000 pupils. These are drawn from the lower classes, and their ages vary from eighteen to twenty-five and even more. History and geography, physics and mechanics, and other scientific subjects are taught in the high schools. Technical instruction is given, and every effort made to equip the scholar for the path he has chosen in life. He may, for example, learn much of the science of farming in the butter-factory attached to the school. Since the peasant does not, as a rule, seek to leave the class in which he is born, his education is a practical advantage, placing him in the front rank of European agriculturists. The course of training undergone in these schools generally lasts for two sessions, at a total cost to the pupil of £24. This sum covers all his expenses of living as well as instruction. A small subsidy from the State enables these institutions to offer this education at such a moderate figure.

Photo by Solveig Lund.

A DANISH FISHER-GIRL.

Throughout the country education, even in the schools of the higher class, is remarkable for its cheapness no less than its efficiency. This is largely on account of the State aid which it receives. Beyond a few of the private institutions, the only schools which are without assistance from the Government are the *friskoler*, or free schools. These are so called because the parents are allowed to choose the subjects and course of teaching the pupils are to have. The Danish nation is convinced of the value of good training for its youth. Every child, no matter what its social position may be, is thus given an opportunity of growing up to be an intelligent and capable member of its class, whether artisan, agricultural, or gentle. Taken in the

aggregate, the Danes may be honourably distinguished as the best-instructed people in Europe. That amounts to saying broadly that they are the best-educated people in the world. It is exceedingly doubtful whether there can be found in the whole country an individual Dane, man or woman, in possession of the normal faculties, who is unable to read and write.

Another attribute of these people is their natural pride. Each man estimates his own worth and his individual rights as high as those of any other member of the community. Yet, though belief in the innate dignity and the natural equality of men is deeply rooted in their minds, they divide society into grades and ranks. Each rank possesses rights and privileges, duties and exemptions, the absolute propriety of which is not challenged by members of the other classes. The first great distinction established is that between the nobles and the citizens. This severance of the people into two great classes is not dependent on the possession of wealth. The ownership of a million *kroner* would not ennoble one man; the lack of a single coin would not disrank another. No matter how wealthy a person may be whose family has not been graded with the titled class, he is regarded as distinctly inferior in rank, although the noble may be as poor as the proverbial church mouse. The citizen who owns money, merchandise, ships, enterprise, and skill may gain all kinds of honorary titles, from councillor-at-law to Privy Councillor; his breast may be covered with all the crosses, stars, ribands, and orders of the State, which, though rarely bestowed on commoners, are by no means impossible to attain: even so, he must not, with all these distinctions, entertain any hope of being raised into the ranks of the nobility. On the other hand, the nobility, comprising the two grades of count and baron, are very numerous. In by far the greatest number of cases they may be described as pitiably

Photo by Neurdein Frères] [*Paris.*

A BELGIAN PEASANT WOMAN AND HER DRAUGHT-DOGS.

poor. Counts and barons in society are plentiful as pebbles in a brook. One reason for this is that every son in a noble's family bears his father's title, even if he do not inherit any of his property. The penniless inheritor of a barren title hands it on to his descendants. In the same way all the daughters are countesses and baronesses. Similarly the country gentleman, or better class of farmer, holds himself aloof from the peasant-proprietor; and the people of the towns are also a class apart. These sharp social distinctions have at any rate their good side. Each man is contented with his lot in life, and does not seek to be anything but what he is. The State wisely fosters this spirit, by enabling him, as we have seen, to take a pride in the intelligent performance of his work.

At one time the Danish peasants were serfs. In 1788 serfdom was abolished, and provisions were made enabling the people to acquire for themselves the land on which they had up to that time worked in a condition little above that of slaves.

Nearly all the Danes are in religion earnest Lutherans. Other creeds are tolerated to the fullest extent, but not 1 per cent. of the inhabitants belong to any other than the Danish Lutheran State Church.

Photo by Payne Jennings [*Ashtead.*

A NATIVE OF THE ARDENNES.

BELGIUM.

THE little kingdom of Belgium has an area of 11,373 square miles, being about one-eighth of the size of Great Britain. It makes up for its small dimensions by being the most densely populated country in Europe. In 1898 the population was 6,670,000. There is no such thing as a Belgian race of people, though there is a Belgian nation. In the days of Julius Cæsar the country was inhabited by the Belgæ, and formed part of what was afterwards known as Gallia Belgica. The Belgæ appear to have differed in dialect, institutions, and laws from the Celts of the other parts of Gaul. They are described by ancient writers as "fair" Celts. This epithet, as well as their distinctive attributes, would seem to point to considerable admixture with the Germans, if indeed they are not to be regarded as a Celtic-speaking German tribe.

At the present day the population of Belgium is partly of Celtic and partly of Teutonic origin. The Flemings are still as clearly Teutonic as they were a thousand years ago, while Celtic characteristics are as unmistakably apparent in the Walloons, who are descended from the ancient Belgæ. Both sections are members of the same Church, and have other interests in common. Yet, though subject to one king and governed by the same code of laws, they have not become so thoroughly blended as to produce a distinct national type.

The men are of medium height, muscular, and of upright bearing. The Walloons in the southern provinces are nearly as brisk in deportment and as polished in manners as their French neighbours. The Flemings, who inhabit the western and northern provinces, are endowed with greater vivacity than the Dutch, whose land borders theirs and who belong to the same race.

Photo by Payne Jennings] [*Ashtead.*

A BELGIAN MAN AND HIS WIFE, ARDENNES.

French is the official language of the country. About 45 per cent. of the inhabitants speak Flemish, 41 per cent. French, while 11 per cent. speak both French and Flemish.

There is nothing in the prevalent costume of the Belgians to distinguish it from that which may be seen in the streets of London or Paris. Apart from the capital, however, their cities still maintain characteristics which do not change with the caprice of fashion. The observer is forcibly convinced that they grew into existence in the romantic past, when the conditions of life were unlike those that prevail in the nineteenth century. What were held to be the most prominent characteristics of six historic Belgian cities were mentioned in monkish verses composed many centuries ago. Those characteristics are said to remain to some extent at the present time. The Latin lines, translated, proclaim: Brussels rejoices in noble men; Antwerp in money; Ghent in hatters; Bruges in pretty girls; Louvain in learned men; and Malines in fools. Hatters were said to be characteristic of Ghent because of the frequency with which the king found it necessary to humiliate some of the ever-turbulent citizens, by condemning them to traverse the streets under guard, with manacles on their wrists and heavy iron chains on their necks. The reason for distinguishing the people of Malines as "mostly fools" is the story that once, when they saw the moon shining through the cathedral tower, they thought the cherished building was on fire, sounded the alarm, roused up the watch, and did all they could to extinguish the conflagration by means of pumps, hose, and buckets of water. The Flemings, in what they considered an improved version of the poem, called the luxurious inhabitants of Brussels "chicken-eaters"; the citizens of Ghent "hat-bearers"; the people of Louvain "cow-shooters," because they once fired upon a herd of cows, mistaking them for the enemy; and the citizens of Malines "moon-extinguishers," with reference to their action in saving their cathedral from supposed fire.

The history of the Belgians is thickly studded with episodes, each of which illustrates the bold, generous, freedom-loving spirit by which they were animated. The people are

reasonably proud of their past. The bravery, intelligence, and energy by which they won distinction when the sword was the arbiter of fortune are strong as ever in the Belgians, but are now exercised under conditions widely different from those of the past. They excel in the arts of peace, as formerly they were proficient in the arts of war. They now present an attractive picture of a prosperous, peaceable, rich, and thoroughly comfortable little nation. Belgium is essentially a manufacturing country. Machinery, iron and steel, glass, cottons and linen, are some of its principal manufactures, while lace is, from its association with the name of the capital, perhaps its best-known product. The Socialists appear to be very numerous, and probably the social edifice is not very secure just now.

The Belgians still practise at Ostend one of their ancient rites expressive of their appreciation of the sources which contribute to wealth and comfort. Ostend is the second port of Belgium, a railway terminus, and station for the Dover mail-boats and London steamers. Several religious and popular festivals are held there in the summer months. The most interesting is the procession on St. Peter's Day, the 29th of June. It recalls the ancient ceremony of marriage with the sea at Venice. In presence of a vast concourse of fishermen and their families, and as many of the summer visitors as choose to witness the imposing ceremony, the sea is solemnly blessed.

Education is as backward in Belgium as we have just seen that it is advanced in Denmark. In 1896 it was estimated that nearly 27 per cent. of the population were unable to read.

The religion of the country is Roman Catholic. Nearly all the inhabitants at least nominally profess this faith.

Photo by P. H. Fincham] [*London.*

A FAMILY GROUP OF MARKEN PEOPLE.

Photo by N. J. M. Steinmetz] [*The Hague.*
A DUTCH MARRIED WOMAN, NORTH HOLLAND.

HOLLAND.

THE Dutch people are mainly descended from the Germanic branch of the great European families of nations. Teutonic hordes overran the country at different times. The latest of these were the Franks and the Saxons, who became the dominant peoples about the third century. Holland has been the home of freedom from the earliest times to which historic records ascend, and the persecuted in other lands sought refuge there at different periods. Portuguese and German Jews in great numbers found safety there. On many occasions also Britons, Scandinavians, and Frenchmen settled in the Netherlands in large numbers, and were finally absorbed in the population. The result is that the original Dutch type of race has been so much modified that it is now difficult to trace the distinctive physical traits of the Teuton among the Dutch.

Holland is a maritime country, containing 12,648 square miles. The land is flat and low, intersected by numerous canals and connecting rivers. In the Middle Ages it formed part of the Low Countries, and at the present day it has the alternative name of Netherlands. In 1898 its population was returned at 5,075,000, showing that, after Belgium and Saxony, it is the most densely peopled country in Europe.

In character the Dutch are brave, stubborn, and honest. Taciturn and cold in their manner, they are particularly reserved towards strangers, and at the same time remarkably blunt and outspoken. They are as a rule hearty feeders. Even among the poorer classes starvation is less common than in any other civilised country. Salt herring is one of the most highly esteemed of their articles of diet. Smoked eels may also be mentioned as a favourite dish. They are usually sold from barrows in the street, with pickled cucumbers and hard-boiled eggs. Gin and tobacco are consumed freely, but their ill-effects are counteracted by the open-air life of the people and the hard work they get through. It is chiefly at the *kermis*, or fairs, which play a large part in the life of the Dutch, that intemperance shows its usual signs.

The well-known Dutchman of the caricaturist, the man with wide breeches and a build which requires all their amplitude, is nowadays seen more frequently in pictures than in the streets of Dutch towns, although he is far from being extinct. The town-dweller is rather spare of habit, but his wife generally makes up in her comfortable proportions for his lack of flesh. The Hollander is fond of his home. A farmer's house can generally boast of good furniture, while the citizens frequently live in a luxurious style.

The Golden Age of Holland was the first half of the seventeenth century. At that time the carrying trade of the world was in the hands of the Dutch, while Amsterdam was regarded as the most important commercial centre. In their long wars with Spain they gradually succeeded to the Portuguese possessions which had fallen to the Spanish. In Cromwell's time and in the earlier part of the reign of Charles II. the English were engaged in a protracted struggle to put down Dutch monopoly. England in turn acquired the supremacy of the sea, and replaced Holland as mistress of a great colonial empire. The Dutch still retain considerable possessions in the East Indies.

With such a past history it is not surprising to find that the Dutchman is fond of travel, and takes a broad interest in the doings of the outside world. He is consequently much less narrow and pedantic than his natural characteristics would lead one to suppose.

The commanding position that Holland at one time held among the nations of the world surrounds the stolid Hollander of the present day with a halo of romance. Hallam has said of the Dutch: "A great people, a people fertile of men of various ability and erudition, a people of scholars, philosophers, historians, and poets." When we remember the great names of Scaliger, Grotius, and Rembrandt, we cannot but feel that this encomium is deserved. The late Professor Thorold Rogers was not less enthusiastic in his eulogy. He claimed that the revolt of the Netherlands from the dominion of Spain and the success of Holland were the beginning of modern civilisation, the Dutch, in his opinion, having taught Europe everything which it knows,—surely a paradoxical statement!

Many of the old Dutch customs are no longer practised, yet the people still retain certain usages. For example, in several towns the birth of a child is made known by the exhibition of a placard (pink for a girl and blue for a boy), gaily decorated with silk and lace, outside the mother's dwelling. Then the friends of the family as they appear are entertained with mulled wine and cinnamon cakes. All festivities in Holland are attended with a good deal of heavy feasting.

A betrothal is an elaborate affair. Before the wedding comes off, printed circulars are sent to the friends of the bride and bridegroom, and receptions are held, at which the couple are seated on decorated chairs, on a platform under a canopy of evergreens. The parents and near relations sit on each side of them, so as to form a semicircle. The visitors, admitted one at a time to this audience, deliver set little speeches, with appropriate allusions to the coming event, and then retire to partake of the good things provided for their entertainment.

As in other Teutonic countries, the different periods of married life are divided into the copper, the silver, and the golden stages. The first begins at twelve and the last after fifty years of wedlock. Each is celebrated in a pleasing way, by friends offering presents made of the metals from which these epochs are named.

Dr. Brown mentions several curious marriage customs prevailing among the peasants of North Holland. In Drenthe, he tells us, it was usual for the wedding guests to be summoned by two bachelors, who carried wands gaily decorated with ribands. On arriving at each house, they repeated a number of doggerel verses, the burden of which was generally the bill of fare at the coming feast. At one time no citizen was allowed to marry out of his native town, except on payment of a heavy fine.

"When a death occurs in a Dutch family," says the same authority, "*aanspreken*, a sort of 'mutes,' dressed in black-tailed coats, black knee-breeches, silk stockings, shoes with silver buckles, white ties, and enormous cocked hats, with rosettes at the side, and two long pieces of ribbon hanging down their backs, go from house to house announcing the mournful news. At the funeral there is usually much feasting, and in the festive province of Drenthe so freely were all comers regaled that the vagabonds collected from all parts of the country, until a death in a wealthy family was invariably followed by a drunken orgie. In some parts of Zeeland a quantity of straw used to be placed on the doorstep of the house where the sad event had occurred, the size of the heap being regulated by the position of the deceased. After the interment the straw was burnt, this custom being, it has been suggested, a survival from earlier days, when the dead were cremated."

Photo by N. J. M. Steinmetz [*The Hague.*

A DUTCH MAN, VOLENDAM.

62

The majority of the inhabitants of Holland,

about three-fifths, belong to the Dutch Reformed Church; the remainder are Roman Catholics and Jews, these being centred principally in the large towns, such as Amsterdam, where there are 70,000.

Photo by P. H. Fincham] *[London.*
A DUTCH PEASANT WOMAN, SHOWING HEAD-DRESS.

GREAT BRITAIN AND IRELAND.

England.

The reader will hardly need to be told that many races have gone to the making of the Englishman as he is to-day. Much learned controversy has been expended on the question whether the Celtic or the Teutonic element predominates in his composition. The anthropological researches of the late Professor Huxley led him to the conclusion that the English are "vastly less Teutonic than their speech." It will be sufficient for the purpose of this work to give some account of the various peoples—Iberian, Celtic, Teutonic, and Scandinavian—which have left their mark on the inhabitants of this country, without attempting to make any contribution to what is a very complicated problem.

Photo by N. J. M. Steinmetz] *[The Hague.*
A MAID-OF-ALL-WORK, HOLLAND.

It is generally conceded that when Julius Cæsar landed in Britain he found a population of Celtic origin and speech, who were supposed to have crossed from Belgic Gaul, and to have absorbed a pre-existing race. This race was a remnant of the Neolithic Iberians, a people characterised by dark hair and short stature, of whom the Basques in Spain and France are regarded as the the living representatives. The Celts were, on the other hand, tall and fair. Professor Huxley accounted for the fair and dark types of the modern Englishman by attributing the former to the Celtic and Teutonic races, and the latter to the pre-Celtic inhabitants. The Celtic stratum of these islands may be divided into two sections—the Cymric and the Gaelic. The Welsh and the Cornishmen belong to the Cymric branch, while the Gaels comprise the Erse of Ireland, the Manx, and of course the Gaels of the Highlands of Scotland.

It is from Cæsar that we get the first authentic account of these primitive inhabitants. He describes the Cantii, the people of Kent, as being more civilised than the rest, from their constant intercourse with their brethren of Continental Gaul. He also

describes the men as painting themselves with woad, wearing skins, and as having moustaches, but no beards.

The Romans themselves apparently did not mix with the Britons. Their position was that of a military garrison, somewhat similar to that of the English in India and Egypt.

Next in order come the Scandinavian and Teutonic elements. The constant harrying of our coast by northern pirates, Norsemen and Danes, and the recurring hordes of Angles, Saxons, and Jutes, brought fresh blood into the people among whom they formed settlements. The Norman Conquest added another layer of Celtic and Latin and Teutonic stock. From the reign of Stephen to that of Edward III. Flemings were introduced and settled here from time to time, while Dutch, French, and other refugees sought refuge in this land of freedom. When it is remembered that all these peoples have intermingled in the narrow compass of our shores, it will be admitted that it requires some courage to attempt to resolve the physical and mental characteristics of the Englishman into their original racial elements. It is a truism of science that chemical fusion of various substances results in a product which differs materially from its constituents. In the same way it may be said that this motley amalgam of races has produced a type which has well-marked characteristics of its own.

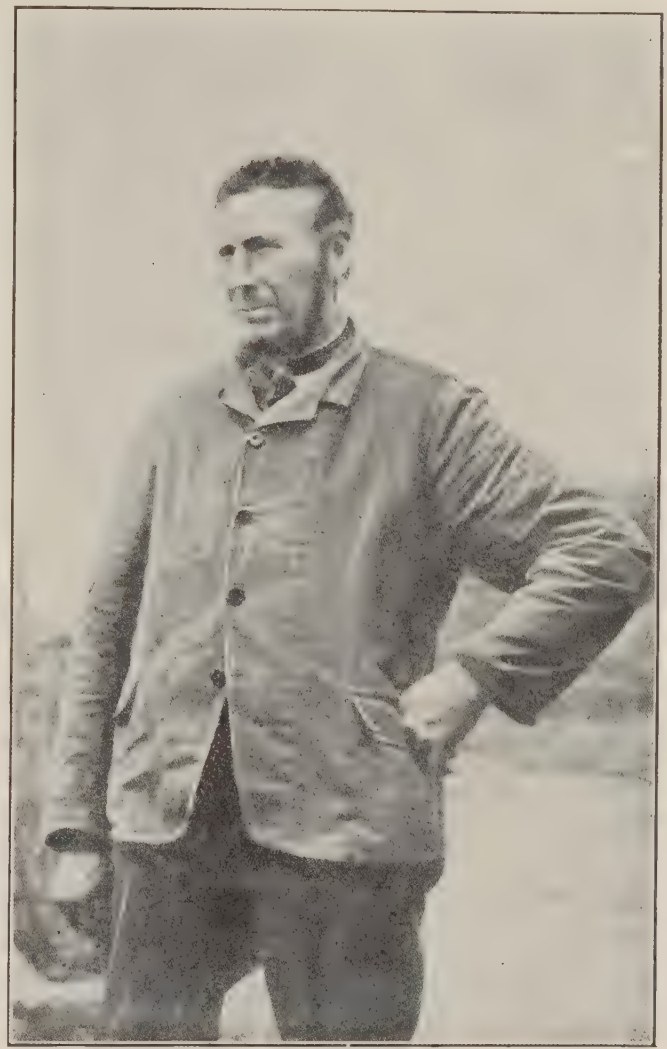


Photo by Mr. W. R. Bland] [*Derby.*

A DERBYSHIRE YEOMAN.

Physically the English are among the finest of the civilised races. Their tall stature they owe to the Saxon and Scandinavian elements in their composition. The fair complexion, blue eyes, and florid aspect so often seen among them are also inherited from the same sources. They are remarkable for vigour of body and power of endurance. Their constitutional energy is probably greater than that of any other people, and shows itself in a fondness for outdoor life. The national enthusiasm for sport and athletics is a combination of the Celtic love of amusement and the Scandinavian delight in bodily prowess. From the Celt the Englishman probably derives some of his mental alertness, sociability, wit, and humour. Patience, reserve, love of adventure, and a certain coldness of manner must be ascribed to the Teutonic part of his ancestry. In fact, there are few of his mental characteristics which cannot be traced to one or other of these great stocks. At the same time it must be admitted that the English temperament has moulded the leading qualities of the various races from which it is drawn into a type which is as markedly distinct as the English physique.

The English character has been largely developed by its historical surroundings. In the days of the Plantagenets England was very far from being the centre of a great colonial

Photo by Payne Jennings] *[Ashtead.*

A LOWESTOFT SMACKSMAN.

empire. Her manufactures were then in a state of infancy, if indeed they can be said to have existed at all. Her principal source of revenue was the wool which she exported to Flanders. A writer of the fifteenth century describes the English as "being seldom fatigued with hard labour" and leading a spiritual and refined life. Indolent and contemplative, the Englishman of this epoch is said to have been pre-eminent in urbanity and totally devoid of domestic affection. England first began to show a little more energy when the Flemish manufacturers transferred their industry to this country, after it had been ruined in the religious wars of the Low Countries with Spain. The discovery of the New World, the adventures of the Elizabethan Age, our long wars with Holland resulting in our acquisition of the carrying trade of the world, must all be taken into account, when we examine the mental characteristics of the race. Without these external influences it is probable that the Englishman of to-day would not have improved upon the prosaic person he is described to have been by the fifteenth-century writers. On the other hand, his Viking ancestors no doubt supplied him with the physical energy to avail himself of the great opportunities which offered themselves. At the beginning of the sixteenth century he seems to have already developed a trait which is regarded with disfavour by his critics and with a certain amount of complacency by himself. In the year 1500 a Venetian traveller wrote: "The English are great lovers of themselves and of everything belonging to them. They think that there are no other men than themselves and no other world but England; and whenever they see a handsome foreigner, they say that he looks like an Englishman, and it is a great pity he should not be an Englishman; and whenever they partake of any delicacy with a foreigner, they ask him whether such a thing is made in his country." It would appear from this that the indefinable trait in the national character which is aptly described as "insularity" is by no means a recent development. "To see ourselves as others see us" is often wholesome, but seldom pleasant. However, one great critic who made the English character his special study speaks in terms of the highest enthusiasm. Ralph Waldo Emerson, the American writer, has summed up the race as the best the world has seen. The English love of fair play, common sense, and practical ability are the features that he singled out for praise. "Pretension and vapouring are once for all distasteful. They keep to the other extreme of low tone in dress and manners. They avoid pretension and go right to the heart of the thing. They hate nonsense, sentimentalism, and high-flown expression; they use a studied plainness. Even Brummel their fop was marked by the severest simplicity in dress. They pride themselves on the absence of everything theatrical in the public business, and on conciseness and going to the point in private affairs. But it is in the deep traits of race that the fortunes of nations are written; and however derived—whether it was a more gifted tribe or mixture of tribes, the air, or what circumstance, that mixed for them the golden mean of temperament—here exists the best stock in the world, broad-fronted, broad-bottomed, best for depth, range, and equability, men of aplomb and reserve, great range and many moods, strong instincts, yet apt for culture;

Photo by Lafayette] [*Dublin.*

A TYPE OF ENGLISH BEAUTY.

Photo by Payne Jennings] [*Ashtead.*

AN ENGLISH GIRL.

war-class as well as clerks; earls and tradesmen; wise minority as well as foolish majority; abysmal temperament, hiding wells of wrath, and glooms on which no sunshine settles; alternated with a common sense and humanity which hold them fast to every piece of cheerful duty; making this temperament a sea to which all storms are superficial; a race to which their fortunes flow, as if they alone had the elastic organisation at once fine and robust enough for dominion; as if the burly, inexpressive, now mute and contumacious, now fierce and sharp-tongued dragon, which once made the island light with his fiery breath, had bequeathed his ferocity to his conqueror." Even in the national failing of "insularity" Emerson sees a blessing in disguise. "But nature makes nothing in vain, and the little superfluity of self-regard in the English brain is one of the secrets of their power and history. For it sets every man on being and doing what he really is and can. It takes away a dodging, skulking, secondary air, and encourages a frank and manly bearing, so that each man makes the most of himself, and loses no opportunity for want of pushing. A man's personal defects will commonly have with the rest of the world precisely that importance which they have to himself. If he makes light of them, so will other men."

Wales.

The inhabitants of Wales belong almost wholly to the Cymric branch of the Celtic race. The Welsh is a distinct nationality, with a language and literature of its own and a population of 1,519,163. When the Saxon invaders of England drove the Celts inland from the eastern coasts, the latter entrenched themselves in the wilds of Cornwall and the mountain-fastnesses of Wales. The Norman conquest of England by no means involved that of Wales, which, from its natural formation, presented a series of impregnable fortresses to the primitive weapons of that time. William the Conqueror had to leave the task of its subjugation uncompleted to his successors. Henry II. and John met with very doubtful success in their repeated efforts to subdue the troublesome province. It was not till the reign of Edward I. that its independence was finally crushed by the defeat of its Prince, Llewellyn, in 1283, when the English monarch was aided by the internal dissensions into which the country was thrown. Edward created his son, who had been born at Carnarvon, Prince of Wales, and that title has ever since been borne by the eldest son of our sovereigns.

Physically the Welsh are, on the average, of shorter stature than the other peoples of the United Kingdom. Dark hair is almost universal with them. These two attributes go far to prove the assertion that the Cymric Celt intermingled freely with the original Neolithic inhabitants of these islands.

In their mental characteristics they possess all the liveliness, romance, and eloquence of the Celtic temperament. The strong sense of nationality by which they have always been possessed has been kept alive and fostered by their separate language and literature. Prizes are given at their annual meetings—the Eisteddfods—for original poems and compositions

which are recited on these occasions. Cymric is the every-day tongue of the people, and many of them can speak nothing else. Magazines and newspapers are published in the national language, and scholars and poets encourage the people to maintain it against the invidious encroachment of English. The Welsh are a musical people; and the harp, on which they have from time to time produced excellent players, may perhaps be considered their national instrument.

In costume they possess no particularly striking features, unless it be the quaint form of tall hat worn by women in country places.

Large numbers of the people belong to the religious body known as Calvinist Methodists, but the Establishment is a branch of our own Church. Christianity was introduced into Wales not later than the year 400, though the exact date is unknown. British Christians, driven from their homes, sought a refuge in the security of this mountainous country, and at once

Photo by Valentine & Sons, Ltd.] [*Dundee.*

A GROUP OF FISHERMEN, DEVONSHIRE.

divided it into ecclesiastical divisions. The four Welsh Sees of St. David, Llandaff, St. Asaph, and Bangor are thus of great antiquity.

Scotland.

The inhabitants of Caledonia, to use the ancient name of this country, may be roughly divided into Highlanders and Lowlanders, with a joint population of 4,025,647. The former are Celts, while the latter are Saxons, being for the most part of the same race as the English on the other side of the Border. Shetland and Orkney and a great part of the east coast are Scandinavian. It need hardly be remarked that at the present day a pure Teuton or a pure Celt—or, for that matter, a pure specimen of any of the great original races of mankind—is practically unknown. The most that can be stated with certainty is that the various countries of the world have clearly defined characteristics, which entitle their inhabitants to be regarded as representatives

of one or other of the great racial stocks, in spite of admixture with other peoples. With this limitation, the North of Scotland may be described as Celtic; the South, as Teutonic and Scandinavian. In physical and mental characteristics the Lowlander has all the attributes of the stock from which he is descended. He is distinguished for prudence in business transactions, reserve, thrift, and steadiness. With all his admirable qualities he is, however, less interesting from the point of view of the ethnologist than his fellow-countryman in the Highlands. Almost pure specimens of the Gallic type, so far as appearance goes, are to be met with here and there even at the present day. According to ancient writers, the Gauls were tall of stature, very fair, and red-haired, or at least fair-haired. Red hair is an almost universal character of the Scotchman of the extreme North, and red- or yellow-haired men form the majority of the population. At the same time people with dark hair, grey eyes, and dark complexion are seen even in the most exclusively Gaelic regions. This is to be explained partly by the absorption of the original Neolithic population, and partly by the intermixture that must of necessity have taken place with later immigrants. The Highlander has also the mental characteristics of the Celt, which declare themselves in his romantic temperament, aristocratic tendencies, and fidelity to the head of his clan. Family pride is a pleasing weakness of the Scottish Celt, and he glories in being able to trace his descent from some great chieftain of historical or even mythical origin. Brand-new titles and great wealth unaccompanied by good birth have little or no glamour for him. On the other hand, he will never cease to reverence the head of his clan, however involved his finances may become. In his eyes a laird who cannot afford to live on the land of his fathers is a grander person than a mere millionaire. The pride of clan is fostered to a certain extent by the great annual gatherings which take place in the autumn in different Highland centres, when bag-pipes, reels, and games all testify to the strength of national sentiment. Each of the great clans, too—the Fraser, Stuart, Murray, Gordon, Cameron, and the rest—has its distinctive tartan. Many of the great noblemen wear the kilt, and their households and dependents follow suit. The present Duke of Atholl may sometimes be seen on a Sunday morning marching to church at the head of his retainers, wearing the red tartan of the Murray clan. There is doubtless much that is artificial in these national manifestations. They are picturesque, however, and serve to keep alive a popular sentiment which has a strong and real basis. Of late years, we are sorry to say, the influence of rich Englishmen and Americans has become greater, and there is a grave fear lest the Highlanders now employed as gillies and mere dependants of rich sportsmen should lose some of their pristine virtues.

Photo by J. W. McLellan, London.
A CITY WAIF.

The Gaelic tongue is spoken by about 10 per cent. of the Scottish population, but the Gaelic-speaking area is diminishing. The spread of English education is gradually ousting the old language from its place. The Gaelic language has a strong similarity to the Celtic dialect of the Irish. There are certain differences in the pronunciation, grammar, idioms, and vocabulary; but in all essential points the language of the Highlanders bears a closer resemblance to that spoken in Munster and Connaught than Low Dutch to High Dutch.

Folk-lore, superstitions, and a belief in "second sight" are characteristic of the Scottish Celt. The people are musical, and rejoice in the possession of many ballads. In the Hebrides, the islands off the west coast, ancient forms of land tenure are still extant. The crofters of these islands occupy the land on what is known there as the "run-rig" system. This term is Gaelic for "common-division." A "constable," elected by the people of the town-land, has the duty of looking after the whole community. He appoints the parish shepherds and herdsmen; he controls the time and the amount of work done by the people; he looks after

Photo by the Photochrome Co.] [*London.*

A WELSH WOMAN AT HER SPINNING-WHEEL.

Photo by Alex. Inglis] [*Edinburgh.*

A NEWHAVEN FISHWIFE.

the roads, and sees that each inhabitant keeps his part in repair; he sees that the flocks and herds are tended in the common pasture; and is, in fact, the chief executive officer of the township. The crofter who is chosen for this important office removes his shoes and stockings, uncovers his head, and, taking some earth in his hand, swears in the presence of Heaven to be faithful to his trust. There are various modifications of this primitive system, but they are all based on a mode of land tenure—namely, agriculture in common—which still exists in some parts of Ireland, Wales, and even England, in the shape of commonable rights of pasture, turbary, and the like. They go back to a time when the land was regarded, not as the absolute property of the chief of the tribe or clan, but as giving sustenance to all its members. Sir Henry Maine, in his work on ancient law, points out that in a patriarchally governed society the eldest son succeeds to the nominal proprietorship of its property, but has correlative duties not involved in the conception of proprietorship. Roman jurisprudence, like our own law, regarded the possession of property as equivalent to absolute ownership, and refused to take notice of the liabilities which it was formerly supposed to entail.

The Presbyterian is the Established Church in Scotland, having superseded the Episcopal Church in that position at the Restoration in 1688. Its members are estimated at about half the whole population of Scotland. Another important religious body is the Free Church, which split off from the Establishment in 1843. It is based on the spiritual independence of the Church, and claims the right of each congregation to elect its own minister. The Episcopal Church numbers over 44,000 communicants.

Ireland.

In 1891 the population of Ireland was returned at 4,704,750. The numbers have been rapidly decreasing since the year 1845, when they were almost double of what they now are. Famine and consequent disease, and the great impulse given by stress at home to emigration, are accountable for the decrease. The inhabitants are in great measure of almost pure Celtic stock. The Teutonic element is represented by the English and Scottish settlers in Ulster,

Leinster, and parts of Munster; but as their introduction is comparatively recent in the history of nations, and confined to particular localities, they may for the purposes of ethnological classification be left out. The typical Irishman is a Celt, and possesses in a marked degree the physical and mental qualities of that race. Food, climate, and changed conditions of life account for the modifications of the racial character, wherever they are found. Many of the Irish of the present day have the red or yellow hair and tall stature which characterised the Celt in ancient times. The black hair seen especially in Western Ireland is generally explained by the persistence of Neolithic blood in the people, who have doubtless absorbed the pre-existing race. Dr. Brown sums up the average physical characteristics of the Celts. They are, he says, rather broad-headed, of great cranial capacity, middle-sized, generally vigorous in constitution, and rather short-sighted, large-chinned, round-faced, with great naso-frontal depression, fresh-coloured complexion, neck rather short, shoulders and chest broad, auburn hair, and eyes with grey iris—though these typical eyes are not often seen—and with a dry, nervous temperament. Many of these attributes are seen in the Irish.

As a race the people are noted for their lively imagination, enthusiasm, and quickness of intellect. They are warm-hearted, and easily roused to anger, but as easily pacified. Their worst enemies cannot deny their conspicuous valour on the battle-field. They are wanting in the capacity for patient effort and the steady determination of the Teutonic nations. Their mental qualities make rather for individuality of character than for national greatness. Ireland has had her full share in producing men of mark and distinction in all branches of public life. The question of the capacity of the Irish for self-government has divided English political parties of recent years. It is claimed, on the one hand, that they are incapable of sinking private differences in the common cause. On the other, it is urged that the national sentiment is strong enough to counteract this defect.

The Irish, like the Scottish Celts—and, we might add, in a lesser degree the Welsh

Photo by Valentine & Sons, Ltd.] [*Dundee.*

IN A SHETLAND CROFTER'S HOME.

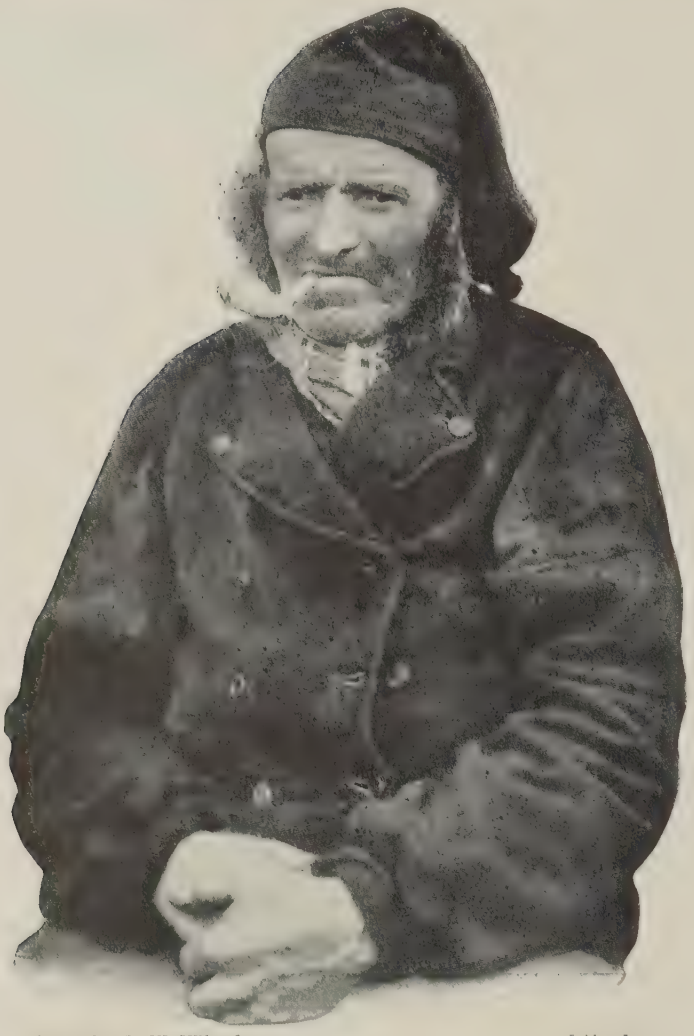


Photo by G. W. Wilson] [*Aberdeen.*

AN OLD SCOT SALT.

and the Cornish—have spread into every land, and influenced the people of every country among whom they have settled. In America, and especially in the United States, they run rivalry with the Teutons from Germany and Scandinavia in supplying the greatest number of immigrants. As yet they have not ceased to be a separate body in the nation, but in time they will amalgamate with the rest of the population, and thus form a superior race. To the sturdy good-sense, manly self-reliance, quiet resolution, natural aptitude for self-government and organisation, which characterise the one, are added the quick intellect, the vivid imagination, the warm feelings, the poetical susceptibilities, and the genuine refinement of manner which are rarely acquired by the Teuton, but come as a gift of Nature to the Celt.

In our leading colonies, Canada and Australia especially, the Irishman has taken his place side by side with other representatives of the United Kingdom, and is often found in the legislature and cabinet. Colonial premiers have sprung as frequently from the Celtic as from the Teutonic stock. That the Irish should do so much better out of their country than at home is a fact which goes far to show that the admirable qualities of the race only need favourable conditions in which to assert themselves.

The Irish peasant is for the most part unenterprising, improvident, and desirous of taking life easily. These traits are partly inherent in his temperament. Yet it must be remembered in his defence that until recent years very little has been done to encourage him to cultivate the soil in a more productive manner. His temperament is serene and cheerful under all difficulties. Throughout Ireland a high standard prevails with regard to the treatment of women, and chastity is a feature of social life of which the Irish may be justly proud.

The Erse tongue, which we have seen to have much in common with the Gaelic of Scotland, is still spoken by a considerable number of the people. In parts of Connaught, Munster, and Donegal in the extreme north-west, as many as 38,000 of the people were unable to speak English in 1891.

Little is known of the history of Ireland before the fifth century, when it was converted to Christianity. Irish missionaries founded monasteries in the western islands of Scotland. Iona is a monument of their religious activity during the four succeeding centuries after the conversion of Ireland. Politically the Irish Celts of this period seem to have been split up into tribes, headed by various petty princes, without any common leader. Their want of union made them an easy prey to the Scandinavian pirates who descended on their shores, and

Photo by Valentine & Sons, Ltd.] [*Dundee.*

TWO OLD MEN OF SKYE.

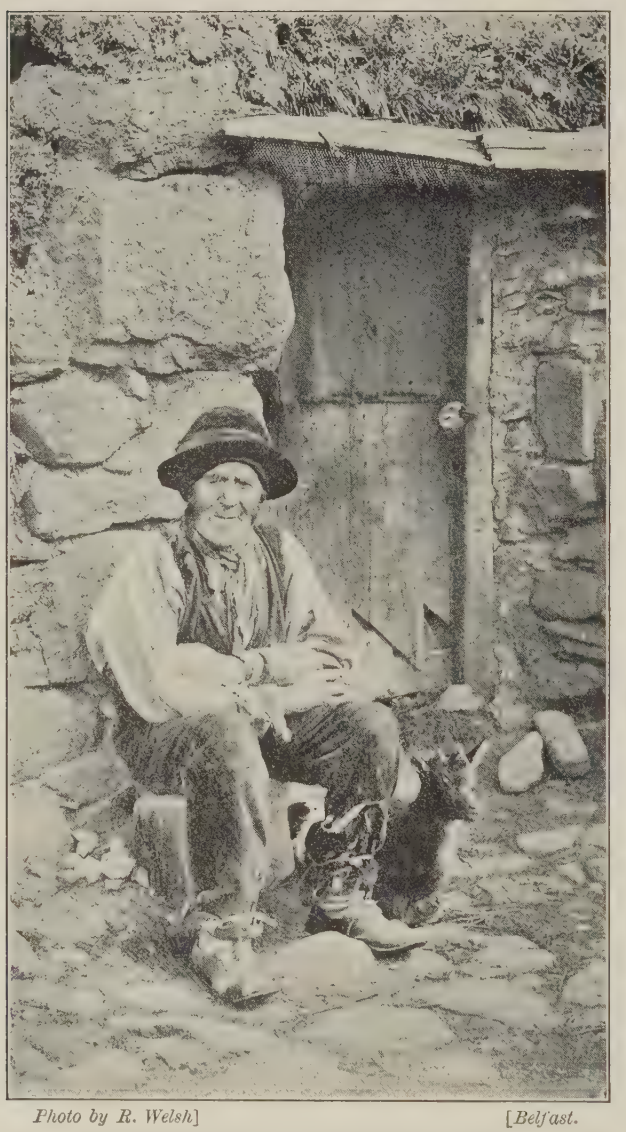


Photo by R. Welsh] *[Belfast.*

A NATIVE OF MOURNE.

finally to the English. Even so, the conquest of Ireland, begun in 1170, was not synonymous with its pacification, and was not really completed till the surrender of Limerick in 1691. Since the abolition of the national parliament in 1800, the Irish members are returned to the Imperial Parliament at Westminster.

In his diet the Irish peasant is remarkably frugal. Under-feeding is general, and stirabout, or porridge, with potatoes and buttermilk, form the chief fare. Tea is drunk in enormous quantities, and of formidable strength. The visitor who enters a cabin in Donegal will generally see a pot of tea simmering on the smouldering peat fire, which never goes out, summer or winter, night or day. Tea is often the only extravagance which the poorer classes in the north allow themselves. They pay a very high price for it, often four-and-sixpence the pound. A good deal of the prevalent insanity is traced to excessive tea-drinking.

If a young woman's *fiancé* dies, it is a common practice among the peasantry for her to solemnly "give back her promise." "We had given one another a *hand*-promise," said an old woman, speaking of her dead lover, "and I had to go, when he was dead, an' take him by the right hand, afore witness, to give back my promise." A belief in the fairies, once so prevalent, still lingered on in some parts of the country not long ago. As an example of this kind of folk-lore, we may mention here that the country people used to say that if a man, at his marriage, unbuttoned one button of the right knee, the fairies could not harm him in any way.

In some parts of Ireland—the "Mullet of Mayo," for instance—there is a strange survival, namely, the wedding dance with a straw mask, and in parts of Leitrim with a straw petticoat. On this subject the writer consulted the Rev. W. S. Green, an authority on these matters, who writes from Dublin Castle as follows: "The Wedding Masks to which you refer are used by the 'Strawboys' (or Clagheras) at weddings. A gang of nine visits the home on the evening of the wedding. The 'captain' dances with the bride, and the others with the other girls. They leave in a short time, and another gang arrives. It is unlucky if their identity is recognised. In the west of this country it is still much in vogue, but dying out in other parts. I have heard that a similar custom exists in Wexford."

The "wake" is a well-known institution in Ireland. When a death occurs, the relatives of the deceased abandon themselves to several days of extravagant grief, ending in an equally extravagant orgie, in which they are joined by their friends.

The Irishman, like the Afridi, loves a fight for its own sake, quite apart from its cause, which is often forgotten. In this respect he differs materially from the Latin races, which treasure up grievances until a fitting opportunity presents itself for revenge.

Photo by Schroeder] [*Zurich.*

AN OLD IRISHWOMAN AT HER SPINNING-WHEEL.

The prevailing religion is Roman Catholic, 75 per cent. of the population professing that faith. The Protestant Church of Ireland has over 600,000 members. It was at one time the State Church, but was disestablished and disendowed by an Act passed in 1869. Another influential religious body is the Presbyterian Church, which numbers over 444,000 members.

The Isle of Man.

Before leaving the British Isles for America, we must briefly mention the Manxmen, who are partly another Celtic survival, for they belong mainly to the Gaelic division of the race. There is also a Norwegian element, which has mixed with the original Celtic stock. The Isle of Man has an area of 145,325 acres and a population of 55,598. The language, which is rapidly going ou of use, is similar in many respects to the Gaelic spoken in Scotland and Ireland. Many of the old Celtic superstitions still survive, and a belief in the evil eye may still be found in the more remote parts of the island. Man has its own legislature, consisting of a Governor and Council and the House of Keys. The two houses are known as the Tynwald, which is the lineal descendant of the *folk-moot* (people's parliament) which used to meet on the Tynwald Hill. After a Bill has passed the Legislature and received the Royal assent, it does not become law until it is promulgated in the English and Manx languages on the Tynwald Hill.

Photo by J. W. McLellan] *[London.*

AN IRISH PEASANT-GIRL.

Photo by Lafayette] *[Dublin.*

A TYPE OF IRISH BEAUTY.

CHAPTER XXII.

ARCTIC AMERICA AND GREENLAND.

PREVIOUS to the great wave of immigration from Europe which set in soon after the Spanish discovery (for discovery it practically was) and conquest of America, the whole of the inhabited or habitable portions of the New World and Greenland were populated by aboriginal tribes more or less distinct from those found in other regions of the globe, and, for the most part, presenting a remarkable similarity in physical characters to one another. With the exception of the Eskimo of Greenland and Arctic America, which, as is shown below, are markedly distinct from the other races of the New World, all these peoples were by the Spaniards called "Indians"; and Indians, frequently with the distinctive prefix North or South American, they have ever since remained. Properly of course they, and they alone, have an hereditary claim to be designated Americans; but that title is now assumed by the white inhabitants of the United States, with whom, as with all other settlers of European descent, and also the African Negroes imported into many of the countries of the New World, we are not here concerned.

That by far the greater portion of the aboriginal population of America was derived from Eastern Asia, and that the migration took place by way of Bering Strait, is now generally admitted by all capable of forming a trustworthy opinion; the migration having taken place at a comparatively remote epoch, when there was probably still a land connection between the eastern extremity of Asia and Alaska. Opinions are, however, still divided as to whether the Eskimo arrived by the same route; an alternative idea being that their ancestors reached the present habitat of the race by a presumed land connection between Europe and Greenland by way of Iceland. If the latter be the true view, the Eskimo must of course have had a very different origin from the typical Indians of North America; and it has been sought to trace their ancestry to the early inhabitants of North-western Europe. Sir William Flower is, however, very strongly of opinion that the Eskimo form "a branch of the typical North Asiatic Mongols, who, in their wanderings northwards and eastwards across the American Continent, isolated almost as perfectly as an island population would be, hemmed in on one side by the eternal polar ice, and on the other by hostile

Photo by Dr. W. T. Grenfell, of the Mission to Deep Sea Fishermen.

GREENLAND ESKIMO IN THE SNOW.

tribes of American Indians, with which they rarely, if ever, intermingled, have gradually developed characters most of which are strongly expressed modifications of those seen in their allies, who still remain on the western side of Bering Strait." A very similar view is taken by Baron Nordenskiöld, who regards the Chukchis and Koryaks of North-eastern Asia as the nearest relatives of the Eskimo; remarking that the Koryak "race, settled on the primeval route between the Old and New Worlds, bears an unmistakable stamp of the Mongols of Asia and the Eskimo and Indians of North America." But the Danish investigator Dr. Rink, in regarding Alaska as the original home of the Eskimo, appears decidedly in favour of the western origin of the race. In this connection it may be mentioned that it is the Eskimo of Greenland who present the characteristics of the race (especially the long head, whereby they differ from the round-headed Chukchis and Koryaks) in the most marked degree. And it is quite a legitimate inference that this long-headed character has been gradually developed the farther and farther the race departed from its presumed place of origin in the north-eastern promontory of Asia. On the other hand, those who maintain the European derivation of the Eskimo urge that it is precisely the long-headed conformation of the Greenlanders which lends such strong support to their views.

Photo by Mr. W. Rau] [*Philadelphia.*

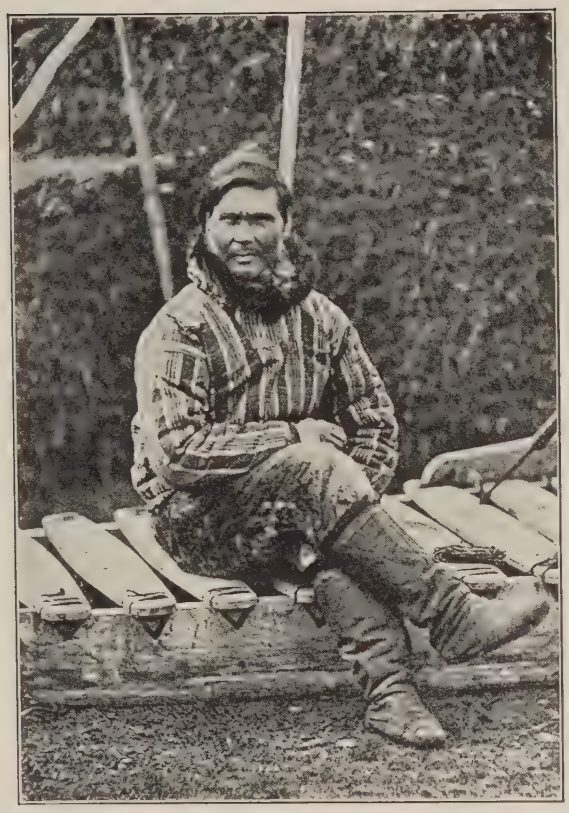
A PARTY OF GREENLAND ESKIMO.

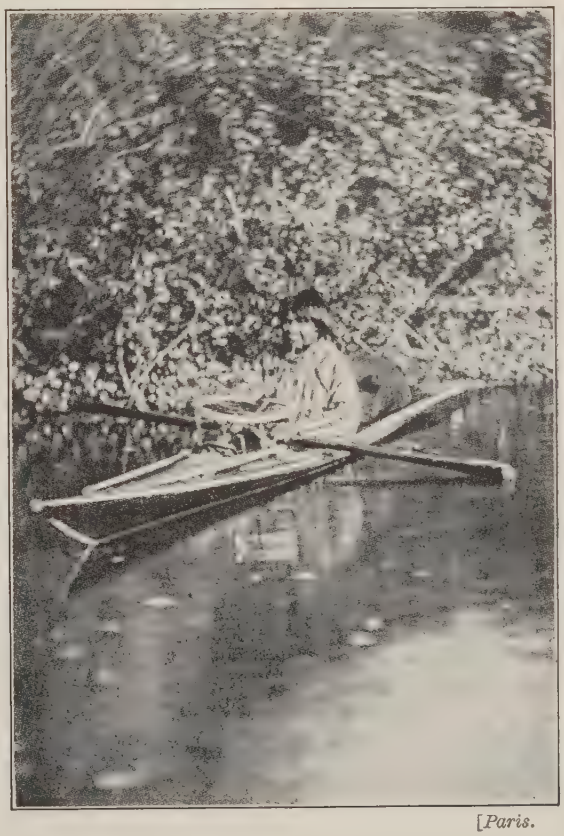
This, however, is not the place in which to discuss in detail a question bristling with difficulties and perplexities; and having thus laid before our readers in an impartial manner the leading points of the two conflicting views, we pass on to the consideration of the people themselves.

The name Eskimo is the modern Danish form of the older French Esquimaux; the latter being derived from *Wiyaskimowok* (raw-flesh-eaters), applied to these people by their neighbours the Cree Indians. Other forms of the same word occur in Abenaki, Ojibwa, and other Algonquian dialects. In Alaska and other parts of their western habitat the Eskimo call themselves *Innuit* (the people); the same name reappearing on the Asiatic side of Bering Strait, where a few Eskimo colonies exist, in the form of *Yuit*. In Greenland *Karalit* is the native name of the race.

Exclusive of the Koryaks and the Chukchis (Tuskis), who were regarded by some authorities as an Asiatic branch of the race, the Eskimo have a wider geographical range than any other aborigines; their habitat extending, discontinuously, from the eastern shores of Greenland to Bering Strait—a distance of over 5,000 miles. Northwards they extend to Grinnel-land, where Lieutenant Greely mentions having found traces of them at Cape Sabine; and similar evidence of a very northward extension has been met with on the east coast of Greenland.

On the eastern side of America the Eskimo extend as far south as about 50° N. lat., in Labrador; on the shores of Hudson Bay their southerly limits lie between 55° and 60°, while on the Alaskan side of Bering Strait the latter parallel forms their approximate boundary. With the exception of two localities on the western side of America, where some Indian tribes descend to the shore to fish, the Eskimo form the only aboriginal inhabitants throughout this vast extent of country. The Aleutian Islands, forming the continuation of the south-western peninsula of Alaska, are inhabited by a somewhat aberrant branch of Eskimo—the Aleuts.





Photos by M. Pierre Petit] [*Paris.*

ESKIMO, WITH THEIR SLEIGHS AND KAYAK.

Apart from the insular habitat of many of the Eskimo, and the complete separation of those of Greenland from those dwelling on the American mainland, the tribes inhabiting the continental areas are more or less completely isolated from each other. And this separation renders the striking general uniformity in the physical characters of the entire race only the more remarkable. By Dr. Rink the Eskimo have been subdivided into the following sections: (1) those of East Greenland; (2) those of West Greenland, who, as far as lat. 74° N., are the subjects of Denmark, and are comparatively civilised; (3) the Eskimo of Northern Greenland, who are the most uncultured of all; (4) the Labrador Eskimo, for the most part fairly civilised; (5) the Central Eskimo, ranging from Hudson Bay, some 2,000 miles, to beyond the outlet of the Mackenzie River; and (6) the Western Eskimo, from Barter Island to the extreme western limits of Alaska.

Photo by K. Günther] *[Berlin.*

AN ESKIMO MAN.

At the time when this classification was made, the whole of the Eskimo were supposed to be dwellers in tracts situated within a comparatively short distance (fifty miles or so) of the shore, if not on the coast itself, and to subsist entirely by fishing. More recent explorations have, however, brought to light the existence of several inland tribes, who live by hunting, and, unlike the coast people, have more or less intercourse with the Indians, with some of whom they have indeed almost completely amalgamated. To this intermingling is doubtless due the existence of at least three types of Eskimo in Alaska.

As regards the present number of the Eskimo there are no sufficient data on which to form even an approximate estimate. Some years ago it was indeed roughly estimated that the total number did not exceed 50,000; but it is very doubtful if even this can be regarded as a fair approximation to the real state of the case. When a census was made in 1870 of the population of that portion of West Greenland under the Danish Government, the number of Eskimo was recorded as 9,588; that of the Europeans being 237. The population was then distributed among 176 different winter stations, of which only one had more than 300 inhabitants; while in fifty-eight the number did not exceed five-and-twenty. At that time the entire native population of Greenland was considered to be not more than about 10,000. Since the Danish occupation the native population is known to have diminished; and as some years ago its numbers appeared to be nearly stationary, it is unlikely there has been any subsequent increase. In Labrador, where there were six Moravian missionary settlements at the time of writing, Dr. Packard states that the number of Eskimo in 1860 was about 1,400. In a letter to the same writer from London, dated 1887, it is stated that the number of Eskimo on the strip of coast from Hamilton Inlet to Ungava, in Labrador, was estimated at 1,500. "The race," says the writer, "is comparatively pure, but there are some half-breeds, for the Hudson Bay Company's employés and other settlers have married Eskimo women. . . . Thirty years ago the number under charge of our missionaries was about 1,200, I expect purely Eskimo; now it is about the same, including settler families." It should be added that in the Danish

settlements on the west coast of Greenland there are likewise a considerable proportion of half-breeds.

In general appearance and physiognomy, as well as in dress and the mode of doing the hair, the Eskimo are very like the Chukchis and Koryaks; so much so, indeed, that a traveller visiting the Arctic regions for the first time would doubtless experience some difficulty in clearly distinguishing between them. All, when pure bred, possess the long, lank, jet-black hair distinctive of Mongoloid races in general; while the cast of countenance is likewise distinctly Mongoloid. In stature the Eskimo are decidedly short; although the appearance of shortness is somewhat enhanced by the nature of the dress. The late Dr. Robert Brown, in the article published in the ninth edition of the *Encyclopædia Britannica*, was indeed inclined to believe that these people are taller than is generally supposed to be the case; stating that the height usually ranged between 5 feet 4 inches and 5 feet 10 inches, while in rare instances it reached as much as 6 feet. This estimate appears, however, somewhat too high, and may have been partly based on the measurements of half-breeds or due to local peculiarities. For instance, in *Science* for July 29, 1887, Mr. W. A. Ashe gives measurements taken from sixty families (number of individuals not stated) of Eskimo living at North Bluff, on Hudson Strait; the average of these working out to a mean height of 5 feet 3·9 inches for the men, and of approximately 5 feet for the women. On the other hand, Nordenskiöld speaks of the Eskimo of Port Clarence as of average height. In both sexes the feet and hands are unusually small; but the muscular development is strong, although the men frequently show an early tendency to put on fat. When cleansed from the grease and dirt with which it is generally begrimed, the skin, which has a peculiar oily feeling to the touch, not unlike that of fat bacon, is pale ochry brown in colour; a red tinge frequently showing through it on the cheeks of the children and younger women. The latter are always fresh-looking; but after marriage the women disregard appearances, soon becoming wrinkled, and, from their sedentary habits, bow-legged. In spite of the broadly oval shape of the flat face, with its fat cheeks, and the Mongoloid obliquity of the eyes (chiefly due to a peculiarity in the conformation of the upper eyelid), the physiognomy of the Eskimo is by no means displeasing, even to the European eye;—more especially as the face is always ready to break into a laugh. After early maturity the men, owing to their active out-of-door life, are, however, decidedly better-looking than the women.

Photo by K. Günther] [*Berlin.*

AN ESKIMO WOMAN.

The forehead, which is not high, and also somewhat retreating, is partially concealed by the hair; which, in the case of the men, is generally cut off straight across the forehead midway between the eyes and the crown, although in the females allowed to grow longer and hang down in irregular wisps. The remainder of the scalp-hair is permitted by both sexes to grow to its full length, and in the men hangs down to the shoulders. In the women this hair may, however, either be formed into a pair of long plaits hanging down each side of the head, after

the Chukchi fashion, or, as in Greenland, may be gathered up into a large projecting knot at the back of the head. The latter fashion is well displayed in the bust of a female Eskimo from Frederikshaab, Greenland, exhibited in the Natural History Museum at South Kensington; the bust of a male placed alongside showing the distinctive features of that sex. In the Greenland Eskimo the size of the back tuft of hair forms a subject of emulation among the fair sex; but the constant strain, to which the hair is exposed by this method of dressing causes it to fall off or become thin, especially on the sides of the head, at a comparatively early age. As in all members of the Mongoloid stock, the development of hair on the face is scant; the men usually displaying only a very slight moustache, no whiskers, and frequently little or no traces of a beard. In the neighbourhood of Bering Strait Baron Nordenskiöld states, however, that some of the men grow a scanty beard, while a few had attempted the American "goatee."

As already mentioned, the Eskimo differ from Chukchis and Koryaks by the greater length and narrowness of the head; this feature, and likewise the unusual height of the head, attaining its greatest development in Greenland. Like all savage races who do not spoil them by filing or other ill treatment, the Eskimo have excellent teeth, which, however, owing to the nature of their food, are in old age worn down almost or completely to the edges of the gums.

In regard to the half-breeds met with on the east coast of Greenland, Dr. Rink writes as follows: "On first arriving in Greenland, one is surprised at seeing kayak-men with light hair and perfectly European physiognomy and stature, while as to their language and habits they are as perfectly European Others again, and indeed the greater part of the half-breeds, resemble South Europeans. Notwithstanding this intermixture, the Eskimo features are still by far the most prevalent, exhibited chiefly in a low stature, remarkably small hands and feet, and a brown complexion."

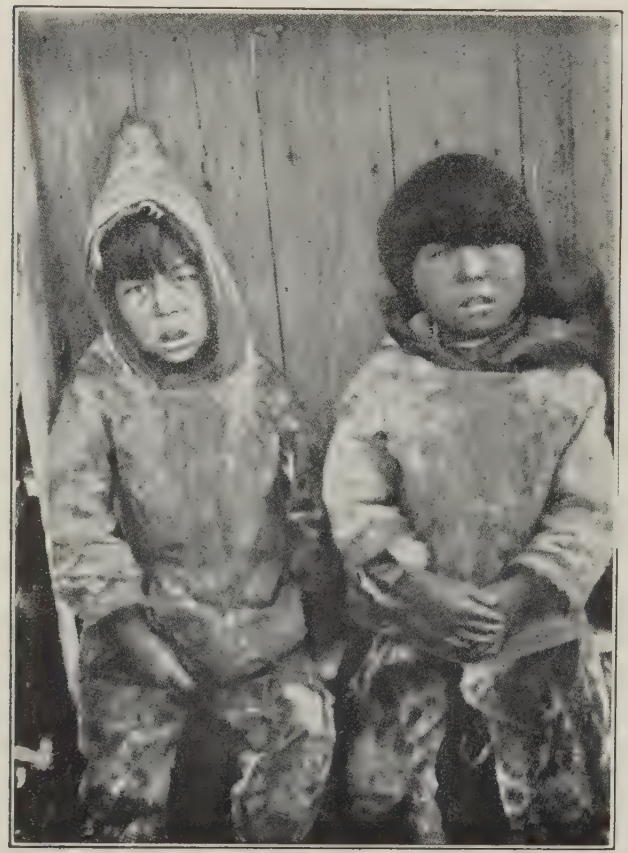


Photo by Dr. W. T. Grenfell, of the Mission to Deep Sea Fishermen.
A PAIR OF ESKIMO BOYS.

The Eskimo are by no means long-lived folk. Dr. Packard states that at the time he visited the colony at Hopedale the oldest person was a woman of seventy;—and she a picture of ugliness. Three only were of the age of sixty; and, generally speaking, a man becomes prematurely old by the time he is five-and-forty, being at that age worn out by the hardships of the autumnal seal-fishing.

Civilisation, too, or what goes for such, seems to induce an undue mortality, partly owing to a more indoor life. At Hopedale, for instance, the population in the summer of 1864 was about 200; but it was reported that during the previous March no less than twenty-four had succumbed to cold. Since at Okkak twenty-one had died, and the same number at Nain, over a tenth part of the native population of these stations fell victims to chest-diseases in the course of a single month.

As regards dress, the leading feature is the great similarity existing between the costumes of the two sexes; the women wearing trousers, and a jacket very similar to that of the men. It has been suggested

Photo by Dr. W. T. Grenfell, of the Mission to Deep Sea Fishermen.

HEADS OF THREE ESKIMO CHILDREN.

that this similarity has been brought about by the narrowness of the entrance to the huts. which would not suffice to admit a woman clad in petticoats of a thickness suitable to a severe climate. Be this as it may, in the olden days the garments were made entirely of "shamoyed" skins, such as those of seals, reindeer, polar bear, dog, or Arctic fox, sewn together with sinew thread. In the Danish settlements in Greenland it has, however, become the fashion to furnish the jackets with a cotton covering, while coloured materials of European make are likewise used for other garments, especially in the case of the female sex. Men, too, frequently have their outer dress made of cotton fabrics, which in summer may be used also for trousers. Somewhat similar changes have also been made by the Eskimo dwelling at the Moravian missionary-stations in Labrador; many of the women wearing an old calico skirt over the original dress. Nor is this all, for in the Greenland settlements fashion has tended to curtail the length of the jackets of the females, and to discard the flaps by which they were originally prolonged both in front and behind. And as there was always probably a certain amount of difference in this respect between widely sundered tribes, it will be understood that the following account of the original Eskimo dress is more or less general.

The outer garment is a jacket, usually longer in the case of the women than in that of the men; it fits tightly to the body, and its only openings above are those for the head and hands. The men's jacket is furnished with a hood, used in cold weather to cover the head. On the other hand, the jacket of the women has a much more capacious hood—the *amowt*—employed as a cradle for the child; while it has likewise a long pendent flap, or "tail," behind, which is usually tucked up. In Greenland this tail is comparatively short; but it is much longer among the Labrador Eskimo ladies, where it formerly almost reached the ground. The trousers, which may be either tight-fitting or baggy, and in the case

Photo by M. Pierre Petit] [*Paris.*

ESKIMO AND SLEDGE.

of the women reach only to the knees or a little below, are attached to neatly made boots of seal-skin; these latter being so well suited to the climate that they are adopted by nearly all Europeans who visit the Eskimo. The trousers of the women may be decorated with the neck-skin of the eider-duck or with trimmings of embroidered leather; while their boots, which in Greenland are generally dyed of various colours, reach above the knees, where they are sometimes cut very wide. During winter an Eskimo used to be provided with two suits of the above description, one of which had the fur inside, while in the other it was turned outwards. In the south of Danish Greenland fur jackets with the hairy side outwards have, according to Dr. Rink, long since disappeared, although they are still retained in the north, where they are also made of greater length. In addition to the above-mentioned garments, the Eskimo sometimes wear vests or shirts made of the skin and down of sea-birds, as well as socks made of reindeer-fawn leather. Occasionally, too, jackets are made of bird-skins, with the feathers outside; the British Museum possessing a beautiful specimen from Port Clarence, Alaska, the material of which appears to be chiefly the wonderfully soft and warm breast-skin of the eider-duck. In this neighbourhood Baron Nordenskiöld describes many of the natives as wearing European clothes; while others were clad in trousers of seal- or reindeer-skin, and a light, soft, often beautifully ornamented *pesk* of suslik*-skin; an overcoat made of pieces of gut sewn together being frequently worn over the latter in rainy weather. In all respects the Eskimo are neat workers, and their clothes form no exception to this rule. Formerly the sewing was always done with the aforesaid sinew thread and a bone needle, but a steel implement now frequently replaces the latter.

Except in the middle of summer, the boots require to be changed whenever they are wetted, else they would freeze as hard as a board. Among the poorer classes in Danish Greenland, who appear to be amongst the most wretched of the whole race, this precaution is, however, by no means always taken. These people, indeed, serve to show the extreme hardihood of the Eskimo, and their indifference to intense cold, even when insufficiently clad. Dr. Rink, for instance, writes of them as follows: "How far they surpass the European in hardiness and endurance is more clearly to be seen at the poorer stations when the winter is unusually severe, even in the opinion of the natives. Persons may be seen dressed more like poor people in Southern Europe than Eskimo. Children are seen in rags which scarcely cover their nakedness; their boots being frozen quite hard and stiff, on account of not being taken off for several weeks."

As might be expected, the Eskimo are by no means remarkable for their attention to personal cleanliness, having an inbred horror of water as a cleansing agent. It is stated, however, that the babies are sometimes *licked* clean by their mothers before being put to bed into the bag of feathers which serves alike for mattress and blankets. As regards ornaments

* Commonly miscalled marmot.

and personal adornment, the women, as in the neighbourhood of Port Clarence, may have a few lines of tattooing on the chin. The Aleuts and some of the true Eskimo, to the southward of the Mackenzie River, insert a large disk of bone or other substance into the lower lip, after the fashion of their southerly neighbours, the Thlinkit Indians, from whom the custom was probably derived. Dr. Dall has, however, remarked that no hunter exposed to the icy blasts and cold winter of the northern districts of the Eskimo habitat could have possibly tolerated such an ornament; since it would have rendered the strip of flesh above the incision liable to freeze, while it would have been an intolerable annoyance in other respects. Accordingly, we find in the more northern districts two small disks, one situated at each corner of the mouth on the line of the lower lip, replacing the large central Aleut plate. The holes in the lip among the Port Clarence Eskimo are about a quarter of an inch in length; and the labrets consist of large pieces of bone, glass, or stone. "These ornaments," writes Baron Nordenskiöld, "were often removed, and then the edges of the large holes closed so much that the face was not greatly disfigured. Many had in addition a similar hole forward in the lip. It struck me, however, that this strange custom was about to disappear completely, or at least to be Europeanised by the exchange of holes in the ears for holes in the mouth. An almost full-grown young woman had a large blue glass bead hanging from the nose, in whose partition a hole had been made for its suspension; but she was very much embarrassed, and hid her head in a fold of her mother's *pesk*, when this piece of grandeur attracted general attention. All the women had long strings of beads in the ears. They wore bracelets of iron or copper, resembling those of the Chukchis."

The coast Eskimo, who have been longest known to Europeans, are both hunters and fishermen, obtaining the greater amount of their food-supply from the sea, and subsisting almost entirely on animal substances. Indeed, with the exception of a few roots, seaweed, and berries, the Eskimo in their original savage state used practically no vegetable food at all. In Danish Greenland, however, a certain amount of imported vegetable food, such as bread, barley, and peas, is consumed by the natives. And Dr. Rink estimates the average daily consumption of food per head in these settlements to comprise 2 lbs. of flesh and blubber, 1½ lb. of fish, together with a certain amount of shell-fish, berries, seaweed, and other indigenous vegetables, to which must be added about 2 ozs. of imported food. If this allowance was constant throughout the year, it would doubtless be amply sufficient; but in the winter supplies are only too apt to run short, and it is a mistake to suppose that every individual obtains anything like this quantity daily throughout the year. When, however, food is to be had in abundance, an Eskimo has not the slightest hesitation in consuming at least 10 lbs. of meat and fat at a single sitting. Frozen flesh is usually devoured raw, but fresh meat is sometimes boiled. Blood, as well as the half-digested nutriment taken from

Photo by Dr. W. T. Grenfell, of the Mission to Deep Sea Fishermen.

A GREENLAND ESKIMO GRANDMOTHER.

65

Photo by M. Pierre Petit] [*Paris.*

AN ESKIMO BELLE.

the stomach of the reindeer, likewise form items in the *menu*. It is a common belief that blubber constitutes an important article of diet; but this is a mistake, as the substance in question is far too valuable to be thus disposed of, having to be stored up for use as fuel and lamp-oil during the dreary winter.

On the other hand, the natives of the interior of Alaska, such as the Nushegagmuts of the Nushegak Basin, who are in constant communication with the Athabascan Indian tribes, are to a great extent hunters of land game, although they also capture fresh-water fish. These inland Eskimo show in many districts unmistakable signs of crossing with their Athabascan neighbours; and Dr. Rink has been enabled to divide the Alaskan representatives of the race into the following three sections. Firstly, we have the tall, cadaverous-looking inhabitants of Kotzebue Sound, who have always a hungry appearance, and whose food includes fish, ptarmigan, and susliks. In marked contrast to these are the tall and well-built Nualoks of the inland high-grounds, who live on the flesh of the reindeer, the Alaskan big-horn sheep, and various birds, supplemented to a certain extent by fish. Lastly, there are the short, stumpy Eskimo of the Arctic coast, who probably represent the pure-bred race, whose food consists of whale, seal, and reindeer meat. In Greenland the musk-ox is largely hunted.

In the course of the preceding paragraphs most of the animals which afford the food-supply of these hardy people have been already mentioned. It may be added that, while occasionally they feast on the stranded carcase of a right-whale, a rorqual, or a hump-backed whale (locally known as *kepokak*), their more usual cetacean prey comprises the white whale or beluga, conspicuous from its glistening cream-coloured hide, and the narwhal, both of which are harpooned from the *kayak*, or canoe. In addition to these they take several species of true seal, such as the Greenland, or harp-seal; while in the neighbourhood of Bering Strait they come in contact with the eared seals, or sea-bears and sea-lions, the slaughter of which is, however, placed under stringent restrictions at the present day. Whale-skin (*matak*) forms a favourite article of diet.

Of all Eskimo inventions, the aforesaid *kayak* is perhaps the most peculiar and characteristic, and is absolutely essential to the very existence of the shore-dwelling tribes. Although differing locally to a certain extent in both size and construction, it is to be met with from Bering Sea to East Greenland, but only attains its highest development in the latter country. It may be described as a shuttle-shaped canoe, covered with hairless seal-skin tightly stretched over a framework of wood or whalebone, or both.* The kayak is decked over, after the manner of a Rob-Roy canoe, leaving only a space sufficient to admit the body of the kayaker, who, when settled in his frail craft, closes the interval between himself and the deck-cover so tightly, that the whole concern may turn over without admitting any water to the interior. One of these canoes in Greenland measures about 18 feet in length by 2 feet in breadth; and since its weight is not more than half a hundredweight, a man on landing can take it in one hand and carry it up the beach with ease. In addition to the occupant,

* The British Museum has two kayaks of which the framework is of wood lashed together with whalebone, which is employed like leather thong. The frame is, however, *said* to be often made of whalebone alone.

DISTRIBUTION OF ESKIMO AND NORTH AMERICAN INDIANS.

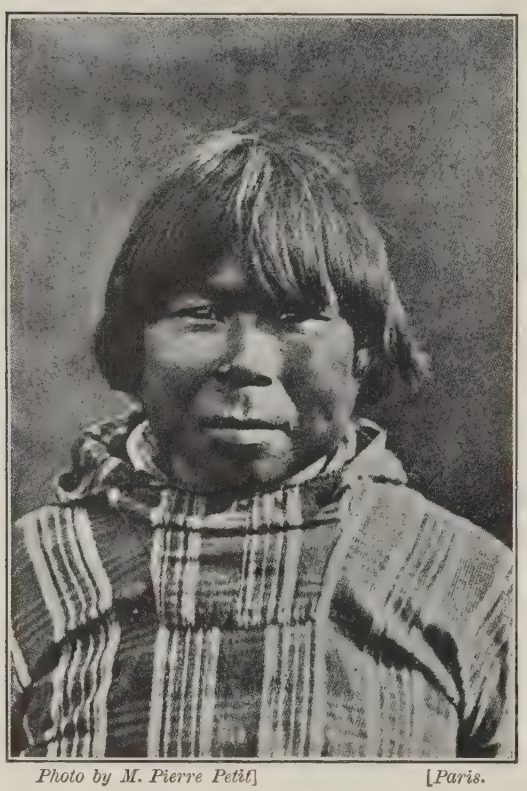


Photo by M. Pierre Petit [*Paris.*

AN ESKIMO YOUTH.

one of these canoes will carry a load of about 200 lbs. In Greenland the kayak may have its framework constructed of whalebone; but in Labrador the material is spruce. In consequence of this difference the Labrador vessel is of broader and clumsier build, although at the same time more stable. The kayaker propels his canoe with a double-bladed paddle, the ends of which are tipped with bone. To withstand the icy sea a special waterproof dress is necessary for kayaking; this consisting of a jacket made of gut or skin, and furnished with mittens, so that only the face of the wearer is exposed to the elements. During still weather or in sheltered bays a half-jacket alone is often worn; this sufficing to protect the occupant as far as the arm-pits when a wave dashes over his vessel.

Although steel or iron has in recent years largely tended to supplant the use of bone or chipped stone for spear- and harpoon-heads, it is probable that in most parts of Eskimoland the former were the original materials. Beautiful specimens of such stone and bone lance-heads, as well as those made of iron, are to be seen in the ethnological galleries of the British Museum; and it is with such weapons that the kayaker kills his prey. Both in the case of the harpoon and the lance the head is detachable by the first sideway pull, so as to remain fixed only to the line or cord with which it is provided. In the case of the lance the other end of the cord is attached to the shaft, so as to form a kind of hinge. But in the large harpoons the shaft becomes completely freed, so that the head is attached only to the line, the other end of which terminates in a large inflated bladder. This bladder marks the course of the whale or seal, and enables the kayaker to follow and dispatch his prey by lance-thrusts.

But the kayak is by no means the only vessel which the ingenuity of these adventurous people has succeeded in devising, as there is also the much stouter and more capacious *umiak*, or women's boat, largely employed in the movement of the tribes from one hunting or fishing station to another. These, which are also covered with skin, are perfectly flat-bottomed, and vary from 25 to 37 feet in length, with a beam of about 5 and a depth of $2\frac{1}{2}$ feet. In Greenland the larger vessels will carry a load of about 3 tons, while the much more numerous smaller kinds will take only about half that weight. Since the framework and thwarts alone are of wood, even the larger umiaks can be transported overland without much difficulty by a party of eight or ten men. The flexibility of these boats enables them to withstand the shock of the waves remarkably well, although their owners are careful to avoid subjecting them to such strains as much as possible. Although liable to be cut through at once by the sharp edges of floating ice, the natives are such adepts in steering that they will take the umiaks across arms of the sea in which scarcely any large spaces of open water are visible. When in use, the skin on the bottom of the umiak becomes almost transparent, thus permitting the motion of the water to be seen by the occupants. Although in the south the skin covering requires an annual renewal, in the north of Greenland it will last for at least a couple of years.

Mention has already been made of harpoons and lances; it must be added that the heads of ordinary-sized specimens of the latter, when made of the usual black stone, are about 3 inches in length, and have beautifully chipped edges. In using the harpoon, the kayaker

is provided with a "thrower," from which the weapon is discharged; the bladder at the other end of the line being disengaged at the same moment. Usually the seal or whale to be captured is approached within about 25 feet. When struck, the animal immediately dives, drawing out the coiled-up line with lightning speed; should the line become fouled with the kayak, or should the bladder be not released in time, the paddler is capsized, with little or no hope of saving his life. If, however, all goes well, the bladder indicates the track of the wounded animal; and, following this, the kayaker, when within striking distance, hurls his lance from the "thrower." This operation is generally repeated several times, the lance on each occasion becoming disengaged and floating on the water; finally, when the victim has become thoroughly exhausted, it is approached and dispatched with the short stabbing-spear or hunting-knife.

Other weapons are the bird-spears, which also have a bladder attached, and are likewise provided with additional points along the sides, which often prove effectual should the head happen to miss. There is also a small but effectual bow; the stone arrow-heads for which are manufactured by taps from a hammer made of the hard, jade-like stone known as nephrite. Very noteworthy is the existence of a throwing-string, made of a number of sinews weighted with walrus-ivory knobs; when these strike the bird at which they are hurled, they wind themselves round its legs in the same fashion as the *bolas* of the Indians of the Pampas. Chipped flint scrapers, mounted in ivory or wooden handles, are used by the Eskimo for cleaning and dressing skins; and they have likewise stone chisels. For catching salmon and other fish they use a kind of spinning-tackle, made in the shape of a beetle; they also make double or treble hooks, with points of either bone or wire, as well as a bone sinker, with fish-hooks. A fishing-rod, with a line and float, is likewise employed; but to describe this and many other instruments in detail would far exceed the limits of our space. To protect their eyes from the glare of the snow in summer, the Eskimo employ wooden spectacles, or goggles, which are fastened to the head of the wearer by means of finely plaited thongs of sinew. Basin-shaped lamps of soapstone, furnished with wicks of moss, and fed by a supply of whale- or seal-blubber, are indispensable articles in an Eskimo household; without which, indeed, life would be absolutely impossible in these dreary regions, as they supply both light and heat. The age of these lamps must date from a very remote epoch, and must apparently have originated in more southern lands; since, it has been very justly argued, without their aid the Eskimo could never by any possibility have reached his present home.

Photo by M. Pierre Petit] [*Paris.*

AN ESKIMO GIRL AND CHILD.

But Eskimo ingenuity is by no means restricted to the production of purely utilitarian articles, these people also displaying remarkable skill in carving ornaments in bone and ivory. The favourite designs are the heads of animals, although at times the whole body may be portrayed; and not only are these designs notable on account of their fidelity to nature, but likewise from the beauty and finish of their execution. Such articles may be inspected in great numbers and variety by the visitor to the ethnological galleries in the British Museum; and a few of the more striking types are depicted in a plate in Baron Nordenskiöld's "Voyage of the *Vega*." Among these are the buttons or clasps attached to their carrying-straps, which are carved in walrus-

Photo by Dr. W. T. Grenfell, of the Mission to Deep Sea Fishermen.

A PARTY OF ESKIMO, WITH THEIR TENT OF SEAL-SKIN AND BEAR-SKIN.

ivory to represent the heads of polar bears and seals. Other carrying-straps (which, by the way, are made of hide, with a loop at one end, through which the button at the other is passed) have the button or handle made in the form of an entire seal. There are also carved ivory tiaras, or coronets, representing the heads of animals, for the ladies; as well as combs of the same material. The glass and ivory buttons inserted into the lips have been already mentioned. Nowadays most of the coast Eskimo manage to secure a supply of matches (as many of them also do of European fire-arms), but formerly light was obtained by means of pyrites and flint, or by the fire-drill; the bow of the latter being frequently made of walrus-ivory, richly ornamented with figures of various kinds.

Hitherto no mention has been made of the well-known Eskimo dogs and the sledges they draw; but, in Greenland at any rate, these form a most important element in Eskimo life. The dogs are handsome, albeit decidedly wolfish-looking creatures, brutally treated by their masters, and generally subsisting on the refuse and offal of the encampments. The runners of the sledge are made of a pair of boards about 6 feet in length, held together by cross-bars forming the seats; the structure being completed by two upright poles at the hinder end, used to mount by, and also to steer the sledge on occasions when the driver is following on foot. Elasticity, and consequent freedom from liability to destruction by bumping against rocks or hummocks, is afforded by the whole structure being bound together with thongs of reindeer-hide. For the material to build his sledge the Eskimo is indebted to the sea; large quantities of drift-wood being cast up on the shores of the countries inhabited by the race. Eight dogs will draw a load of about 500 lbs., at a pace averaging four or five miles an hour; but on perfectly smooth ice as much as sixteen miles an hour may be covered by a team in good condition.

As regards dwelling-places, the Eskimo enjoy the luxury of having summer habitations totally different, both in position and in structure, from those of winter. The change is, however, not so much a matter of luxury as of urgent necessity; the summer thaw rendering the

From Prince Roland Bonaparte's Collection.

A NORTH AMERICAN INDIAN IN FULL DRESS.

filth and refuse accumulated during winter absolutely insupportable when melted. Moreover, the necessity of fishing and hunting renders an easily movable dwelling-place most important during the summer and autumn. Although in certain parts of Eskimoland huts built of snow, with sheets of ice for windows, are not uncommonly constructed for winter use, in Greenland these are known only by tradition, and a more permanent kind of building is in vogue. The winter huts, or *iglus*, of the Greenlanders are partially subterranean structures, wretched enough according to European ideas, but by no means ill-adapted to the nature of the climate and the simple wants of their owners. "On account of their being formed of stones alternating with sods," writes Dr. Rink, "the walls are liable to subside; but then the roof, consisting of turf spread over driftwood, will follow them, and the whole, being cemented together by moisture and frost, will be perfectly impenetrable by wind. The windows, made

From Prince Roland Bonaparte's Collection.

A GROUP OF NORTH AMERICAN INDIANS.

out of seal-entrail, only admit a scanty portion of daylight; but during the greater part of the winter-time the sun is absent, and when the days are lengthening daytime is mostly passed in the open air. The dwelling-room of the original houses had no chimney or fire-place at all, but the lamps served at once for lighting, heating, and cooking. A small kitchen is sometimes found as a side-room close by the door. Ventilation is afforded chiefly by the long and narrow doorway which affords the entrance to the house. On first entering, one has to descend, while at the farther end a step upwards at once leads into the room itself. . . . By properly adapting the length and width of the house-passage the necessary ventilation is afforded, there having been scarcely any door at all in the house, only a loose skin curtain being occasionally used to close the entrance. A vent-hole was made in the roof; and the enormous difference between the temperature outside and inside explains how so little as

100 cubic feet of space per inmate could suffice. In the only room in the house a bench or ledge runs along the wall opposite to the windows, and is divided by the help of low screens into separate stalls or recesses for the families. The walls are hung with skins, and the floor is paved with flat stones." To this excellent account it should be added that from the roof is suspended the lamp; while on suitable supports from the same are hung the spare harpoons, lances, etc. The heat of the interior prevents water freezing; and the centre of the floor is consequently in most cases occupied by a more or less dirty and offensive pool. In the Danish settlements in Greenland, as well as in parts of Labrador, houses of a much superior description to the above are now frequently erected; but as these are of European origin, they require no detailed mention in this place. Generally the dogs are allowed to shelter themselves in the entrance-tunnel; but sometimes even this protection is denied them, and they are compelled to brave the terrors of an Arctic winter night.

From Prince Roland Bonaparte's Collection.

A NORTH AMERICAN BRAVE.

It has been incidentally mentioned that an Eskimo house in Greenland is the abode of two or more families; but this is a custom confined to that country, other Eskimo having a house for each family. Throughout the greater part of Eskimoland public buildings of any description are totally unknown; but council-chambers have been said to exist in Labrador. With the return of the sun the winter-huts are everywhere discarded for the skin-tents in which the summer and autumn months are passed. These tents are single-poled, and of the familiar bell-shape; but a very large open space is left at the entrance, which is framed with wood, upon which the covering is stretched. The cover is double, and formed of seal-skins, neatly sewn together. To exclude draughts and wet, the lower edge of the tent is affixed to a raised ring of stones and turf. A curtain made of seal-gut closes the entrance to the tent; this material being sufficiently translucent to afford a good supply of light to the inmates. A fireplace is constructed outside.

The following summary of the yearly life of the Labrador Eskimo is taken from an account given by a Moravian missionary. From May till December the various families are scattered along the coasts at their fishing-stations. When the men return in May from reindeer-hunting, they proceed to the islands near the shore for sealing; and here they remain till the end of June, when the coast ice has melted. Going back in their kayaks to their winter-quarters, the men then bring up their larger boats (now often sailing-vessels), in which they take their families for trout-fishing up the rivers; after which follows the great harvest of the cod-fishery. In autumn reindeer-hunting is resumed, while from November till

Christmas is the period of the autumnal seal-fishery. At this time the men endeavour to capture the seals in their kayaks by driving through the thin ice, or to take them in nets. So soon as the bays and straits become blocked with ice, net-sealing is of course impossible; and the Eskimo then turn their attention to those seals which have been shut up in the bays. By Christmas they are once more settled in their winter-houses, and it is at this time of the year that the missionaries obtain most access to these people.

Sealing from the kayak has been already mentioned as fully as space permits, but no reference has yet been made to sealing on the ice. When the sea in autumn is frozen over during calm weather, the surface of the ice becomes quite smooth and unbroken, so that the seals below are quite cut off from the air. Consequently each seal has to keep open a small breathing-hole, the edges of which are gradually raised, while the surrounding ice is kept thin and assumes the form of an inverted bowl. Approaching the hole in boots with the hairy side outwards, the hunter has to steal up and stab his victim before it has time to become alarmed. This mode of capture is however, only practicable in autumn on the rare occasions when perfectly smooth ice is formed; and in winter sealing involves a weary waiting (*maupok*) in intense cold at the larger permanent breathing-places. The seal being certain to hear the least noise, the only plan is to take up a position at the hole, and there, it may be in a temperature of 20° below zero, await in perfect stillness its rising, which may not occur for hours.

Photo by M. Pierre Petit] [*Paris.*

NORTH AMERICAN INDIAN CHIEFS, WITH THEIR WIVES AND CHILDREN.

In regard to their general character most travellers who have visited them speak fairly well of the Eskimo. It is true that they have been charged with a proneness to lie and thieve; but such accusations Dr. Rink considers to be ill-founded, at any rate in Greenland. In Alaska Baron Nordenskiöld describes them, after the disappearance of the first mistrust, as friendly and accommodating, honourable in their dealings, although given to begging and to much haggling in making a bargain. The position of the women appeared in nowise inferior to that of the men; and the children, in spite of having no bringing-up at all, would be described as well brought-up. The liking for spirits seemed less strong than among the Chukchis. In this particular instance all the natives seen were heathen, but in Labrador they have been to a great extent civilised and Christianised, and the majority are able to read, write, and cypher. Although their memory is remarkably good, it is in the latter accomplishment that they display the least readiness and proficiency. Their love of music is very marked; and in many of the Moravian stations in Labrador the harmonium or organ is played by a native, while the singing is rendered by an Eskimo choir. As might

A CHIPPEWA INDIAN.

MA-GI-GA-BOW (CHIEF).

A CHIPPEWA CHIEF.

"CUT-NOSE," A SIOUX CRIMINAL.

Photos by C. A. Zimmerman, Minnesota, U.S.A.

have been expected from their cleverness in carving, they readily learn drawing, as well as map-making. Their sense of the ludicrous and comic is very highly developed, so that they are prone to mimic personal peculiarities, as they are to imitate foreign customs and amusements, such as dances or games. Gambling, however, though carried on to a small extent, cannot be described as an Eskimo vice. When Nordenskiöld arrived at Port Clarence, a number of Eskimo came on board prepared to sell or barter their property. "Anxious to procure as abundant material as possible for instituting a comparison between the household articles of the Eskimo and the Chukchis," writes the Baron, "I examined carefully the skin bags which the natives had with them. In doing so, I picked out one thing after the other, while they did not object to my making an inventory. One of them, however, showed great unwillingness to allow me to get to the bottom of the sack, but this just made me the more curious to ascertain what precious thing was concealed there. I was urgent, and went through the bag half with violence, until at last, in the bottom, I got a solution of the riddle—a loaded revolver!" In Greenland, at any rate, when the Eskimo offer an article for sale, they leave it to the purchaser to fix the price; and they also show a marked aversion to bind themselves by a written contract.

From Prince Roland Bonaparte's Collection.

A NORTH AMERICAN INDIAN (PROFILE).

Although decorous and decent when in public, the morality of Eskimo in private life is not of a high order; and in this respect the women are said to be considerably worse than the men. It is, however, satisfactory to learn that in this and several other respects contact with civilised people appears to have led to the improvement of the native.

No Eskimo possesses a large amount of personal property; habit and the necessities of their mode of life compelling those who possess food to share it with those who are destitute. This custom has conduced to the general stagnation of the race and the improvidence by which it is characterised. From these and other indications many travellers have been led to conclude that perfect individual equality prevailed, and that there were no such things as grades in rank or chiefs. Later researches have shown, however, that, in some districts at any rate, this is a mistake; Dr. Rink remarking that "each larger household com-

prising several families has a chief as conscientiously venerated and obeyed as are heads of communities or magistrates elsewhere."

Like other native American languages, the Eskimo tongue is of what is termed the polysynthetic type, and preserves an extraordinary uniformity of pronunciation and structure throughout the habitat of the race. Judging from the following sample quoted by Dr. Rink, it does not appear by any means a desirable language to learn or to use: "Suerukame — autdlasassoq — tusaramiuk—tuningingmago—iluaringilat" ="They did not approve that he (*a*) had omitted to give him (*b*) something, as he (*a*) heard that he (*b*) was going to depart on account of being destitute of everything." Happily such appalling words are not in every-day use, but still they may and do occur. A considerable amount of literature has been printed in their own language for the Eskimo of both Greenland and Labrador; and two Eskimo have distinguished themselves as authors.

From Prince Roland Bonaparte's Collection.

A NORTH AMERICAN INDIAN (FULL-FACE), WITH PIPE-TOMAHAWK.

In comparison with the natives of other parts of America, the Eskimo have few customs and ceremonies in connection with birth, marriage, and death. Indeed, in their original primitive condition birth and early childhood seem to have had no special ceremonies connected with them, although at the mission-stations the christening of a child is now generally followed by a party, while birthdays are likewise observed as occasions of rejoicing. Carnival meetings are also held to congratulate the boys on the capture of their first seal or other large game.

In regard to marriage the bride was always taken by force from her father's family in the old days; but as Christianity spread this custom passed more and more into disuse, until it is now completely abandoned in all districts where civilisation has been introduced. Generally the marriages are now negotiated by the priests in the settled districts of Greenland, the suitor naming his sweetheart to his own priest. It appears to be the etiquette for the prospective bride to pretend complete indifference to the offer of her suitor, and she generally accepts him only under the plea of conforming to the wishes of her spiritual adviser. Naturally such a practice has put considerable power in the hands of the priesthood, but it is seldom that this power is abused. At all the missionary-stations marriages are now solemnised according to the rites of the Christian Church; and there are no nuptial festivals of purely native origin to chronicle.

Neither is there much to be said with regard to burial and funeral ceremonies. In the old days the bodies of deceased members of a tribe were carefully buried on the summits of low hills beneath stone-heaps of considerable size. Mr. Holme, who discovered about seventy old Eskimo sepulchres on Eskimo Island, twelve miles west of Rigolet, in Labrador, describes

them as follows: "These graves were much in the ordinary Eskimo custom, not being underground, although the soil was by no means deficient, but consisting of rough unhewn blocks of stone heaped together in an oblong form; the inside measurements being 2 feet by 1½ foot. Many of them had been disturbed by bears or wolves, but in most of them a skull and bones were lying." Dr. Packard, too, speaks of finding at Hopedale, Labrador, in 1864, two ancient Eskimo tombs on the summit of a bare hill. The skeletons lay in what appeared to be a natural fissure in the rock, covered over with a few slabs of stone; the site of the graves being indicated by a vertical pole inserted into the fissure.

A NORTH AMERICAN CHIEF, WITH FEATHER HEAD-DRESS.

The missionaries seem to have regarded this ancient mode of sepulture as savouring of paganism, and accordingly took effectual measures to ensure its abolition. The new method of burial seems, however, to be by no means an improvement on the old plan. The soil being rocky and frozen, interments after the European custom are, especially in winter, very difficult to carry out in a proper manner; the consequence being that the burial-grounds are frequently in an extremely unsatisfactory condition. Before burial the bodies are either sewn up in skins or placed in rude wooden coffins; after which they are merely covered over, frequently in an imperfect manner, with sods and stones. Originally it was the custom after a death for the members of the family to abstain for a period from labour of all kinds, and at the same time to neglect their hair and dress. It was likewise a universal custom to avoid using the tools or weapons of the deceased, and also to refrain from wearing his or her clothes. The former customs are still more or less observed in Greenland, or at any rate were so a few years ago; but in regard to the latter the imported institution of a sale by auction is considered to break the spell.

Like their language, the primitive religion of the Eskimo exhibited a remarkable uniformity throughout the entire area inhabited by them. The leading idea is the government of the whole world by supernatural beings termed *inuas*, or owners. Apparently the soul was regarded as the *inua* of the body. The general scheme of the Eskimo religion and cosmogony has been tersely summarised by the late Dr. R. Brown as follows: "The earth and the sea rest on pillars, and cover an under-world accessible by various mountain-clefts, or by various entrances from the sea. The sky is the floor of an upper-world, to which some go after death; while others—good or bad—have their future home in the under-world. Here are the dwellings of the *arsissut*, the people who live in abundance. This upper one, on the contrary, is cold and hungry; here live the *arssartut*, or ball-players, so called from their playing at ball with a walrus-head, which gives rise to the *aurora borealis*. The mediums between the *inua* and mankind are the *angakoks*, or wizards, who possess the peculiar gift of *angakunek*—or the state of 'being angakok'—which they have acquired by the aid of guardian spirits called *tornak*, who again are ruled by *tornasuk*, the supreme deity or devil of all." A kind of witchcraft, termed *kusiunek* or *ilisinek*, is believed to be the cause of sudden sickness or death.

From Prince Roland Bonaparte's Collection.

A DAKOTA-SIOUAN CHIEF, THIRTY EIGHT YEARS OF AGE WITH PIPE-TOMAHAWK

From Prince Roland Bonaparte's Collection.

A NORTH AMERICAN INDIAN CHIEF (PROFILE).

The inferior beings of this theocracy are far too numerous for mention in this place; but it may be observed that divine rewards and punishments are considered to be meted out to a great extent in the present; the conception of the scheme of future prizes and penalties being but very imperfectly grasped. Under the influence of Christianity all their old-world beliefs are, of course, rapidly passing into oblivion, although some of the names have been crystallised by the missionaries transferring them to the Biblical powers of good and evil.

Formerly the Eskimo of Greenland, as well as those of other countries, had their own national songs and dances, which were used at festivals; but these, too, have been for the most part replaced by European substitutes. From old sketches it appears that at these festivals a group was formed, in the centre of which stood the chief performer, who sang to the accompaniment of a drum, gesticulating and dancing simultaneously. On some occasions the song was intended merely for the amusement of the company, who probably moved round in a circle singing the refrain. On other occasions a satirical or "nith-song" was chanted against a second performer, who was upbraided for neglecting the kayak-hunt, or some other pursuit.

Of other customs only a brief reference can be made to a few. Formerly the customary salutation when two people met was by rubbing noses together; but in the Greenland settlements, except to caress children, this practice has been entirely abandoned, and there is now no national mode of salutation. Generally when a guest arrives at or leaves a house nothing whatever is said, although occasionally the salutation *inuvdluaritze* (live well) may be pronounced; while a European may be warned not to knock his head against the doorway (*aporniakinatit*). Very curious is the reluctance of Greenlanders to pronounce their own names. When asked their name, they generally get a comrade to answer the question. Amulets and magic spells (*serratit*) were and are still held in great estimation; a curious circumstance being that the commonest European articles, such as coffee-berries and scraps of newspapers, are frequently regarded as the most effectual amulets or charms.

CHAPTER XXIII.

NORTH AMERICA.

SOUTHWARDS of the Arctic tract occupied by the very distinct Eskimo tribes described in the preceding chapter, the whole of the vast Continent of America, from British Columbia, Vancouver Island, and Newfoundland and the shores of the Gulf of St. Lawrence in the north, to the extremity of Patagonia and the island of Tierra del Fuego in the south, was, up to the time of Columbus's arrival, peopled by American Indians, some of whom were then living as nomad savages, whiles others inhabited populous cities and had acquired many of the arts and habits of civilised communities. In one way or another the aborigines since that epoch have steadily tended to disappear or wane before the gradual advance of the white races, or to become lost as a pure type by more or less complete fusion with the latter. The manner in which the irresistible spread of the Caucasian races over the continent has been brought about, and the concomitant disappearance or fusion of the native tribes, have, however, varied greatly in different parts of America. The ancient Aztecs, Mayas, and Peruvians were practically wiped out as distinct nations by the Spanish conquest; while at an early date the aborigines of the West Indian islands disappeared, and were replaced by African Negroes. In many other parts of Central and South America the more civilised aborigines became more or less amalgamated with the Spanish and Portuguese immigrants, thus giving rise to the present mixed races of the countries in question. On the other hand, in the greater portion of North America a very different state of things has occurred. For the most part the original inhabitants formed nomad tribes sparsely scattered over the open prairies; and for a long period those in the interior were but little affected by the European settlements on the east coast. Moreover, with the exception of the French Canadians, the immigrants have mingled but little with the natives, so that a sharp line of demarcation has continued to divide the white races from the "Redskins." Gradually, however, the latter have been driven farther and farther back, till they are now mostly restricted to definite "reserves," where they are supported by the Governments of the United States and Canada. And here it may be mentioned that of late years an important factor in the retirement of the Indians from large areas in the North-west has been the practical extermination of the American bison, an animal upon which thousands

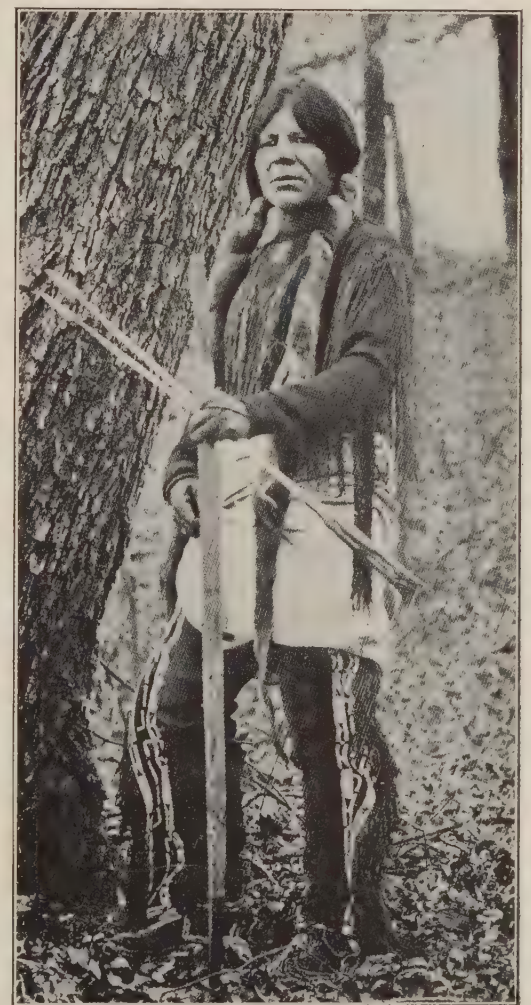


Photo by Mr. W. Rau [*Philadelphia.*

A NORTH AMERICAN INDIAN, SHOWING MOCASSINS.

of the aborigines were dependent for their very existence. Unsuited to the restraints and trammels of civilised life, and displaying a marked inaptitude for agricultural pursuits, the "red man," even in these reserves, is steadily diminishing in numbers; and there is every prospect of his ultimate disappearance. The late Rev. J. O. Dorsay has, however, recorded the fact that in some districts of the Western States there has been a tendency for the red population to become absorbed in the white element. But this absorption has in all cases come to pass by the natives ceasing to be Indians and becoming members of civilised society. "In Minnesota," for instance, "all persons of mixed blood—that is, of white and Indian descent—are recognised as citizens. The same is true in other states; and the privilege is extended to those who are not mixed bloods. Also, under present homestead laws, Indians are becoming citizens by going off their reserves."

And here it is important to observe that, from the very remote epoch when America received the ancestors of its aboriginal population (apart from the Eskimo) till the date of the Spanish conquest, no immigrations of any sort took place from the Old World. It is true that an occasional vessel, with its crew, may have been stranded at long intervals on the American shores; but, in spite of all statements to the contrary, it is perfectly clear that such occasional handfuls of foreigners could have left no permanent trace on the aboriginal population of the New World.

Photo by Mr. W. Rau [*Philadelphia.*

AN AMERICAN INDIAN AND HIS WIFE.

Accordingly, till the Spanish conquest, the natives of America were completely isolated from the rest of the world. As mentioned in the preceding chapter, one of the most striking features connected with the American aborigines is the extraordinary uniformity in physical characters and appearance presented by them from one extremity of their habitat to the other; so marked, indeed, that the different stocks of the northern half of the continent are to a great extent distinguishable by linguistic rather than by physical characters. Nor is this resemblance by any means confined to physical characteristics; it is equally noticeable in mental temperament and in speech. It is true, indeed, that the native American stock languages are wonderfully numerous, yet all these are but modifications of a single linguistic type, which is perfectly distinct from all the tongues of the Old World. In no other part of the world has a single physical and linguistic type anything approaching the vast distributional area which it possesses in America.

Passing on to the consideration of the physical appearance and characteristic features of the American aborigines in general, we may first of all call attention to the striking similarity in the physiognomy of the two sexes; this being so great that strangers, on beholding for the first time the large series of photographs of heads displayed in the anthropological series at the Natural History Museum, are quite unable to distinguish between the men and the women without reading the labels. This is, no doubt, for the most part due to the fashion of wearing the hair long and pendent in both sexes, and to the absence of moustaches and beards in the men. The hair is, indeed, one of the characteristic features of the American Indians; that on the scalp being black, lank, coarse, and frequently very long. In its coarseness, length, and

Photo by Mr. W. Rau]

INDIAN "SUN DANCE" (THE MAKING OF A "BRAVE").

[*Philadelphia.*

absence of all trace of wave or curl, it may be compared, indeed, rather to the mane of a horse than to the locks of the Caucasian races; its straightness being due to its almost perfectly circular (instead of more or less elliptical) cross-section. The face, like the body, is practically devoid of hair; such stray hairs as do make their appearance being artificially removed. As regards the colour of the skin, there is considerable local variation, but it may be described generally as coppery or yellowish brown, although in the natives of some of the tropical forest districts like those of Amazonia it is light brown, while in the dwellers of some of the high grounds it is dark brown. The lips and nose do not in general differ to any great extent from the European type; the latter being generally large, with a well-marked bridge, and nearly straight, or even slightly aquiline in profile. More characteristic is the distinct lateral prominence of the cheek-bones, which are often also proportionately high; but in some cases the formation of this part of the face does not differ essentially from the Caucasian type. The forehead is retreating, and marked by distinct brow-ridges, which attain their greatest development in certain skulls from Patagonia. The eyes, which are almost invariably black in colour, are small and rather deep-set, while in form they are round without distinct trace of obliquity in their setting. The limbs present no distinctive differences from the Caucasian type. As a rule, American Indians are of tall stature, the average being given at from 5 feet 8 inches to 5 feet 10 inches; but in some districts of both North and South America 6 feet, or even more, is reached, while on the plateau of Peru, as well as in Alaska and Tierra del Fuego, the height sinks to less than 5½ feet. The characters of the skull do not enter into the scheme of the present work, but it may be mentioned that both long-headed and rounded types of Americans are met with in both divisions of the continent. These have been taken to indicate different sources of origin from the Old World, but it may be questioned whether this view has sufficient evidence for its support.

A GROUP OF NORTH AMERICAN INDIANS IN FULL DRESS.

Perhaps the best short definition that can be given of American Indians is that they are copper-coloured or yellowish brown, beardless people, with lank hair, and without the oblique eyes, broad and flat faces, or small and concave noses of the Mongols. Obviously they have no affinity with the Negroid branch of mankind; while the character of the hair and the absence of a beard separate them widely from the Caucasian branch. On the other hand, in the character of the hair and their smooth faces they show a distinct approximation to the Mongol type. From the typical Mongols they are, however, at once distinguished by the retreating forehead and the strongly developed brow-ridges, as well as by the general cast of

feature, especially the usual absence of obliquity in the setting of the eyes, and bold development of the nose. As a rule the latter feature is of what is known as the *busqué* shape—that is to say, its profile is formed by two straight lines diverging at an obtuse angle from the bridge. It should, however, be mentioned that occasionally American Indians are seen with more or less distinct traces of the characteristic "Mongol fold" above the eyes, which are themselves contracted and oblique.

NORTH AMERICAN INDIANS DRESSING.

Clearly, then, it is with the Mongoloid branch that the aborigines of America display the most marked resemblance; and this is just what might have been expected to occur from the geographical distribution of the two groups. All persons most competent to give an opinion on the subject are practically in accord as to the existence of a relationship of some kind between the Asiatic Mongols on the one hand and the American Indians on the other. But as to the degree of this relationship there is some diversity of opinion, one school regarding the latter as a branch of the Mongoloid stock, while another regards them as entitled to rank as a separate branch by themselves. Seeing, however, that some kind of Mongoloid relationship is admitted by both, it is evident that the difference of opinion is only as to the degree of such relationship;

AN INDIAN CHIEF AND HIS SQUAWS.

Photo by Mr. W. Rau [*Philadelphia.*

AN INDIAN HUNTER, WITH WAPITI SKULL.

and, in any case, the whole question is not one with which we are here greatly concerned.

Having said thus much as to American Indians in general (whose characteristic type of countenance should become familiar from a careful study of the portraits illustrating the present and adjacent chapters), attention must now be concentrated on those inhabiting the northern half of the continent which forms their home. And here a great difficulty presents itself at the very outset. The number of tribes is so great, and their physical differences are so slight (indeed, as already mentioned, the differences are in most cases linguistic and cultural rather than physical), that it is impossible to describe them all within the limits at our disposal. Fortunately, however, these almost countless tribes may be grouped under a number of main linguistic stocks, or families, as they are indifferently called; and as a few of these are of much larger size, and therefore of greater importance, than the rest, it is on certain of the former that attention may be chiefly concentrated. Omitting, then, all mention of many of the minor stocks—which, by the way, are chiefly concentrated on a narrow strip of territory on the Pacific border of the continent—we have the following main stocks, with some of their more important tribal divisions, viz.:—

1. *Athabascan*, or *Athapascan*, comprising the Kuchins, Chippewyans, Apaches, and Navajos.
2. *Algonquian*, including the Delawares, Abenakis, Chippewas or Ojibwas, Crees, Shawnees, Sac and Foxes, Blackfeet, Cheyennes, and Arapahoes.
3. *Iroquoian*, represented by the Hurons, Eries, Mohawks, Tuscaroras, Senecas, Cayugas, Oneidas, Onondagas, and Cherokis.
4. *Siouan*, with the Dakotas, Asiniboins, Omahas, Crows, Iowas, Osages, Catawbas, and Monakans.
5. *Shoshonean*, comprising the Pawnees, Kiawas, Comanches, and Utas.
6. *Muskhogean*, represented by the Creeks, Choctaws, Chicasas, Seminoles, and Apalachis.
7. *Pueblo*, including the Zuñi, Tegua, Jemez, and Hopi or Moki.

To treat each of these seven main stocks with the same detail would obviously be waste of space, seeing that in many respects several of them have more or less the same customs and manners. Among the first six, the Siouan group is the one selected for special consideration, mainly on the ground that it has been the subject of an elaborate study by the officials of the United States Board of Ethnology. On the other hand, the Pueblo Indians, as displaying a totally distinct grade of culture, and being the only North American aborigines who build and inhabit houses, claim a special notice, which forms the concluding portion of the present chapter.

Commencing with the Athabascan and Algonquian stocks, we find that the various tribes grouped under these headings originally occupied considerably more than half the total area of North America. The Athabascan territory extended across the country from Southern Alaska, across the lake and river from which it takes its name, nearly to Port Nelson, on the western shore of Hudson Bay; its northern boundary thus impinging on the southern frontier of the Eskimo. From Port Nelson their southern boundary ran westwards to the Rocky Mountains,

Photo by Mr. W. Rau] [*Philadelphia.*

NORTH AMERICAN INDIANS PREPARED FOR A JOURNEY.

forming a curved line which reaches as far north as lat. 60° in the middle of its course, while farther west it falls as low as 50°. Along the western coast may be traced a few outliers of Athabascans, which appear to indicate the line of migration followed by this people as they extended into Arizona, New Mexico, and Texas, where they were formerly found in considerable numbers. So different are the predatory southern tribes, such as the Apaches, Navajos, and Lipans, from their northern kinsmen, the Kuchins, Chippewyans, Hare Indians, etc., that, were it not for their common speech, they would scarcely be recognised as members of the same stock. The northern tribes live a nomad life, protected by the Government of Canada, many of them acting as trappers and hunters for the Hudson Bay Company. Their numbers are estimated at only about 10,000, whereas the southern tribes, who now live in special reserves, were reckoned some years ago at 23,000. Mr. F. W. Hodge, who has specially studied the Apaches and Navajos, states that the latter still retain traditions of their arrival from the north in their present home, which probably took place before the close of the fourteenth century, at which epoch the Apaches were already settled in New Mexico. It was not, however, till about three centuries later that they became sufficiently powerful to harass their Pueblo neighbours.

Even larger than the Athabascan territory is the area originally inhabited by the great Algonquian (or Alkonkin) stock, which included that portion of Labrador not occupied by the Eskimo, and thence stretched westward across the continent south of the Athabascan boundary to the Rockies. To the southward their distribution narrowed so as to form a truncated triangle, bounded on the west by the Mississippi and to the east by the Altantic sea-board; Southern Tennessee on the former side, and Cape Hatteras, in North Carolina, on

Photo by Mr. W. Rau [*Philadelphia.*

AN INDIAN TENT IN WINTER, WITH SQUAW CARRYING "PAPOOSE" (CHILD).

Photo by Rodocker] [*Kansas.*

A WOMAN OF KIAWA.

the latter, forming their approximate southern limits. It is true that in certain parts of this area there are isolated outliers occupied by Iroquoians, Siouans, etc.; but these need not concern us here, except so far as to state that the Iroquoian colony, which occupied the area extending from Lakes Ontario and Erie to Pennsylvania and Maryland, took an important part in the British and French conflicts in America. From the extent of their territory it might naturally be concluded that the Algonquians were the most numerous of all the aboriginal stocks of North America; and this, as a matter of fact, is the case. At the present time, when they are supposed to form about a fourth of the total Indian population, their numbers are estimated at fully 95,000, of which 60,000 are subjects of the Dominion of Canada.

In Labrador this stock is represented by the so-called Montaignais (Mountaineer) Indians of the French Canadians. The true Algonquians, forming the tribe from which the whole stock takes its name, are now found in Ontario and Quebec, and are stated not to exceed 5,000 in number. On the other hand, the Chippewas, or Ojibwas, whose home is the region of the great lakes, have survived in much greater numbers, being estimated at over 30,000 individuals. The next tribe in point of numbers is that of the Crees, who are situated more to the north-west, occupying Manitoba and the tract between Lake Winnipeg and Hudson Bay. The Crees have been recently put down as numbering 17,000 individuals. Among the central tribes may be mentioned the Abenakis, Mohigans, Delawares, and Naticokes, who originally occupied the area between the Gulf of St. Lawrence and Chesapeake Bay. The most celebrated of these are the Delawares, who, together with the Sac and Foxes and the Shawnees, are now gathered on reservations in New York State and Indian Territory, where they collectively muster not much over 4,000. Many other tribes,

among whom it must suffice to mention the Powhatans, formerly inhabiting the east coast, have long since been completely exterminated. It may be added that it was with the Delawares, or Lenni-Lenape, who were then subject to the Iroquois, that William Penn made his celebrated treaty.

Passing on to the Iroquoians, we find them occupying a prominent position in history as the deadly foes of the Algonquians, whom, in spite of their smaller numbers, they would probably have succeeded in conquering, had it not been for white intervention. In the region of the St. Lawrence, which seems to have formed their original home, the northern Iroquoians were divided into two hostile divisions, of which the western was formed by the Hurons and Eries or Wyandots, and the eastern by the true Iroquois. These constituted the celebrated "confederation of the five nations," comprising the Mohawks, Oneidas, Cayugas, Onondagas, and Senecas,—a union which was strengthened by the admission in 1712 of the Tuscaroras from North Carolina. Either by wars or by the introduction of European diseases, many of these tribes have been swept away; the Hurons and Eries being kept in remembrance only by the lakes of the same name. In Virginia and the Carolinas the Iroquois were represented by the Cherokis, forming a southern division of the stock; these people have, however, now been transported to Indian Territory, where, together with the Choctaws, they are estimated to number something like 27,000. A miserable remnant of 20,000 now alone represents the rest of the once powerful Iroquoians, who were of a decidedly higher type than their Algonquian neighbours.

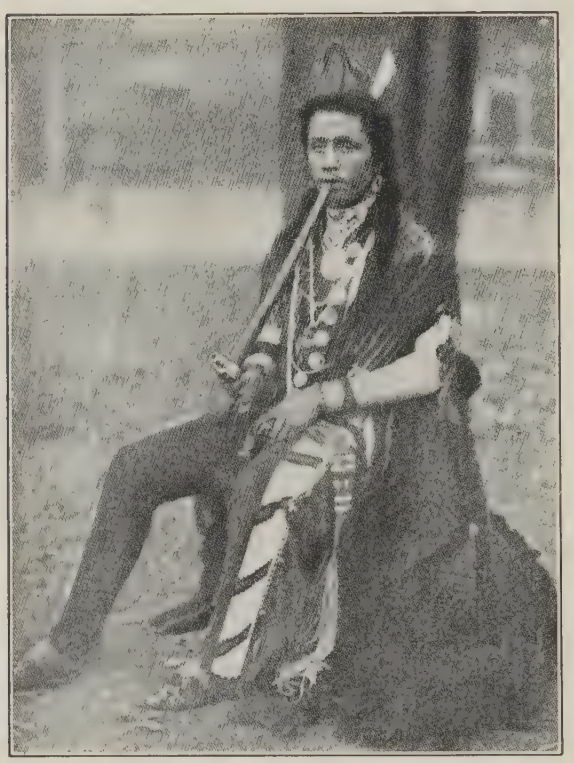


Photo by M. Pierre Petit] [*Paris.*

A NORTH AMERICAN INDIAN SMOKING TOMAHAWK-PIPE.

We now come to the important group of the Siouans, whose territory was inferior in extent only to that of the Athabascans and Algonquians. The name Sioux, from which the adjective Siouan is derived, appears to have been originally a term of contempt applied by the forest-dwelling Algonquians to their brethren of the plains. "The Indians of the Siouan stock," writes Mr. W. J. McGee, "occupied the central portion of the continent. They were pre-eminently plains Indians, ranging from Lake Michigan to the Rocky Mountains, and from the Arkansas to the Saskatchewan, while an outlying body stretched to the shores of the Atlantic. They were typical American barbarians, headed by hunters and warriors, and grouped in shifting tribes, led by the chase or driven by battle from place to place over their vast and naturally rich domain, though a crude agriculture sprang up whenever a tribe tarried long in one spot. No native stock is more interesting than the great Siouan group, and none save the Algonquian and Iroquoian approach it in wealth of literary and historical records; for since the advent of white men the Siouan Indians have played striking *rôles* on the stage of human development, and have caught the eye of every thoughtful observer."

In former times they were represented as far south as the coast of the Gulf of Mexico by the Biloxi tribe. To mention all the numerous tribal subdivisions would be merely wearisome, and the reader must accordingly be content with the following main groups. Best known of all are the Dakotas (Friendlies), celebrated in Longfellow's "Hiawatha," who before their isolation in Indian Territory and other districts of the States, occupied a large area in the

Photo by Mr. W. Rau] [*Philadelphia.*

INDIAN SQUAW AND "PAPOOSE" (CHILD).

Photo by Mr. W. Rau] *[Philadelphia.*

AN AGED INDIAN WOMAN.

heart of the continent, and have more than once dared to try the issue of war with the American Government during the last fifty years. The Asiniboins (People-who-cook-with-stones), although hostile to the Dakotas, are included by Mr. McGee in the same group with the latter. Next come the Omahas (Up-stream-people), with whom are included the Osages; these being followed by the Iowas, and these latter by the Winnebagos. Following these are the Mandans, who have gained an evil reputation through Catlin's account of the atrocious cruelty of their ceremonies; in 1804, according to Lewis and Clark, this tribe was reduced to three villages in the Fort Berthold reservation in North Dakota. The Hidatsa are best known by their near relatives the Crows, now restricted to the Crow reservation in Montana. The above-mentioned Biloxi, of the Gulf coast, have been transported from the original territory, and survive partly in Louisiana and partly in Indian Territory, where they are mixed with Choctaws.

Very brief mention must be made of the Shoshonean (Snake) stock, which includes the well-known Pawnees, who in Catlin's time formed a powerful and warlike tribe numbering some 10,000 or 12,000, and living on the Platte River about 100 miles from its junction with the Missouri. The Kiawa tribe dwelt more to the south-west, on the flanks of the Rockies. To the same stock belong the Comanche and Uta tribes, rude nomad peoples, formerly inhabiting the states of Montana, Idaho, Oregon, and thence southwards to Utah, California, and Texas. Possibly it was Shoshonean hordes who, about the sixth century of our era, overthrew the comparatively civilised tribes of the Mexican Plateau.

Lastly, we have the Muskhogean stock, whose typical representatives the Muskhogis are better known as Creeks; this name being derived from the numerous inlets penetrating their territory on the coast of the Gulf of Mexico. This stock also included the Chicasas and Choctaws (properly Chatas = Flat Heads), who formerly populated most of the country on the Mississippi nearly to its confluence with the Ohio. The Apalachis form another tribal division of this stock. More distinct are the Seminoles (properly Isty-Semole; that is, Wild Men), who occupied Florida, whence they expelled a now extinct tribe.

Doubtless this enumeration, brief and imperfect as it necessarily is, of the leading divisions and tribes of North American Indians will be found somewhat wearisome to the reader; nevertheless, without this the subject could not properly be treated. We now proceed to the more interesting subjects of the physical appearance, clothing, ornaments, food, occupations,

dwellings, and the moral and intellectual characters of the foregoing groups of North American Indians; after which allusion may be made to some of their customs and feasts. And here a great difficulty presents itself, our space being so limited and the number of tribes so great. Under these circumstances the only course is to restrict our observations to a few tribes, whose mode of life must be taken as more or less typical of that of the rest. It may be well to premise that previous to the Spanish discovery (the word is used advisedly) of the New World the aborigines were totally unacquainted with the sheep, the ox, and the horse; the only large animals serviceable to man (exclusive of the numerous species killed for the sake of their fur) being deer of various kinds, the bison, and, in the south, the pronghorn, or, as it is commonly called, antelope. When once introduced, the horse appears to have spread with remarkable rapidity; so rapidly, indeed, that our chief acquaintance with most tribes is subsequent to its introduction. And since these wild people, as soon as they acquired this valuable animal, became essentially equestrian in their mode of life, it is obvious that Indians as we know them must have differed profoundly in their general mode of life from their forefathers of the pre-equine days.

As regards dress and dwellings, we cannot do better than quote *in extenso* the excellent account given by Lewis and Clark (1804–6) of the Teton Okandandas, a small tribe of the Siouan stock then inhabiting both banks of the Missouri between the Cheyenne and Teton affluents. After mentioning that the men shave their heads, with the exception of a tuft on the crown, which is allowed to grow to its full length (a custom peculiar to this and certain other tribes), the authors write as follows: "In full dress the men of consideration wear a hawk's

Taken during the Scientific Expedition of 1872-6. *Published by Horsburgh & Son, Edinburgh. Government Copyright.*

A GROUP OF MIC-MAC INDIANS.

Photo by Mr. W. Rau] *[Philadelphia.*

A DAKOTA-SIOUAN SQUAW.

feather or calumet feather, worked with porcupine-quills, and fastened to the top of the head, from which it falls back. The face and body are generally painted with a mixture of grease and coal. Over the shoulders is a loose robe or mantle of buffalo [*i.e.* bison] skin dressed white, adorned with porcupine-quills loosely fixed so as to make a jingling noise when in motion, and painted with various uncouth figures, unintelligible to us, but to them emblematic of military exploits or some other incident. The hair of the robe is worn next to the skin in fair weather, but when it rains the hair is put outside, and the robe is either thrown over the arm or wrapped round the body, all of which it may cover. Under this in the winter season they wear a kind of a shirt resembling ours, made of either skin or cloth, and covering the arms and body. Round the middle is fixed a girdle of cloth or dressed elk [wapiti] skin, about an inch in width, closely tied to the body; to this is attached a piece of cloth or blanket or skin, about a foot wide, which passes between the legs, and is tucked under the girdle both before and behind. From the hip to the ankle he is covered by leggings of dressed antelope-skins, with seams at the sides 2 inches in width, ornamented by little tufts of hair, the produce of the scalps taken in war, which are scattered down the leg. The winter mocassins [*i.e.* boots] are of dressed buffalo-skins, the hair being worn inwards, and soled with thick elk-skin parchment; those for summer are of deer- or elk-skin, dressed without the hair, and with soles of elk-skin. On great occasions, or whenever they are in full dress, the young men drag after them the entire skin of a polecat fixed to the heel of the mocassin. Another skin of the same animal, either tucked into the girdle or carried in the hand, serves as a pouch for their tobacco, or what the French traders call *bois roulé*. This is the inner bark of a species of red willow, which, being dried in the sun or over the fire, is rubbed between the hands and broken into small pieces, and used alone or mixed with tobacco. The pipe is generally of red earth, the stem made of ash, about 3 or 4 feet long, and highly decorated with feathers, hair, and porcupine-quills. The hair of the women is suffered to grow long, and is parted from the forehead across the head, at the back of which it is either collected into a kind of bag or hangs down over the shoulders. Their mocassins are like those of the men, as are also the leggings, which do not, however, reach below the knee, where they are met by a long loose shirt which reaches nearly to the ankles; this is fastened over the shoulders by a string, and has no sleeves, but a few pieces of the skin hang a short distance down the arms. Sometimes a girdle fastens this skin around the waist, and over all is thrown a robe like that worn by the men. Their lodges [wigwams, or houses] are very neatly constructed; they consist of about 100 cabins, made of white buffalo-hide dressed, with a larger one in the centre for holding carnivals and dances. They are built round, with poles about 15 or 20 feet high, covered with white skins. These lodges may be taken to pieces, packed up, and carried with the natives wherever they go by dogs, which bear great burdens."

Naturally the dress described above varies to a certain extent with the tribe. Among the chiefs of certain tribes the feather head-dress, which is generally made from eagles' feathers, attains an inordinate development, forming a kind of "tail," hanging down the back

from the head to the heels, with the line of feathers forming a crest down the back. In a remarkably fine specimen exhibited in the ethnological galleries of the British Museum, the front of the head-piece is ornamented with a pair of slender horns cut from those of a bison, while over the forehead is a tiara of the claws of the grizzly bear. Such head-dresses are known to have been used by the Mandans, Sioux, and Asiniboins. The ordinary members of a tribe had of course garments of a simpler type, commonly comprising a loin-cloth, mocassins, leggings, and robe, which were for the most part made of skins, although several of the tribes had acquired the art of making simple fabrics of bast, rushes, and other vegetable substances. As intercourse with Europeans increased, cotton and woollen fabrics were gradually introduced; and now, with the extermination of the bison, blankets replace the robe of bison-hide. Not the least noteworthy feature connected with the Indians of the North-west is

Photo by Mr. W. Rau] *[Philadelphia.*

A GROUP OF NORTH AMERICAN INDIANS. ONE OF THE CENTRAL FIGURES SHOWS THE LONG FEATHER HEAD-DRESS MENTIONED ON PAGE 542.

their capacity for withstanding the most intense cold with a very scanty supply of clothing, many of them going about half naked even in mid-winter. An old Indian, when questioned as to the reason of this capacity for withstanding cold, replied that, as the faces of Europeans were capable of bearing exposure to all weathers, his own people could go about in a half-clad condition because their persons were "all face."

For bedding robes of fur and mats of rushes were chiefly used; some tribes even using rude bedsteads. Among the Siouans the habitations of the forest-dwelling tribes were usually of the above-described tent-like type, covered with bark, rush-mats, skins, or even bushes. On the other hand, the tribes wandering on the open prairie made earth-covered lodges for winter, and bison-skin tents, or *tipis*, for summer use. Simple as were all these types of dwelling, a regular routine plan was followed in their construction; special importance being attached to the employment of thirteen supporting-poles.

Photo by Mr. W. Rau] *[Philadelphia.*

A MANDAN INDIAN IN EUROPEAN DRESS.

As regards personal adornment and ornaments, the practice of painting the face has been already mentioned; this painting of the face and body being to a large extent symbolical. The various forms of this type of decoration may be best realised by inspecting the plates in Catlin's well-known volumes on the North American Indians; in which work may also be seen the different kinds of head-dress and other ornamental garbs assumed during the war-dances and other ceremonials. In addition to painting, tattooing was fairly common among the western Siouans and certain other tribes. The employment of human scalps as articles of adornment was to proclaim the prowess of the wearer in battle, while the claws of the grizzly bear indicated his success in the chase. Frequently bangles and earrings, and more rarely nose-rings, were worn; while bone or shell lip-ornaments were in use among some of the tribes of the North-west Pacific coast. Special attention must be called to the use of the shell-beads forming the celebrated *wampum*, which were used both as articles of personal adornment and as a medium of exchange. These were generally made from clam-shells, and took the form of elongated or cigar-shaped beads, sometimes of considerable size; they might be employed either of their natural colour or stained of various colours, and were threaded on strings and worn as necklaces or belts; a wampum belt being a badge of friendship. Wampum was little used by the Missouri Siouans, and not at all by the tribes of the North-west. Pearls too—for the most part obtained from the fresh-water mussels which swarm in many of the North American rivers—were largely employed as articles of personal adornment; vast quantities of them having been discovered in the ancient mounds of the Ohio Valley.

Originally most of these implements and weapons were made of stone, wood, bone, buckshorn, or horn; but native copper seems to have been used at an early period in the neighbourhood of Lake Superior, and in recent times metal has more or less completely replaced the more primitive material. Very characteristic of American aborigines is the tobacco-pipe, which as the *calumet*, or pipe-of-peace, played an important part in the settlement of tribal disputes, and was never smoked except on occasions of ceremony. Among the Siouan tribes pipes were carved from a special sacred stone (catlinite), quarried in the central districts of the habitat of the family. They were frequently carved in the form of the tomahawk or axe, thus symbolising both peace and war. In modern times pipe-tomahawks, manufactured in Europe, came into vogue, and could be used either as an axe or as a pipe; the blade of the former making one extremity of the head, and the bowl of the latter the other, the perforated handle serving as the stem. But by far the most complex pipes were those formerly, and to some extent still, manufactured of black slate by the Haida tribe of Queen Charlotte Islands, on the North-west Pacific coast. They were cut out of a solid slab of stone, and carved into the images of various animals in such an elaborate and complicated manner that it is often difficult to discover the course of the tube, into one aperture of which was probably inserted a movable bowl and into the other a reed. As already indicated, a mixture of tobacco, bark, leaves, etc., known as *kinni-kinic*, was the material smoked.

As regards implements of war and the chase, the bow and arrow were to the North

Photo by Wm. Rau]

NORTH AMERICAN INDIANS IN CAMP.

[Philadelphia.

American Indians what the blow-pipe is to his distant cousin of Guiana, or the bolas to the native of the Argentine pampas. Among the tribes of the prairies the bow is a feeble-looking instrument, remarkable for its shortness, though capable of driving an arrow well through the massive hide of the bison at close quarters. Stone tomahawks were the original type of axe, but even in Catlin's time these were replaced by metal weapons made in Sheffield; and the same is true of the war-club, which was originally of wood with a spike of bone or iron, but was subsequently exchanged for a brass-studded European article. Similarly Sheffield steel scalping-knives, with ornamental sheaths, were substituted for the primitive stone-bladed implements. A lance or spear was also frequently used. Boomerangs from New Mexico are shown in the British Museum. Long pointed snow-shoes were used in winter by the Chippewyans and Siouans.

Among the tribes dwelling on the coast or large rivers, the canoe (which, by the way, is another native term) was the characteristic aboriginal vessel, which, however, varied considerably in construction in different districts. The best known, and at the same time the most graceful, is the birch-bark canoe of the Chippewyans and other northern tribes. But among many of the Siouans, as well as the Sac and Foxes among the Algonquians, the canoe was dug out from a log, although so thinned down as to be very light. Again, among the Siouans the Dakota squaws (women) made broad coracles of bison-hide, in which they transported themselves, their families, and their goods. These vessels were, however, despised by the men, who preferred to make their journeys by land.

Of the picture-writing practised by the North American Indians, limits of space allow merely the bare mention, but it was once largely used. In addition to this there was a "sign-language," by means of which information was conveyed through pantomimic gesture; some of the Siouans displaying extraordinary proficiency in this mode of communication. Mats and baskets of remarkably neat manufacture were made by the women of all the tribes, the Vancouver Islanders excelling in this respect; while embroidery with quills and beads on buckskin or bark was also a familiar art, as was the making of wooden bowls. On journeys water was, however, generally carried in bags made from the stomachs of deer and other animals.

Photo by Wm. Rau [*Philadelphia.*

GUANAJUATO WATER-CARRIERS, MEXICO.

Although the Indians of the country eastwards of the Mississippi grew maize, beans, pumpkins, melons, gourds, tobacco, and sunflowers, agriculture was not practised at all by the majority of the tribes, who obtained such vegetable food as they required from wild plants and trees, and devoted their energies to the pursuits of hunting and fishing. Previous to the introduction of the horse the dog was the sole domestic animal possessed by the aborigines of the districts under consideration; in addition to being used as a beast of burden and draught, dogs were also eaten as food, although by the time of Lewis and Clark, to whom it was offered, such meat appears to have been used only on special occasions of ceremony. But the great food-supply of many tribes, especially those of the Siouan stock, was the bison, some depending entirely upon this animal alike for food, clothing, and the other

necessaries of life. In the census of 1880 the number of Indians depending upon the bison in the territories under the United States Government was given as 74,758, of which 30,561 were Sioux. But this enumeration took no account of many thousands of Indians settled in the Indian Territory and other districts of the south-west, who drew a large supply of meat and robes from the chase of the buffalo, notwithstanding the fact that they had been induced by Government to take extensively to agriculture. Within the territories of the Dominion Government there were likewise hosts of natives depending upon that animal; and in the winter of 1886–87 many of these suffered severe privation, owing to the unexpected cutting off of their supplies by the bison's extermination.

By permission of the Field Columbian Museum, Chicago.
A HOPI BRIDE.

For more than half a century the chase of the bison by the Indians of the prairies was conducted on horseback; the slaughter of the former animal being accomplished at first by bows and arrows, but in later years with firearms. In 1766 Carver describes some of the Indians hunting the bison, but makes no mention of the employment of horses, although these were already in the possession of some of the tribes. Lewis and Clark refer to the Teton Sioux as being well-known horse-stealers in 1804, and it was about this date that some of the Algonquians acquired this animal, which was in common use among the Siouans in 1832. It is noteworthy that the Dakota name for the horse is the equivalent of dog, with an affix indicating size, sacredness, or mystery.

While the men were in the field hunting or fighting, the squaws remained at home to do the work of the camp, such as cooking, dressing hides, making clothes and baskets, preparing dried meat (*pemmican*), or building coracles. Among those tribes who cultivated maize and vegetables, this work also fell to the women's share.

To the moral and intellectual character of the North American Indians space admits of only the briefest reference. A reserved and moody temperament is highly characteristic of the typical North American Indian, who on all occasions endeavours to preserve an impassive external demeanour, which is often maintained even while undergoing intense bodily agony. It is considered, however, that this outward show of dignity is in most cases due rather to ostentation and vanity than to innate pride. It must not, however, be supposed that Indians never laugh; when among their own family, they do so heartily. Cruelty of disposition to their enemies is also a distinctive trait, although this was much more noted among the tribes to the east of the Mississippi than in those beyond. Towards one another, and especially towards the women and children, a kindly and affectionate disposition was displayed by the members of a tribe, although never in a demonstrative manner. Intellectually the North American Indian may be ranked below his Mongol cousin; the development of his intellect seeming to become arrested after childhood. They appreciate music, the usual instruments being the rattle, flute, and drum; the latter among the Siouans being a skin bottle or bag of water. It appears that the North American Indians invented a flageolet of hard wood or

cane before they had any knowledge of the European instrument. Good specimens from the Cocopa, Sioux, Creek, Apache, and other tribes are found in the U.S. National Museum. Sports, such as racing and dancing, were freely entered into, while games of chance were also appreciated, plum-stones serving as dice among some of the prairie tribes. Apache playing-cards made of skin are exhibited in the British Museum. The cruel rites by which the youths of many tribes were admitted to the rank of warriors need only bare mention.

The tribal system was maintained in great perfection; each tribe being governed by a paramount chief, under whom were minor chieftains. A very complex social system was also developed, into the details of which it is impossible to enter here. It may be observed, however, that, in the opinion of American anthropologists, the clan system—that is to say, the calculation of descent from the mother's side—was just being merged in the gens, or system of paternal descent, about the time that the natives came under European influence. "Every clan in a tribe," writes Mr. J. W. Powell, "receives a special name, which has come to be known as its *totem*. Thus in a tribe there may be a buffalo clan, a cloud clan, a wind clan, an eagle clan, and a parrot clan, with others. Sometimes the clan name is the common name for all persons in the clan, but more often there is a group of names signifying some real or

Photo by Wilfred Emery] [*Brondesbury.*

GUATUSO WOMEN AND CHILD, COSTA RICA.

mythological characteristic of the animal or object taken as the totem. For example, in the buffalo clan there may be a name signifying 'sitting bull,' another 'standing bull,' still another 'mad buffalo'; and names taken from the mythology of the buffalo may be used. The clan name, or totem, is used to distinguish the members of one clan from the members of another. It is never used in the first and second persons, but always in the third person. In direct address the kinship name expressing relative age must always be used. Uncles in the clan are addressed as fathers, cousins in the clan as brothers and sisters."

The so-called *taboo* and such-like prohibitions are used chiefly in connection with marriage; marriage among members of the same clan or gens being prohibited. Very curious is the prohibition of communication between children-in-law and parents-in-law. The names of the wife's parents, for instance, are never uttered by the husband; while the husband and the father-in-law always avoid entering the same lodge, so far as possible, and never even look on each other if they can help it. Similarly the wife never addresses her father-in-law. The adoption of these customs in European society might be conducive to family peace and quietness!

Photo by Wm. Rau] *[Philadelphia.*

A CARIB WOMAN OF DUTCH GUIANA, WITH LEG-BANDS.

A plurality of wives is clearly of advantage to a good hunter, since, if he possess but one squaw, her whole time must be devoted to household work, so that she is unable to dress furs and such-like, whereby her husband cannot accumulate property. Such may be one reason which has conduced to the general existence of polygamy among North American tribes; another, perhaps, being the superabundance of women, owing to the frequency of inter-tribal wars. Marriage is almost universally arranged by the purchase of the bride, with or without her own consent, from the father. In the case of an unwilling bride marriage by capture may have to be resorted to. Young people may, however, form mutual attachments which are stronger than tribal law; in such cases their only course is to abscond and live together in solitude as man and wife. If they maintain themselves there till the birth of a child, the marriage becomes *ipso facto* legalised; and it is in this way alone that a "love match" can be effected.

As regards the dead, corpses among the Mandans were exposed on scaffolds, where they were left till the bones were clean and dry; these latter being collected and buried, while the skulls were arranged in large circles on the open prairie, each placed on a bunch of wild sage. During the exposure of the bodies the scaffolds were frequently visited by the weeping relatives. The dead, too, were supplied with food; while in the case of a murdered man the corpse was often provided with a rope with which to bind his murderer in the next world. In curious contrast to this attention to the dead was the practice of exposing the aged and feeble (even when they were chiefs) to death by starvation, which formerly prevailed among the Missouri Siouans.

Another curious practice prevalent in Catlin's time on the lower parts of the Columbia, and much earlier among the Choctaws and Chicasas, was that of flattening the heads of infants. The unfortunate children were laid in a narrow wooden cradle, at the upper end of which was a lid working on a hinge, this being pressed down upon the forehead and there fixed.

Photo by Dr. Ehrenreich] [*Berlin.*

A CARIB OR ACKAWOI WOMAN (PROFILE), WITH SPIKES IN LOWER LIP AND EARS.

With regard to the prevalence of witchcraft, all that space allows us to say is that there was a body of men, and sometimes women also, who were known as medicine-men, shamans, or priests, whose province it was to control all religious ceremonies and to act as diviners. Under their control lay all ceremonies connected with war, hunting, fishing, and gathering the fruits of the earth; while it was likewise a part of their duty to regulate the climate and to control the good and evil destinies of the people under their charge. The chief shamans are men; but all the people are bonded together under shamanistic societies.

Unfortunately, space allows of only the most cursory allusion to the so-called "ghost-dance religion," which spread over the Western United States between 1889 and 1892, and was closely connected with the great Siouan rebellion of that time. In the devotees of this cult the normal mental processes were suspended and the ordinary bodily functions dominated for hours or days. Indians usually docile and contented suddenly became morose and bloodthirsty, while peaceful tribes on an instant broke into rebellion against the paramount power. The peculiar mode of thought characteristic of Indians generally, their habitual appeal to the unknown for the explanation of simple facts, together with their habit of peopling their natural surroundings with ghostly imaginations, doubtless, as Mr. J. Mooney well remarks, rendered them peculiarly susceptible to the advance of the new cult. In the curious and numerous ceremonies connected with the ghost-dance hypnotism played no inconsiderable part. Between thirty and thirty-five different tribes, numbering about 65,000 individuals, appear to have come under the influence of this strange cult, which died out as suddenly as it appeared.

Turning to the religious belief of the tribes under consideration, it will be a shock to many of our readers to learn that the belief in an all-powerful "Great Spirit" is an utter fallacy, due to a misapprehension on the part of the early students of Indian mythology. Among the Siouan tribes the creation and control of the world and its inhabitants were ascribed to *wakanda*, just as among the Algonquians it was attributed to *manito*—the mighty. "Yet," writes Mr. McGee, "inquiry shows that wakanda assumes various forms, and is rather a quantity than a definite entity. Thus, among many of the tribes, the sun is wakanda—not *the* wakanda or *a* wakanda, but simply wakanda; and among the same tribes the moon is wakanda, and so is thunder, lightning, the stars, the winds, the cedar, and various other things; even a man, especially a shaman, might be wakanda or a wakanda. In addition, the term was applied to mythic monsters of the earth, air, and waters; according to some of the sages the ground or earth, the mythic under-world, the ideal upper-world, darkness, etc., were wakanda or wakandas. So, too, the fetishes and the ceremonial objects and decorations were wakanda among different tribes. Among some of the groups various animals and other trees besides the specially wakanda cedar were regarded as wakandas; as already noted, the horse among the prairie tribes was the wakanda dog. In like manner many natural objects and places of striking character were considered wakanda. Thus the term was applied to all sorts of entities and

ideas, and was used indiscriminately as substantive and adjective, and with slight modification as verb and adverb. Manifestly a term so protean is not susceptible of translation into the more highly differentiated languages of civilisation. Manifestly, too, the idea expressed by the term is indefinite, and cannot justly be rendered into *spirit*, much less into *Great Spirit.*" Thus ends a myth crystallised into the English language by the poem "Hiawatha"!

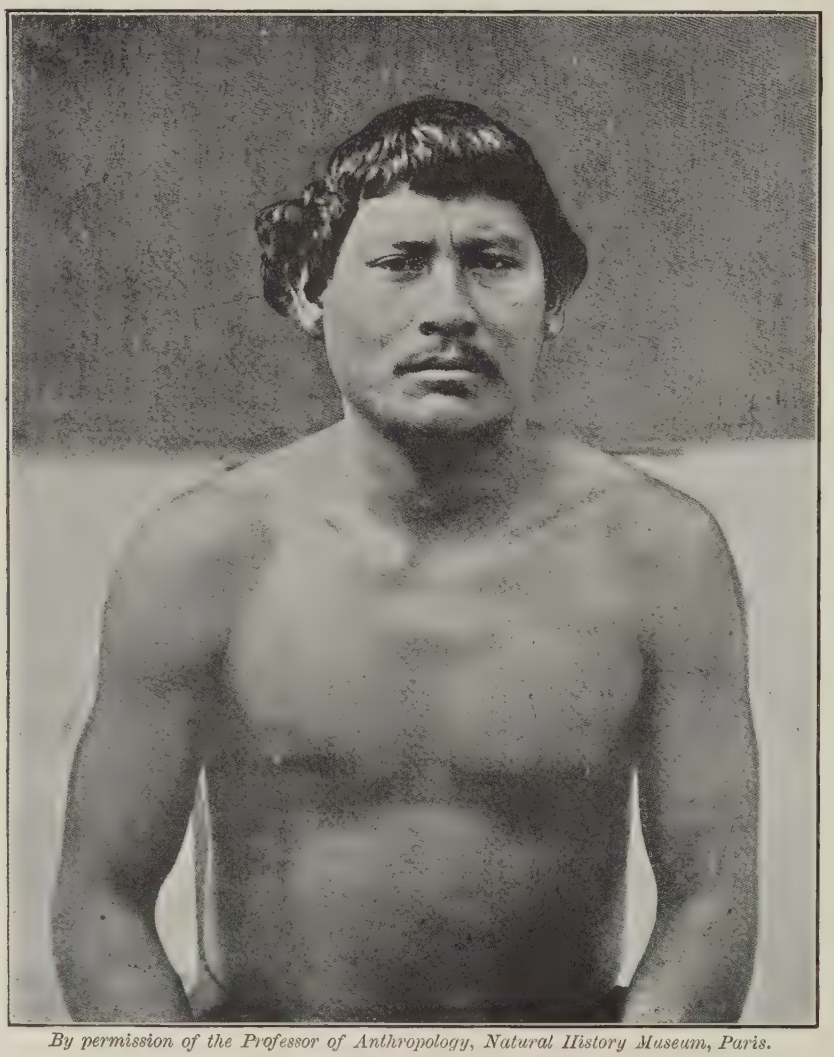
The so-called Pueblo (= Village) Indians of the flat table-lands (*mesas*) of Arizona and New Mexico differ so remarkably in their culture, habitations, and general mode of life from all the tribes hitherto considered that they must be noticed separately. It is not that they form a single linguistic or ethnical stock-group, like those above mentioned, because the Hopi, who inhabit seven villages in North-eastern Arizona (Tusaya), are undoubtedly a branch of the great nomad Shoshonean stock of the prairies, who have taken to a settled life. The reason for the association of all the Pueblo tribes is to be found rather in the general similarity of their customs, ceremonies, culture, traditions, and dwellings; in all of which respects they stand on a much higher platform than do their northern and eastern neighbours. In these respects, indeed, they appear to constitute in some degree a connecting-link between the latter and the still more cultured tribes of Mexico and Peru. It has further been suggested that a more or less intimate connection exists between the Pueblo Indians and the Algonquian mound-builders of the Ohio Valley. But this is not accepted by other writers, who regard the mounds, the Pueblo structures, and the Maya-Aztec monuments as of independent local origin.

Be this as it may, it is evident that the so-called cliff-dwellers of the Canyon de Chelly, in Arizona, form only one development of Pueblo culture. In addition to the Tusayan Hopi, already mentioned, who are commonly designated (by a vile term of abuse) Moki by their neighbours, the Pueblo Indians are divided into three groups, severally known as the Tanoan, Keresan, and Zuñian. Each of these speaks a different stock-language; and the whole of them number about 10,300, and occupy about thirty distinct villages, or *pueblos*. With the exception of the Zuñi, who inhabit a single pueblo in New Mexico, each of these stocks is subdivided into numerous tribes. And although as a matter of convenience all the Pueblo Indians have been brigaded in a single group in the table given on page 534, it will be manifest that the subdivisions of these groups really correspond to the stock-groups of the less cultured tribes.

All the Pueblo tribes dwell, or rather dwelt, as regards some of them, in permanent buildings, some of which were remarkable for their size and complexity. A writer in *Scribner's Magazine*, when describing the cliff-dwellings of the Canyon de Chelly, says that the "mysterious mound-builders fade into comparative insignificance before the grander and more ancient cliff-dwellers, whose castles lift their towers amid the sands of Arizona and crown the terraced slopes of the Rio Mancos and the Hovenweap. . . . In size and grandeur of

Photo by Dr. Ehrenreich] [*Berlin.*

A CARIB OR ACKAWOI WOMAN (FULL-FACE), WITH SPIKES IN LOWER LIP AND EARS.



By permission of the Professor of Anthropology, Natural History Museum, Paris.
A CARIB MAN.

conception they equal any of the present buildings of the United States, if we except the Capitol at Washington, and may without discredit be compared to the Pantheon and the Coliseum of the Old World."

Another writer, Mr. Mindeleff, says that "the whole Pueblo country is covered with the remains in single rooms and groups of rooms, put up to meet some immediate necessity. Some of these may have been built centuries ago, some are only a few years or a few months old, yet the structures do not differ from one another; nor, on the other hand, does the similarity imply that the builder of the oldest example knew less or more than his descendants of to-day—both utilised the material at hand, and each accomplished his purpose in the easiest way." Some of these fortresses, or *casas grandes*, as they are locally called, were capacious enough to contain the whole tribe who built them. But the object of this book is to describe living men and their customs rather than the buildings of past ages.

The Pueblo Indians themselves, as shown by three life-like busts in the Natural History Museum, are decidedly good-looking people, some being lighter-coloured than others, and grey hair not uncommon among the elders. Like American Indians in general, they never become bald. In both sexes the hair is confined by a fillet of red cloth across the forehead, passing round the head; while the body is enveloped in a blanket gracefully draped over the shoulders.

THE two photographs of Peruvian Indians were kindly supplied by Mr. J. G. Reid, of Lima.

CHAPTER XXIV.

CENTRAL AND SOUTH AMERICA (INCLUDING MEXICO).

PREVIOUS to the extermination, or reduction in numbers, of many tribes by the Spanish conquest, there appears to have been a continuous transition from the natives of North America to those inhabiting the southern half of the New World; some of the tribes of Central America being nearly related to certain North American stocks, while others came closer to those of South America. And even at the present day, when many of the links have been snapped, the South American natives are, in regard to physical characters, very similar to their northern kinsmen; so much so, indeed, that the distinctions between them are due more to differences in customs, culture, and language (which latter is, however, essentially of the same general type) than to variation in physical characters. The general physical similarity of all the Central and South American tribes is the more remarkable when the great physical differences presented by different parts of the immense country they inhabit are taken into consideration. From the tropical forests of Brazil to the snow-clad peaks of the Andes, and from these, again, to the open pampas of Argentina, the wilds of Patagonia, and the hail-swept shores of Tierra del Fuego, the aboriginal inhabitants present a singularly slight degree of divergence from one common type.

By permission of the Professor of Anthropology, Natural History Museum, Paris.

A CARIB WOMAN.

As we have seen in the last chapter, the North American aborigines, with the marked exception of the Pueblo Indians, present a great general similarity in their common mode of life and degree of culture; none of them, in their original state, having advanced

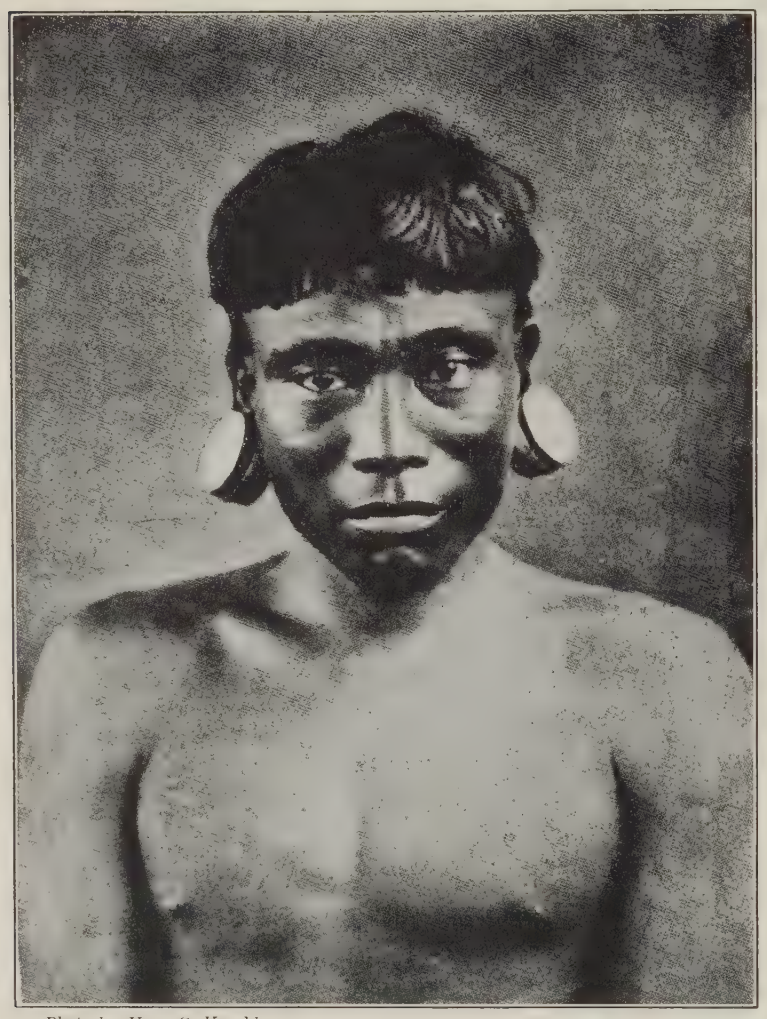


Photo by Herr C. Kroehler.

A PERUVIAN INDIAN, WITH ORNAMENTS IN THE LOBES OF THE EARS.

beyond a condition of semi-barbarism. In Central and South America, on the other hand, a very different state of things occurs; some of the native tribes, like the Aztecs and Incas, having reached a comparatively high grade of civilisation; while others were plunged in the lowest depths of savagery. Cannibalism, for instance, was much more prevalent in the south than in the northern half of the New World; and seems, moreover, to have come more naturally to the people, being practised when other diet was available, whereas in the north it was generally resorted to only under the pressure of dire necessity. Inequality of cultural development may accordingly be considered as very characteristic of the aborigines of Central and South America. And here it may be noticed that it was the more cultured nations that fell the easiest prey to the Spanish conquerors; many of them being in such an artificial condition of society that their organisation seemed to crumble to pieces of its own accord at the first shock of invasion. On the other hand, the less cultured races have tended to persist, either in their original condition or by a more or less complete blending with their conquerors, in a manner which forms a gratifying contrast to the fate of the majority of the tribes of North America. A further cause of satisfaction is afforded by the spread of Christianity among the South American natives. This is exemplified very strikingly in a table published about fifty years ago, in which the total number of Christianised natives was estimated at more than 1,500,000, while those remaining in original barbarism were set down at less than 100,000.

The number of tribes in Central and South America being so great, little good would be gained by attempting to enumerate them all; and attention will accordingly be concentrated on some of the more important or interesting groups, which must serve as samples of the whole assemblage.

CENTRAL AMERICA.

UNDER this name may be included the states of Lower California and Mexico, altogether with Yucatan, British Honduras, Guatemala, Honduras, San Salvador, Nicaragua, Costa Rica, and Panama. The West Indies, too, may be affiliated to Central America; but as their aboriginal population has been swept away, they need claim no special attention here.

By far the most interesting of the Central American populations are those groups

respectively known as the Nahuatlan and the Huaxtecan; the former comprising the Aztecs and the Pipils, and the latter the Mayas, Quichés, and Pocomans. The Nahuatlan group may be regarded as characteristic of the Plateau of Mexico, or Anahuac, as it used to be called, whereas the Huaxtecan stock attains its main development in Yucatan and Guatemala. Curiously enough, however, the typical Huaxtecs are a Mexican people dwelling in the states of Vera Cruz and Tamaulipas, while the Nahuatlan Pipils occur as far south as Nicaragua.

Since it is the object of the present work to describe existing rather than exterminated peoples, our mention of the Nahuatlan Aztecs must be very brief. As the result of modern researches, it appears that the Nahuatlan stock was an offshoot of the southern Shoshoneans of North America, and that the Aztecs established their famous empire, whose capital was Tenochtitlan (the modern city of Mexico), about the fifteenth century by the overthrow of the earlier Chichimecs, who also belonged to the same stock. The fall of the Aztec Empire before the Spanish conquerors in 1520 is a well-known historical fact; and it only remains to mention that during its brief existence this empire was infamous for the hideous cruelty of its so-called religious rites, in the celebration of which thousands of victims are said to have been immolated at a time. Their religion, such as it was, appears to have been borrowed from the Mayas; but, in accordance with the fierce Aztec nature, the gentle Maya deities became transformed into the incarnation of demons.

Passing by still earlier tribes with the bare mention that the splendid ruins of Mitla attest the high degree of civilisation of the pre-Aztec Zapotecs, another Mexican tribe, reference must be made to the Seri Indians of the Sonora district of North-western Mexico, on account of their being more savage than other tribes to the northward of the Isthmus of Panama. Mr. McGee, who visited them in 1895, states that "most of their food is eaten raw, they have no domestic animals save dogs, they are totally without agriculture, and their industrial arts are few and rude." A greater contrast to the Aztec and Maya civilisations could scarcely be imagined!

Although the Aztecs and their language have largely disappeared from the modern representative of their ancient capital, the city of Merida, in Northern Yucatan, which stands

Photo by Herr C. Koehler.

NATIVES OF PERU.

on the site of Ti-hoo, the ancient Maya capital, is at the present day to a great extent Mayan still. Even the old style of building is retained, the houses in the suburbs being built at an elevation of a yard or so above the level of the roadway, while the different streets are indicated by images of various birds representing the old Mayan minor deities. The Mayas are a people of delicate and almost feminine physiognomy, and of equally gentle disposition. Nevertheless, they held out stubbornly against the Spanish conquerors; and in a narrow strip of country between Yucatan and British Honduras a remnant of the Mayas has survived all the wars which have convulsed this part of the American Continent. There seems, indeed, a tendency for the Spanish settlers and half-breeds to become absorbed in the native stock; while, with the exception of the Campeachy district, the old Maya-Quiché dialects are tending to regain the ascendency in Yucatan and Guatemala. Even nominal Christians retain many of the old Maya rites; the descendants of the national astrologers still practising the ancient divinations, forecasting the future, and predicting good or bad harvests by the stars. The old tutelary deities have, however, assumed the names of Christian saints, although their attributes have become more or less modified; and the doctrine of the transmigration of souls still holds its position, as is exemplified by the practice of chalking the road from the house to the grave of a recently deceased person, in order that the soul may be able to find its way at the proper time to enter the body of a new-born child.

Photo by M. Pierre Petit] *[Paris.*

A GAUCHO OF LA PLATA.

But the chief interest connected with the Maya-Quiché civilisation centres on the system of reckoning time; and in this connection we cannot do better than quote from the report of the Director of the U.S. Bureau of Ethnology: "Most of the American tribes had advanced to the stage of graphic symbolism, and were thus on the threshold of writing when the New World was discovered by Columbus. Among many of the tribes the art was rudimentary, and limited to crude pictography. The pictographs were painted or sculptured on cliff-faces, boulders, the walls of caverns, and other rock-surfaces, and even more frequently, although less permanently, on trees, as well as on skins, bark, and various artificial objects. . . . Among certain Mexican tribes, also, autographic records were in use, and some of them were much better differentiated than any within the present area of the United States. The records were not only painted and sculptured on stone and moulded in stucco, but were inscribed in books or codices of native parchment and paper. Among the plains Indians the calendars are simple, consisting commonly of a record of winters and of notable events occurring either during the winter or during some other season of the year; while the shorter divisions are reckoned by 'nights' (days), 'dead moons' (lunations), and seasons of leafing, flowering, or fruiting of plants, migrating of animals, etc.; so that there is no definite system of reducing days to lunations or lunations to years. Among the Pueblo Indians calendric records are inconspicuous or absent, though there is a much more definite calendric system, which is fixed and perpetuated by religious ceremonies; while among some of the Mexican tribes there are elaborate calendric systems combined with complete calendric records. The perfection of the calendar among the Maya and Nahua Indians is indicated by the fact that not only were 365 days reckoned as a year, but the bissextile (leap year) was recognised—indeed, some astronomers have regarded the calendar of ancient Mexico as even more accurate than the Julian calendar of early Christendom."

MAP SHOWING DISTRIBUTION OF SOUTH AMERICAN INDIANS.

Photo by M. San Martin.

A GROUP OF SANAPANA MEN OF THE PARAGUAYAN CHACO.

With this quotation we must reluctantly leave Mexico and Central America proper to pass on to—

THE GUIANAS AND VENEZUELA.

THE extermination of nearly all the aborigines of the West Indies has made a break in what was once a complete connection between the natives of the northern and southern halves of the New World. The Cebunys of Cuba, the West Indian Caribs, and the Lucayans of the Bahamas were some of the links between the more northern tribes and the Caribs of the Guianas and the Arawakan group of Venezuela and the neighbouring districts. The Indians of British Guiana and adjacent territories having been treated in great detail by Mr. im Thurn, somewhat more space may be devoted to them than to their neighbours. Venezuela and the Guianas, it is scarcely necessary to say, occupy the north-eastern extremity of South America, and are forest-clad or savanna tropical countries. The aborigines found in these territories are divisible into three great groups, or branches, respectively named Warrauan, Arawakan, and Caribean. The first of these comprises only the Warrau tribe; the second embraces the Arawak, Atorai, Maypure, Wapiana, Vaura, Mahinacu, and Layana tribes; while the third includes the true Caribs, Bakairis, Nahuquas, Pamellas, Galibis, Calinas, Arecunas, Macusis, and Ackawois. Although distinguished by language, the members of these groups and tribes present but slight physical differences from one another, so that it requires a long residence among them before such points of distinction become recognisable. The Warraus are the shortest and weakest of all, their bodies being long in proportion to their limbs, their expression of countenance gloomy and morose, and their colour apparently very dark; the latter feature is, however, chiefly due to the amount of dirt with which the skin is covered. The members of the Arawakan group are taller and better-proportioned, the Arawaks themselves being only slightly superior in height to the Warraus, whereas the Wapianas are unusually tall for Indians, their bodies being slightly and well built, and their features regular and

fine. In all Arawakans the skin is much lighter than in the Warraus, partly owing to its natural colour, and partly to the cleanly habits of these people. The tribes of the Caribean group are all characterised by the darkness of the skin, the degree varying in the different tribes. The true Caribs are rather taller than the Arawaks, with well-knit frames, and coarser, although distinctly powerful features. The Ackawois are shorter and slighter in body; their general appearance, perhaps owing to their habits, being decidedly wretched. The Macusis are still darker than the true Caribs and Ackawois, but taller, slighter, and better-made; while their features are more regular, and their expression, although timid, is bright and intelligent. Darkest of all are the Arecunas, who in build and feature are very like the Macusis, although they are more powerful and fierce.

The Warraus, who are timid people of filthy habits, originally dwelt in houses built on poles in swamps and on the seashore, and are the great canoe-builders for their inland neighbours. The Arawaks are the cleanest and most civilised of all, many of them speaking English, wearing European clothes, and being Christians. Although their original habits have been much modified, they still dwell in houses of the primitive type, and still maintain their hereditary hatred of the Caribs. The Wapianas, Atorais, and kindred tribes are the great middlemen or traders of the districts they inhabit, and are likewise the canoe-builders for the coast tribes. Unlike their neighbours, they eat the cassava, which is the staple vegetable food of all the tribes, in the form of rough meal (*farine*), rather than of bread or cakes; in this respect they resemble the Brazilian natives. Although all the members of the Caribean stock are fiercer and more warlike than their neighbours, these attributes attain the maximum

Photo by M. San Martin.

A GROUP OF SANAPANA WOMEN OF THE PARAGUAYAN CHACO.

Photo by A. de S. Correa.

A PARTY OF BOTOCUDOS.

development among the true Caribs. The Caribs are further peculiar in that they are often found scattered irregularly among the other tribes; they are the great pottery-makers of the country, although this manufacture is shared to a small degree by the Ackawois, who, indeed, supply all their own needs, and are thus independent of the other tribes. Although very similar in customs and language, the gentle Macusis stand in awe of their bolder neighbours the Arecunas.

As regards physical features, Guiana may be divided into the coast region, next the forest region, and farther inland still the savanna districts, which pass southwards into the great savannas of Brazil. The northern coast region, in the neighbourhood of the sources of the Orinoco and nearest the West Indies, is inhabited by the Warraus, next to whom come the Arawaks. The forest region is almost exclusively populated by the Ackawois, although a few single settlements of true Caribs (who are more abundant elsewhere) are found here also. In the savanna region the Arecunas, Macusis, and Wapianas (with whom dwell the Atorais) are found to the north in the neighbourhood of the Orinoco, while farther south their place is taken by other tribes. With the exception of the Atorais and a few others who live among their neighbours, each tribe inhabits a distinct although ill-defined tract of territory. Naturally, the "forest" and "savanna Indians" differ more or less markedly from one another in their mode of life. It is further important to notice that, whereas the Warrauan and Arawakan stocks appear to be truly indigenous to the country, the Caribeans are to be regarded in the light of immigrants; their original home, according to the latest investigations, being the highlands of Matto Grosso, in the interior of Brazil.

A very curious difference between the native and immigrant stocks is that the former make their hammocks (which, by the way, are very characteristic of South American Indians) from the fibres of a palm, whereas the immigrants employ cotton for this purpose.

As regards physique, the Indians under consideration are characterised by their sleekness and their tendency to run to fat at an early age; this being due to their cassava diet. The features are often more Mongoloid than is the case with the tribes of North America; the expression is mostly gentle, and the eyes are habitually downcast. Although capable, at a pinch, of undergoing a long spell of protracted labour, the Indians of Guiana are a physically weak race, and require to recuperate after unusual toil by a rest of several days in their hammocks. In their original condition most of them—the Ackawois, for example—are characterised by the practical absence of dress, the women wearing a fringed apron, and the men a strip of cloth between the legs. Even when European clothes have been adopted, these are found irksome, and are often doffed when away from the settlements. Both sexes wear the hair long and parted in the middle; they never become bald, and light yellow hair, which in these Indians represents the grey locks of Europe, is of rare occurrence. Indeed,

they are a short-lived people, becoming aged at forty, and but rarely surviving till sixty. Cleanliness is a pleasing feature of the majority; this being due to the frequent baths, which are always taken just after a meal. In swimming the legs are scarcely bent out, but are drawn straight under the body, and then shot backwards.

Flattening the head of infants, which formerly prevailed among the Caribs, is still practised by a little-known tribe on the Essequibo. "Among the true Caribs," writes Mr. im Thurn, "a two-inch-broad belt of cotton is knitted round each ankle and just below each knee of very young female children; and this band is never throughout life removed, or if removed is immediately replaced. The consequence is that the muscles of the calf swell out to an abnormal degree between these bands, while those parts of the leg which are actually constricted remain hardly thicker than the bone. . . . The arms are more rarely constricted in the same way. Of the other Carib tribes, the Macusi and Arecuna women have one such constriction above each ankle, but not the second below the knee. . . . The true Carib and Ackawoi women, and more rarely those of other tribes, pierce one or more holes in their lower lips, through each of which they pass, point outward, a pin or sharpened piece of wood. What the object of this may be I do not know, as kissing is unknown among Indians; but the effect is that the lips are protected by a dangerous-looking row of spikes. Similarly the men pierce one hole just under the middle of their lower lips, through which they pass the loop of a string, fastening it inside the mouth, to which is attached a bell-shaped ornament, hanging down over the chin; and they pierce the cartilage of the septum of their noses, from which they suspend a half-moon-shaped ornament. The ears, too, of men, and sometimes of women, are pierced, and pieces of stick or straw passed through the openings."

By permission of the South American Missionary Society.

WAR INDIANS OF THE LENGUA TRIBE.

By permission of the South American Missionary Society.

LENGUAS OF THE PARAGUAYAN CHACO.

Sandals, cut from the leaf-stalk of a palm, are occasionally worn; and although speedily destroyed by use, can be quickly replaced. As regards ornamental dress, this is worn by some tribes habitually, and by others only on special occasions. Painting is frequently employed, and often so extensively and in such a tasteful manner as to convey the impression that the person so adorned is fully clothed. Tattooing is, however, rare, and chiefly confined to the production of small tribal marks at the corners of the mouth or on the arms. It is true that the bodies of most Indians are scored with straight scars, but these have been produced for surgical purposes. Necklaces of peccari (pig) tusks and a pair of armlets are worn by most of the men, who also often twist strings of coloured seeds or beads round their ankles and wrists. Of the nose-pieces, those of a crescent or cheese-knife shape are peculiar to the Carib stock, and the circular to the Wapianas. Specimens of Macusi and other feather head-dresses may be seen in the British Museum. Regarding these Mr. im Thurn writes as follows: "Beautiful crowns of feathers, of two shapes, the colours varying with the tribe to which each Indian belongs, are worn on the head. Several strings of cotton hang from the back of these down to the heels, where they are finished off with skins of toucans, fire-birds, cocks-of-the-rock, and other such bright-coloured birds, or with tassels made of iridescent beetles' wings, which tinkle like tiny bells at each movement of the bearer. . . . Ruffs made of the long tail-feathers of macaws are fastened on to the shoulders so as to stand out almost at right angles to the body. Very short mantles of woven cotton, from which hang long cotton cords, ornamented at frequent intervals with tufts of white down, are occasionally worn; but the art of making these is said to have been lost. Collars made of white heron [egret] feathers, or the black feathers of the curassow bird, are sometimes worn, especially by those engaged in races." Such decorations are, however, mainly confined to the male sex, the women seldom wearing either feathers or teeth, except tusks of agoutis, although they load themselves with ropes of seeds and beads. Children, on the other hand, are decorated much like their elders, although special kinds of seeds are used for their necklaces, while in the case of teeth-necklaces these are made from the tusks of the jaguar.

Unlike the natives of Argentina, the Indians of the Guianas and Venezuela travel either on foot or in canoes. In hunting, which forms the chief occupation of the men, dogs are employed; these being stated to be cross-breeds between two fox-like wild species. Fish are caught by poisoning the water, by shooting with arrows, by nets, traps, or hook and line. Very beautiful are the fish-arrows, which are shot from a bow, the head frequently becoming

detached from the shaft, but remaining fixed to a line, at the other end of which is a float. A very heavy type of arrow is employed for shooting the river-tortoises, whose eggs form such an important item in the diet of the Indians of the Orinoco; while yet other descriptions are respectively used for big game and birds. Very characteristic are the deadly arrows tipped with *ourali* poison. The points of these arrows, which are more or less jagged, are in the form of long, narrow strips of wood; these are carried separately in a bamboo quiver, and only inserted in the reed shaft immediately before use. The blow-pipe, which in Guiana is restricted to the savanna tribes, is a very characteristic South American implement, consisting of a bamboo tube from 12 to 16 or more feet in length, through which is blown a small dart. The darts consist of splinters of wood, tipped with ourali, 5 or 6 inches in length, and are carried in a quiver, together with the jaw of a small fish (*perai*) and a basket of cotton or other fibre. "When game is seen," to quote once more from Mr. im Thurn, "one of the darts is placed between two of the sharp teeth of the perai, and twisted sharply round in such a way that a very small portion of the point is almost but not quite severed from the main part; this is in order that the point may break off in the body of the animal, that the dart may again be used. A little of the fibre is then wound round the other end of the dart—*i.e.* the dart is 'feathered'—care being taken not to destroy the balance. The dart is then inserted in the blow-pipe, aim is taken, the dart is blown, and the bird almost invariably falls. The certainty with which an Indian can take aim with these hugely long weapons, even when supported by only one hand, is really wonderful. The range of the weapon is as much as from 40 to 50 feet." The men are the hunters and fishers, and spend the days on which they are at home lying idle in their hammocks, smoking cigarettes and talking. All the house-work, tilling the ground, sowing and reaping the crops, grinding the cassava, etc., falls to the share of the women.

As regards dwellings, the Warraus, as already mentioned, used to build houses supported on poles on the low and swampy coast-lands; but, under the security afforded by good government, these have fallen to a great extent into disuse, although a few are still constructed. The Arawaks, Ackawois, and true Caribs of the forest districts, where there is shelter from cold winds, build houses consisting merely of a roof with suitable supports. On the other hand, the Macusis, Arecunas, and Wapianas of the open savannas construct substantial dwellings with thick walls of clay, and a thatch of palm-leaves. Space does not allow of reference to the interior economy of these houses, but it may be mentioned that the inhabitants always

By permission of the South American Missionary Society.

AN ENCAMPMENT OF LENGUA INDIANS.

By permission of the South American Missionary Society.

A GROUP OF LENGUA CHILDREN, PARAGUAYAN CHACO.

sleep with a fire so close beneath their hammocks that the flames seem to lick their bare bodies.

Like all American aborigines, the Guiana Indians are prone to self-torture; and no man can receive full rights of tribalship till he has undergone some hard ordeal. These tortures are also submitted to in order to ensure success in hunting and fishing; and are inflicted not only on the hunters themselves, but likewise on their dogs. A brush of fibres attached to a long string is, for example, pulled through the nose into the mouth; irritating hairy caterpillars are rubbed into the limbs till a painful rash ensues; or the victim may be tormented in various ways by the bites of venomous ants, or with red pepper.

The clan system is, or was, strictly followed among the Arawak tribes, the descent being exclusively in the female line, and no intermarriage with relations on the maternal side permitted. Accordingly, a person may take a husband or a wife from his or her father's family, or from any other family save that of the mother. And when an Arawak takes a wife, he forthwith domiciles himself with his father-in-law, for whom he works; thus absolutely identifying himself with the family of his bride. There are, however, still some traces in Guiana of marriage by capture. Boys and girls are betrothed at an early age, but the nature of the bargain for a wife is still obscure; and, in general, marriage ceremonies are dispensed with. That curious custom of the *couvade*, according to which it is the husband who, on the birth of a child, takes to his hammock, where he is carefully tended by the relatives and fed on a special diet, is universally prevalent. Although Arawaks when old and useless are allowed to take to their hammocks, where they are somewhat grudgingly served with food, they receive little else in the way of attention. When death comes, the relatives usually exhibit slight evidences of grief, but will sometimes indulge in loud lamentation and cut their hair. Usually the body of the deceased is wrapped in his own hammock, and interred in a palm-leaf-lined grave dug in the middle of the house. Properly the corpse should be placed in a sitting posture, or, among the Ackawois, in the standing position; but

Photos by M. Pierre Petit] [*Paris.*

ARAUCANIANS AND THEIR CHILDREN.

nowadays it is seldom that the grave is dug of sufficient depth to admit of this. Certain possessions are also buried with the body. On the completion of the interment a fire is lighted over the grave, the praises of the deceased are chanted, with dancing, singing, and drinking; and the house is then finally deserted. Dancing and feasting are, moreover, indulged in on many occasions, when a large quantity of the national beverage (*paiwari*) is always consumed. Invitations to these paiwari feasts are sent to the neighbouring tribes; and the performance may take the shape of either wrestling or dancing, the dancers carrying specially decorated sticks. Formerly the whip-dance, in which each performer was armed with a *macquarie*, or fibre whip, with which at stated intervals he slashed his partner's legs, was a favourite diversion.

Photo by M. Pierre Petit] *[Paris.*

AN ARAUCANIAN MAN.

BRAZIL, PARAGUAY, ETC.

MANY of the tribes mentioned in the preceding section extend southwards into Brazil, the interior of which, as already mentioned, appears to have been the birthplace of the Caribs. It remains, however, to state that the Arawakan stock has a still greater southern extension, reaching to the head-waters of the Paraguay River in lat. 20° S. A totally distinct Brazilian stock is the Gesan, in which are included the Camacans and the notorious Botocudos; the latter resembling the Eskimo in the long and narrow shape of their heads.

In the Goyaz district, lying due west of Bahia, are a large number of Gesan tribes, sometimes collectively known as Tapuyans. They comprise the Kayapos or Suyas, of the district between the Araguaya and Xingu rivers, and likewise the Akuas or Cherentes, of the Upper Tocantins. The Botocudos, on the other hand, inhabit the Serra dos Aimores, on the coast, whence they are frequently known by the name of Aimores. Although of late years considerably improved by missionary exertions, they were formerly among the lowest of the American peoples—so low, indeed, that they had not even reached the level of a stone age, all their implements, weapons, and household utensils being made of wood or bone. They wandered naked through the primeval forests of their native home, without dwellings of any kind, and sleeping on the bare ground or among the ashes of their last camp-fires. In addition to the flesh of such larger animals as they could manage to kill, their food consisted of grubs, frogs, snakes, honey, roots, berries, and fruits; these being frequently consumed raw, but sometimes cooked in large bamboo vessels. Feuds were constant between the different tribes, and the bodies of the slain were always devoured by the victors, while their heads were set on stakes and employed as targets in archery practice. Among their most prized ornaments were collars and necklaces made of the teeth of those whom they had devoured in their cannibal feasts. Even among such degraded creatures as these the sacredness of the marriage tie—for the period the union lasted—was, however, strictly observed. In other respects the women had but a poor time, being frequently belaboured with heavy clubs or slashed with bamboo knives by their lords and masters. As to their religion, if such it could be called, the sun was regarded as the source of all things good, and the moon of all evil. Demons, which could be frightened

away by shooting arrows, were supposed to be the cause of storms and eclipses; and fires were kept burning over newly made graves to scare evil spirits.

Another Brazilian stock-group is that of the Guaranian, or Tupi-Guaranian, as it is often termed; the Tupi tribes occupying a very large portion of Eastern Brazil, while Guarani peoples are found about the head-waters of the main stream of the Amazons and its tributary the Madeira, as well as in Paraguay and Uruguay. Both languages are near akin; but as the Tupi tongue was chosen by the missionaries as the *lingua franca* for a large tract of countries, it has been adopted by some tribes not properly belonging to the section. Among the Tupi tribes one of the most remarkable was that of the Omaguas, or Flat-heads, who were found on the left bank of the Amazons as far as Peru and Ecuador. Originally they extended all over the country between the Putumayo and Tunguragua or Upper Marañon rivers; and they are still well represented on the head-waters of the Japura, in Ecuador and Colombia. Their near neighbours are the Tacunas and Tacanas, with the former of whom they were constantly at feud. The Tacanas occupy the country bordering the Madre-de-Dios and Beni, head-tributaries of the Madeira in Northern Bolivia. Still farther south on the last-named river we enter the country of the Naquiñoñeis, or Chiquitos (Dwarfs), as they are called by the Spaniards; the latter name being derived from the extremely small size of the entrances to their houses, which, when found abandoned, were supposed by the conquerors to be the abodes of pygmies. Like certain South American tribes, the Tacunas believe in the existence of good and evil principles, which are forever striving one against the other for the possession of the souls of men. Curiously enough, the Chiquitos are said to have no numerals above one; yet they are an industrious people, cultivating cotton, indigo, and sugar, and manufacturing copper boilers for refining the latter. Farther south, in the Gran Chaco country, lying well within the Parana Watershed, the Chiquitos are replaced by the savage Tobas, between the Pilcomayo and Vermejo rivers, and by the Matacos, or Mataguayos, on the latter. The Tobas are said to present a distinctly European cast of countenance, but are specially distinguished by their relatively short limbs and strongly developed chest.

Of the Southern Guarani, who form the substratum of the Paraguayan nation, some still wander in a more or less aboriginal condition through the forests of the Parana, while others have adopted Christianity. Some years ago the Christianised Guarani inhabited thirty-two large towns on the banks of the Parana, Paraguay, and Uruguay rivers; while among the uncivilised tribes were reckoned the Chiriguanos, Tobatinguas, and Payaguas.

By permission of the South American Missionary Society.

A WITCH-DOCTOR OF ARAUCANIA.

By permission of the South American Missionary Society.
CIVILISED ARAUCANIANS.

THE NORTHERN ANDES.

BEFORE taking into consideration the tribes to the south of the Rio de la Plata, a few words must be said in regard to those of the northern portion of the chain of the Andes, extending from Colombia, through Ecuador, Peru, and Bolivia, to Chili. Since, however, our knowledge of many of these tribes is now solely supplied by history, the mention of them will be very short. Throughout this area the natives at the time of the Spanish conquest had attained a high degree of civilisation, which was in some respects on a level with that of Central America at the same period, although in others markedly inferior. Hence the whole area has been not inaptly termed by Professor Keane "the cultural zone." On the plateau of Bogota, in Colombia, the cultured peoples were represented by the Muyscas, or Chibchas, who had developed a well-organised system of government and other institutions. The cultured area was, however, but limited, as in the immediate neighbourhood were other members of the Muyscan stock, commonly known as Panches, still living in primitive barbarism, being without government, wearing no clothes, and practising, it is said, cannibalism. The Muyscan Empire—in which the high priest occupied a very prominent position—was a highly artificial and unstable state of society, which crumbled to pieces at the first shock of invasion.

Some distance to the south of the Muyscan Empire was the still more important Quechuan, or Inca, dominion, which comprised nearly the whole of the Andes proper, extending from the equator in the neighbourhood of Quito to the Rio Maule in Central Chili. The total length of the territory was about 2,500 miles, and its average breadth some 400 miles; the area thus being about 1,000,000 square miles, with a population of 10,000,000. The Quechuas, or Incas, were the dominant race; and although their language has been superseded by Spanish in the seaport and other large towns, it still maintains its hold in the country districts. Nearly allied are the Quitus and the Chinchas; but the Bolivian Aymaras were more distinct. These latter were the builders of the stupendous ruins of Tiahuanaco, on the southern shore of Lake Titicaca, situated on the confines of Peru and Bolivia. Titicaca was

subsequently incorporated in the Inca dominion, with the result that the Aymaran divinities, ritual, and traditions were likewise assimilated by the Quechuan Incas. In their elevated home the Incas succeeded in breeding from the wild guanaco two domesticated varieties—namely, the alpaca and the llama; the former being raised for its wool and flesh, while the latter was used for carrying burdens. Gold, silver, copper, and lead were worked in the Potosi mines, although iron was unknown. On the highlands they cultivated the potato, and on the lower grounds maize; and their cloth of alpaca wool was of excellent quality. With the remark that both Quechuas and Aymaras differed considerably in physical features from their Guaranian neighbours, we must pass on to mention that the Antisian group occupied the true Antis, or Andes, which forms the third chain of the Cordillera of Peru and Bolivia. Reference must also be made to the pre-Inca Chimus, the presumed builders of the great Temple of the Sun at Chimu, the modern Truxillo, on the coast of Northern Peru. The Ivaro, or Jivaran Indians of Ecuador, are in the habit of removing the skull and contracting the head-skin of their deceased relatives until it becomes scarcely larger than the fist, the form of the features being retained.

With these too brief remarks on the inhabitants of the "cultural zone," we proceed to the consideration of the tribes inhabiting—

SOUTHERN CHILI AND ARGENTINA.

THE effete civilisations above mentioned were limited to the southward by the Rio Maule, which enters the sea below the city of Talca, in Central Chili; and as we have also seen that the Guaranian tribes extended on the opposite side of the continent to the Rio de la Plata, there remain for consideration those inhabiting that portion of America lying south of these points, together with those of part of Northern Argentina.

By permission of the South American Missionary Society.

A CHILIAN NATIVE AND HIS WIVES.

South of the Rio Maule the aborigines called themselves Moluche, or "warrior-people," the affix *che* in the Araucanian language denoting "people." They are, however, more generally known by their Spanish title of Araucanians (rebels), a name due to their independence and intolerance of foreign dominion. In Chili, however, the Araucanians, although retaining a modicum of freedom, are fast allies of the republic. As to the exact sense in which the term Moluche, or Araucanian, is employed, there is, however, some difference of usage. Properly speaking, the sections known as Picunche, Pehuenche, Huilliche, and Puelche, respectively meaning North, Central (from the Pehuen district), South, and East tribes, are but divisions of the Moluche. Of these, the term Puelche rightly includes those Moluches which extend eastwards of the Cordillera into Argentine territory as far as Mendoza, but it has also been extended to embrace the Pampas Indians of Buenos Aires, and thus all the aborigines as far south as the Rio Negro. The Araucanians have not only no central government, but no tribal chiefs; the head of each family being the chief of all his descendants. Custom seems, indeed, to be the only force which impels the members of the various tribes to collect together for mutual self-defence or other purposes; after which they rapidly disperse to their scattered dwellings. The spirits of departed Moluche are supposed to dwell in the Milky Way, whence they watch over their kindred below; this ancestral supervision being apparently the main bond of union between the tribes. Most Araucanians are of a distinctly lighter shade of complexion than the Peruvian tribes. From the greater part of the Pampas of Buenos Aires the Indians have been swept away by European colonisation; their places being at first taken by the Gauchos, or half-breeds, who are themselves fast disappearing before the tide of foreign immigration. Both Gauchos and Indians are essentially horsemen, the introduction of the horse having profoundly modified the original mode of life of the latter, of which little is really known. So ingrained is the habit of riding among both peoples, that it is a common saying in Argentina that an Indian or Gaucho will walk a mile to catch a horse in order to ride a quarter of a mile. Both are well clothed; the *poncho*, or blanket with a hole cut in the centre, through which the head is thrust, being the garment donned over others in bad weather. Both are experts in the use of the *lasso* and *bolas*; the former being a rope with a running noose at one end, and the latter either two or three balls fastened together by strings and hurled at animals. After mentioning that the union between man and horse is less marked in the Gaucho than in the Pampas Indian, Mr. W. H. Hudson observes that the savage nature of the latter brings him nearer to the level of the animal he rides. "The Indian horse is more docile, he understands his master better; the slightest touch of the hand on his neck, which seems to have developed a marvellous sensitiveness, is sufficient

By permission of the South American Missionary Society.
AN ARAUCANIAN BEAUTY.

Photo by Wm. Rau]

A TEHUELCHE WOMAN AND CHILDREN, DRESSED IN GUANACO ROBES.

[*Philadelphia.*

By permission of the South American Missionary Society.

MAPUCHE NATIVES OF ARAUCANIA.

to guide him. The Gaucho labours to give his horse 'a silken mouth,' as he aptly calls it: the Indian's horse has it from birth. Occasionally the Gaucho sleeps in the saddle: the Indian can die on his horse." It should be added that Gauchos are for the most part of Spanish origin on the paternal and Indian on the maternal side; being half-breeds, they demand no further notice here. Pampas Indians, like the Patagonians, confine their long hair by a fillet passing, across the forehead, round the head.

To the south of the Rio Negro we enter the country of the Patagonians, or Tehuelches (Chuelches), as they are called by their Araucanian neighbours; a people celebrated for their tall stature, and, in former days, for the fierceness and cruelty of their disposition. There are various tribal groups of these people, into the consideration of which it will be unnecessary to enter here; but it may be mentioned that originally they were divided into the Northern Tehuelches, who ranged some distance south of the Chubut River, and the Southern Tehuelches, who inhabited all the country south of the Rio Chico, and thence extended into Tierra del Fuego. Of late years, however, these divisions have been swept away by the migrations of these wandering people. It is suggested by Keane that the Tehuelches are descended from a numerous nation of gigantic aborigines, who inhabit the Brazilian states of Matto Grosso and Goyaz, and have long been known to the Portuguese settlers as Bororos. The Tehuelche language is perfectly distinct from both the Araucanian and the Puelchean of the Pampas Indians.

Writing of the Tehuelches, Darwin says that "their height appears greater than it really is, from their large guanaco [skin] mantles, their long flowing hair, and general figure; on an average their height is about 6 feet, with some men taller and only a few shorter; and the women are also tall; altogether they are certainly the tallest race which we anywhere saw. In features they strikingly resemble the more northern Indians whom I saw with Rosas, but they have a wilder and more formidable appearance; their faces were much painted with red and black, and one man was ringed and clothed with white like a Fuegian." On the other hand, Captain Musters, who made a long journey through the heart of Patagonia, puts the average height at not more than 5 feet 10 inches. Individual men of 6 feet 4 and 6 feet 10 inches have been measured. In general physique the Tehuelches accord with

their height; the muscular development of the arms and chest being extraordinary, while as a rule they are well proportioned throughout. Captain Musters especially notices the high instep; a feature so developed that a Tehuelche with whom he had arranged to barter a pair of London-made boots was quite unable to get them on. Their powers of walking and of abstaining from food for long periods are remarkable; a party of them on one occasion walking a distance of over forty miles within twelve hours without once touching food. Their features are decidedly pleasing, the eyes being bright, and the nose aquiline and well formed. Very characteristic are the prominent ridges over the eyebrows; above which the forehead is somewhat retreating. When cleaned from paint and dirt, the complexion of the men is reddish brown, and has been compared to the colour of Devon cattle. All hairs on the face—sometimes including even the eyebrows—are carefully eradicated with tweezers; and the long flowing hair of the scalp, which is confined by a cloth fillet, is carefully dressed. Grey hair is rare, although the occurrence of snow-white locks has been recorded. The hair of the women scarcely equals in length that of their lords, and is plaited into a pair of long tails; these, among the unmarried, being lengthened on festive occasions with horse-hair ornamented with blue beads and terminating in silver pendants. Although not ageing prematurely, when old the women become really hideous. Unlike the men, they never walk, but perform all their journeys on horseback.

Photo by Dr. Paul Hyades, from the "Mission Scientifique du Cap Horn."
A FUEGIAN MAN.

"The dress of the men," writes Captain Musters, "consists of a *chiripa*, or under-garment, round the loins, made of a poncho, a piece of cloth, or even of a guanaco mantle. . . . All other garments are supplied by the capacious and warm skin-mantle, which, worn with the fur inside and the painted side out, will keep the wearer dry for a considerable time in the wettest weather. This is often dispensed with in the chase; but if worn when riding, is secured at the waist by a belt of hide, or leather

Photo by K. Günther] *[Berlin.*

A TEHUELCHE MAN.

if it can be obtained. . . . When sitting by the fireside, or even when walking about, the furred part of the mantle is generally kept over the mouth—as the Tehuelches aver that the cold wind causes sore gums—a habit which assists in rendering their guttural and at all times rather unintelligible language more difficult of comprehension to the novice. Their *potro* boots, or buskins, are made from the skin of a horse's hock, and occasionally from the leg of a large puma, drawn on up to the knee and fastened round the foot. It is thus worn for a day or two until the boots have taken the shape of the foot, when the leather is cut at the toes and sewn up to fit. When the sole is worn, or in very wet or snowy weather, hide overshoes are worn besides, and the footprints thus made are really large enough to carry the idea of giants' feet, and partly explain the term 'Patagon,' or large feet, applied to these Indians by their Spanish discoverers." In riding, the boots are secured with garters, which are ordinarily made of bright-coloured woven bands, but in the case of chiefs are of hide ornamented with large silver buckles. In addition to the fillet binding the hair, hats are worn when procurable.

The mantle of the women is fastened at the throat by a large broad-headed silver pin, by a nail, or by a thorn, according to the circumstances of the wearer; beneath this being a kind of loose shirt, made of some calico stuff, and reaching from the shoulders to the ankles. A broad belt, ornamented with the favourite blue beads and bosses of silver or brass, serves to confine the mantle when travelling. The boots are like those of the men, with the exception that the hair is left on the hide of which they are made. In spite of the severity of the climate the children are generally suffered to run about in a state of nudity till between six and eight years of age, and always prefer to be barefoot. Nevertheless, they are provided with small mantles, as well as with boots made of soft shamoyed leather from the fore-legs of the guanaco. Both sexes are fond of ornaments, and smear their faces with paint; the latter substance being more rarely applied also to the body, and being said to prevent the skin chapping. The ornaments of the women take the form of necklaces of blue beads or silver, as well as of large square earrings fastened

to small rings passed through the lobes of the ears. By the men silver is used, when circumstances permit, to adorn their pipes, knife-hilts and sheaths, belts, and horse-trappings; silver spurs and stirrups being added by those who can afford such luxuries. Although the beads are imported, the silver ornaments are hammered out of the dollars taken in commercial transactions.

During their frequent journeyings the babies are carried in wicker and hide-thong cradles, made to fit on their mothers' saddles; these cradles, in the case of affluent families, being ornamented with brass bells or silver plates. The paint used for the face and body on ordinary occasions is made of ochre and black earth mixed with guanaco marrow; but on special occasions white paint and powdered gypsum are employed. In their ceremonial dances the men, who are clothed in nothing but a loin-cloth, decorate their heads with the plumes of the rhea, or South American ostrich, and wear a belt, to which are affixed brass bells, across one shoulder. Bathing forms a regular part of the morning toilet; notwithstanding which Tehuelche garments swarm with vermin. Any hairs that may be brushed out during the toilet, as well as all nail-parings, are scrupulously burnt.

The Tehuelches dwell in capacious tents made of guanaco-hide; but as to describe these would exceed the limits of our space, our readers may be referred to one of the plates illustrating Lady Florence Dixie's "Across Patagonia." The opening of the *toldo*, as the tent is called, is directed away from the prevailing wind, and a fire lighted just in the entrance. The furniture comprises a few bolsters, made out of old ponchos, and one or two horse-hides to serve as curtains. An iron spit forms the most important cooking utensil, but sometimes an iron pot may be added; while armadillo-shells or wooden platters, in which to hold broth, may also form a part of the equipment. In the old days, at least, the flesh of the rhea formed the favourite food, guanaco-flesh, as well as that of the pampas deer, being less esteemed. Blood is on all occasions drunk eagerly; and marrow and fat, in the absence of farinaceous food, form essential articles of diet. Horse-flesh seems to be chiefly eaten at dances and other ceremonies. The chief weapons used in hunting are the bolas and the lasso; of the former there are two types, one, the *chumè*, fitted with two balls and employed in rhea-hunting, and the other, called *yachiko*, furnished with three balls and used for taking the guanaco. Formerly the balls were made of stone, the most ancient type being distinguished by having a deep groove chiselled round it; but other substances are now employed. Guanaco and rhea are caught by being struck round the neck, although cattle and horses are balled round the hind-legs. Flint arrow-heads are met with in many parts of Patagonia.

Photo by M. Pierre Petit] [*Paris.*

A FUEGIAN WOMAN.

TIERRA DEL FUEGO.

LEAVING the continent of South America, our brief remaining space must be devoted to the inhabitants of the desolate and storm-swept island to the south of the Strait of Magelhaen. The typical Fuegians are properly

known as Yahgans, and speak a dialect distinct from all the continental tongues; in addition to this there is a second dialect known as Alakaluf, which may be distantly related to the Araucanian, and also a third —the Ona—which seems nearer to Patagonian. Great differences are observable in the accounts given of the Fuegians by different observers—as, for instance, Fitzroy and Darwin on the one hand, and more recent travellers, like Dr. P. Hyades, of the French expedition to Cape Horn, on the other. It has been suggested that such discrepancies are in great part due to the alteration in the manners of the natives by the English missionaries; and as the older accounts are more likely to portray the original habits of the people, the following notes are culled from Darwin's narrative.

Photo by Dr. Paul Hyades, from the "Mission Scientifique du Cap Horn."

FUEGIANS.

In stature the Eastern Fuegians are compared by the last-named writer to the Patagonians; the three young men seen by him being about 6 feet in height. Their skin is of a dirty coppery-red colour; and at the time of Darwin's visit the only garment of the men on the east coast was a mantle of guanaco-skin, with the hair outside, loosely thrown over the shoulders. An old man forming the fourth of the party had a fillet of white feathers bound round his head, partly confining his long and tangled black hair. Across his face ran two broad bars of paint—namely, a red one reaching from ear to ear and including the upper lip, and a second of chalky white running above and parallel to the first, so as to include the eyelids. The rest of the party were ornamented with streaks of charcoal powder. According to the figures published by Dr. Hyades, two of which we have been permitted to reproduce, white and red are now the colours most in vogue. Their language has been compared to a man clearing his throat; but even in this manner few Europeans could produce such hoarse, clicking, and guttural sounds as are uttered by Fuegians.

These people formerly subsisted almost exclusively upon shell-fish, and consequently were compelled frequently to shift their place of abode. Nevertheless, the large dimensions of the shell-heaps, which often amount to many tons in weight, indicate that they returned at intervals to the same spots. Unlike the Patagonians, they dwell in huts, or wigwams, which, although used only for a few days, require some trouble to build. These huts consist of some broken boughs stuck in the ground, and roughly thatched on one side with a few bundles of grass and rushes. Even such wretched shelter against the inclemency of a severe climate was not, however, always available, Darwin mentioning an instance where three naked Fuegians spent the night on the ground. It has been already mentioned that the tribes on the east coast wear a guanaco-skin mantle; among those of the west coast the place of this is taken by seal-skins, while some of the central tribes wear an otter-skin, or some other small covering, which is barely sufficient to cover the back as far down as the loins, being laced across the chest by strings, and shifted from side to side according to the direction of the wind.

St. Mary's Library, Notre Dame, Ind.

INDEX

A

Ababdeh, 401
Abunda, 330
Abyssinian and Ethiopic groups, 269, 374
Abyssinians, 265
Achenese, 84
Adjar (or veil), 405
Admiralty Islands, 34
Aëtas (*see* Negritos)
Afar (*see* Danakil), 371
Afghanistan and Afghans, 212—216
Africa, 265—408
Afridis, 213
Agau, 376
Agriculture (*see* Cultivation)
Aimores, 566
Ainu (*see* HairyAinu)
Ajawa, 313
Akhdams, 245
Akka, 272
Albanians (also known as Arnauts and Skipetar), 436
Alemanni, 462
Aleuts, 506
Algerians and Moors, 403—408
Alo-Alo (the Tongan weather-god), 13
Ama-Xosa, or Ama-Kosa (*see* Kaffir), 299, 302
Amazons of Dahomey, 366
Amhara, 376, 382
Amusements of the:—Australian natives, 59; Chins, 112; Germans, 462; Italians, 470; Japanese, 148; Java Malays, 83; Maoris, 10; Philippine Islanders, 86; Polynesians, 10; Siamese, 101; Spanish, 478
Anam, 104
Andalusians, 476
Andaman Islands, 169
Andes, Northern, 568
Andriana (Hovas), 283
Angkor Vaht (ruins of) 108
Angola dwarfs, 272
Angola tribes, 330
Angoni, 309
Animism, 10, 11, 200
Anklets (*see* Ornaments)
Ansariebs, 248
Antaimerina (Hova), 283
Anti-Mana tribe, 286
Aoba, 40
Apaches, 536
Apingi, 337, 339, 340
Apono, 337, 339
Apparel (*see* Dress)
Appearance of the:—Ababdeh, 401, 402; Admiralty Islanders, 34; Afghans, 212; Akka, 274; Albanians, 436; Amazons of Dahomey, 366; Amharans (Abyssinians), 376; Anamites, 104; Andaman Islanders, 169; Apingi, 339; Arabians, 241; Araucanians, 570; Armenians, 260; Australians, 49—67; Bakongo, 331; Bakwando, 270; Balempa, 309; Bantu, 332; Batwa, 275; Bayansi of Bolobo, 330; Bechuanas, 302; Belgians, 485; Berbers, 403; Berikimo, 281; Betsileo, 284; Bhils, 184; Bongo, 352; Bosnians, 449; Bulgarians, 440; Buriats, 224; Burmese, 110; Bushmen of South Africa, 268; Chinese, 122, 124; Chins, 112; Circassians, 420; Croats, 454; Dahomeyans, 364; Danakil, 371; Danes, 481; Dinka, 351; Doko, 280; Druses, 248; Dyas, 78; Dyur, 352; Egba, 368; English, 491; Equatorial pygmies, 277; Eskimo, 509, 510; Falashas, 382; Fans, 348; Fanti, 363; Fellahin, 397; Fijians, 1; Finns, 422; French, 472; Fuegians, 576; Fulah, 391; Gallas, 370; Georgians, 419, 420; Giliaks, 232; Gonds, 186; Greeks, 258, 433, 434; Guianas, 558, 560; Guinea Negroes, 363; Gypsies, 456; Hairy Ainu, 153; Hamrans, 400; Hebrews, 250; Hereros, 298; Herzegovinans, 452; Hill people of India, 179; Hottentots, 295; Hova, 283; Icelanders, 432; Irish, 499; Ishogo, 338; Italians, 469; Japanese 146; Kachins, 112; Kaffirs, 299; Kafiristans, 216; Kalmuks, 224; Kanuri, 394; Kashmiris, 196; Khasis 196; Kikuyu, 343; Kirghiz-Kazaks, 218; Kols, 184; Kotas, 189; Kurds, 238; Kurumbas, 190; Lapps, 424, 426; Latuka, 353; Letto-Lithuanic people, 458; Liu-kiu, 160; Magyars, 455; Malays, 26, 73; Mandirgo, 361; Maoris, 42; Masai, 356; Matabili, 306; Monbuttu, 328; Mongols, 141; Montenegrins, 447; Negritos, 87; Negroes, 289; New Caledonians, 41; New Guinea people, or Papuans, 26; New Ireland people, 32; Niam-niam, 344, 345; Njempsians, 358; North American Indians, 530, 533; Norwegians, 428; Nyasaland natives, 310; Obongo, 271; Ostiaks, 230; Ovampo, 299; Patagonians, 572, 573; Persians, 236; Philippine Islanders, 84; Polynesians, 10; Portuguese 480; Rajputs, 192; Rumanians, 441; Russians, 409; Saetersdal people, 430; Sakais, 88; Samoyedes, 228; Saxons, 458; Scotch, 496; Shangallas, 381; Siamese, 98; Society Islanders, 20; Solomon Islanders, 37; Somali, 372; Spaniards, 478; Svans, 417; Swabians, 457; Swedes, 431; Swiss, 463; Tajiks, 222; Tasmanians, 68; Tibbus, 386; Tibetans, 161; Timni, 362; Todas, 186, 189; Tongans, 12; Tuaregs, 388; Turkana, 354; Turks, 438; Usbegs, 222; Veddas, 172; Wadoa, 316; Wagiryama, 318; Wagogo, 317; Wahuma, 324; Wambuttu, 275, 276; Wanyamwezi, 314; Wanyoro, 327; Wapokomo, 320; Wasagara, 316; Welsh, 494; Wito, 384; Yakuts, 231; Zulus, 304
Ara tangata, 20
Arabians, 241, 393
Arabs of North Africa, 404—408
Aragonese, 478
Aranyakas (a division of Brahmanas), 205
Araucanians, 570
Arawakans, 559
Arctic America and Greenland, 505—528
Arecunas, 560
Argentina and Southern Chili, 569—575
Armenians, 260
Armlets (*see* Ornaments)
Army of:—Abyssinia, 381; Germany, 458; Montenegro, 448; Switzerland, 466
Aroeis of Society Islands, 22
Art of:—Abyssinia, 380; Arabia, 246; Bushmen of South Africa, 269; Japan, 150, 151
Aryan family, 422, 468
Aryan Hindus, 178
Aryan invasion of Dravidians, 180
Asgars, 386
Ashango, 340, 342
Ashanti, 363, 364
Ashira, 337
Asia Minor, 254, 264
Asiniboins, 540
Assyria (*see* Syria), 247
Asturian, 478
Athabascan and Algonquian stocks, 514, 534, 536, 537, 538
Attoh (a ceremonial sacrifice), 367
Atua, 11
Austral Islands, 20
Australia, 49—67
Austria-Hungary, 453, 456
Azandeh (*see* Niam-niam), 344
Aztecs, 529, 554, 555

B

Bafiort (or Bafiot), 332
Baiame, 62, 64
Bajans (or Sea Gypsies), 74
Bakabae, 271
Bakanaka, 271
Bakatla, 302, 304
Bakete, 334
Bakhtians, 238
Bakise, 271
Bakongo, 330, 331

Bakuba, 334
Bakwando, 270
Bakwena, 302, 304
Balempa, 309
Balolo, 332
Baluba, 334
Baluchis, 216
Baluchistan, 212
Balunda, 330
Bamangwato tribe, 302, 304
Bangola, 332
Bangwaketsi, 304
Bantu, 265, 286, 294, 296—299, 332
,, of British Central Africa, 309, 312
,, ,, Eastern Africa, 313—330
,, ,, French Congo, 337—343
,, and Hottentot Negroes, 294—296
,, of South Africa, 296—309
,, ,, West Africa, 330—336
Banyai, 308, 312
Bara, 283, 284
Barabra, 402
Barolong, 304
Barotsi, 302, 304
Bari, 350, 354
Bashilange (or Tushilange), 334
Basques, 476, 478
Basuto, 304
Batavia, 83
Bateke, 332
Batlapi, 303
Batlaro, 302, 303
Battas (inland hill people of Sumatra), 84
Batwa, 271, 275
Batwana, 304
Bayansi of Bolobo, 330, 332
Bazimba, 286
Bear worship, 231
Bechuanas, 300, 302
Bedouins, 245, 248
Begging Brahmans, 210
Beja, 374, 401—402
Belgium and Belgians, 485—487
Bellates (slaves), 390
Bena-Riamba (a secret society of Congo district), 334
Beni-Amer, 374
Berber tribes, 265, 361, 370, 388, 393, 403—404
Berikimo, 281
Betsileo, 283, 286
Betsimisaraka, 283
Bhils, 184
Birth of Children among the:—Abyssinians, 380; Chinese, 135, 136; Chins, 112; Dutch, 489; Eskimo, 525; Fellahin, 398; Greeks, 434, 435; Guianas, 564; Hottentots, 296; Kirghiz-Kazaks, 220; Nilotic group, 359; Turks, 438
Bisayan (one of the chief tribes of Philippine Islands), 84
Bishari, 402
Bismarck Archipelago, 31
Bison of North America, 529
Blood-brotherhood rite among the Kikuyu, 344
Blow-pipe of South Americans, 563
Bod-yul, 161
Bogo, 376
Bokhara, 221, 222
Bolivian Aymaras, 568
Boloi, 310
Bon, or Bonba (an early Tibetan creed), 164, 166
Bongo, 350, 352
Borneo, 28, 77
Bornuese, 394
Bosnia-Herzegovina, 449, 453
Bourgeoisie of France, 472, 473
Brahmanas (a division of the Veda), 204, 205
Brahmans' caste, 182, 203, 212
Brahuis, 216
Brazil, 566, 567
Brooke (Rajah) in Sarawak 80, 82
Brunei, Sultan of, 77
Buddhism, 138
Bugis (inhabitants of Celebes), 77
Bulgaria, 439, 441
Burden of an Australian woman, 54
Burial Customs of the:—Abyssinians, 380; Arabs, 247; Ashira, 337, 338; Batwa, 280; Bongo, 353; Bosnians, 450; Chins, 113, 116; Dutch, 489; Dyas, 80; Dyur, 352; East African natives, 312; Eskimo, 525, 526; Fans, 350; Fijians, 7; Giliaks, 234; Greeks, 435, 436; Guianas, 564, 566; Hottentots, 296; Hova, 288; Irish, 502; Karens, 119; Kirghiz-Kazaks, 220; Latuka, 354; Liu-kiu, 160; Masai, 357; New Guinea people, 28; Niam-niam, 347; Nilotic group, 359; North American Indians, 549; Obongo, 272; Philippine Islanders, 86; Sakais, 93; Sakalava, 287; Shans, 103; Siamese, 100, 101; Somali, 373, 374; Tanala, 287; Tibetans, 165; Tongans, 14; Turks, 439; Upper Congo natives, 334, 335; Veddas, 176; Wadoa, 316; Wanyamwezi, 315; Wanyoro, 327
Buriats, 223, 224, 225
Burma, 110—120
Bushmen of South Africa, 265, 266
Buttons (as an insignia of rank of Mandarins), 129

C

Cachalot teeth (used for necklets), 2
Caledonia (or Scotland), 495
Calendars of South American Indians, 556
Cambodia, 97, 98, 108
Cangue (a Chinese instrument of torture), 132
Cannibalism among the:—Andaman Islanders, 171; Ashanti, 363; Australians, 58; Battas, 84; Celebes Islanders, 77; Fans, 350; Fanti, 363; Fijians, 4, 6; Maoris, 46; Monbuttu, 328; Negroes, 292, 293; New Caledonians, 41; New Ireland natives, 32; Niam-niam, 347; Pygmies, 278; Solomon Islanders, 37; South Americans, 554; Tasmanians, 70; Upper Congo people, 334; Wayao, 313
Canoes of the:—Admiralty Islanders, 36; Andaman Islanders, 170; Australians, 56; Bantu, 333; Eskimo, 514, 516; inhabitants of Madagascar, 287; Monbuttu, 328; North American Indians, 546; Solomon Islanders, 37; Tasmanians, 70
Capital punishment of Chinese, 134, 135
Caribean group of South American Indians, 559
Cássubs, 458
Caste (meaning of), 180, 182
Catalonians, 478
Caucasians, 265, 417
Cayugas, 538
Celebes, 77
Celtic races, 458, 469, 470, 472, 476, 490, 498
Central America, 554—558
Ceylon (*see* Veddas), 172
Chaldeans, 238
Character (*see* Disposition)
Characteristics of Belgian cities, 486
Chassad Kukis (or Taksatte), 116
Chekhs, 453, 454, 458
Cheuwe (*see* Tshi), 363
Chiampa, 104
Chief of Bakhtians (former), 238, 240
Chief of Hairy Ainu, 154
Children of Maoris, 46
China, 121, 140
Chinese national cohesion, 122
Chins, 112
Chippewyans (or Ojibwas), 536, 537, 546
Chiquitos, 567
Chukchis, 234, 506
Cicatrisation (*see* Tattooing)
Cincallé 281,
Circassians, 420, 422
Clans of Scotland, 496
Classes of Arabian society, 245
Classification of:—African types, 265, 266; Australian tribes, 58
Click language, 270, 282
Club-houses of Papuans, 28
Clothes (*see* Dress)
Cochin-China, 104
Coffee (discovery of), 245
Coinage (*see* Money)
Confucianism, 137
Congo tribes, 330, 331
Cook (or Hervey) Islands, 20
Copts, 396
Corroboree, 59
Courtship (*see also* Marriage Customs) *among the:*—Barabra, 402; Berbers, 404; Burmese, 110, 111; Dyas, 79; Karens, 119; Sakais, 96
Couvade custom, 564
Creeks, 540
Crees, 537
Cremation (*see* Burial Customs)
Croats, 453, 454
Cultivation among the:—Abyssinians, 378; Andamans, 170; Apono, 339; Ashango, 342; Bongo, 353; Danes, 482; Dinka, 351; Druses, 249; Dyas, 79; Finns, 423; Gallas, 370, 371; Hottentots, 295; Ishogo, 338; Kaffirs, 300; Kanuri, 394; Karens, 119; Kikuyu, 344; Malagasi, 287; Mashonas 308; Maoris, 44, 46; Monbuttu, 328; Negritos, 88; Negroes, 293; New Guinea people, 28; Niam-niam, 347; Nilotic people, 359; Nyasaland natives, 312; Solomon Islanders, 37; Sumatra natives, 83; Tasmanians, 70; Turks, 257; Wagiryama, 318; Wakamba, 321; Wankonde, 314; Wanyamwezi, 315; Wapokomo, 320; Wasoga, 326; Wazaramo, 316
Customs (*see* Habits)
Cymric race, 490, 494
Czar of all the Russias, 410

D

Dacoits (Burmese), 111
Dahomeyans, 364—368
Dakka, 296
Dakotas, 538, 546
Dalai Lama (the head of Buddhism), 138, 165
Danakil, 371, 372 (*see* Afar)
Dances of the:—Apono, 339; Batwa, 278, 280; Chins, 112; Eskimo, 528; Guianas, 566; Hairy Ainu, 154; people of India, 178; people of Java, 83; Khasis, 197; Latuku, 354; Malays, 75; Matabili, 306; Rumanians, 443, 444; Sakais, 90, 91; Society Islanders, 20; Solomon Islanders, 38; Somali, 373; Tasmanians, 71; Wayao, 312
Dazas, 394
Death (*see* Burial Customs)
Death-rate of the:—Australians, 51; Maoris, 42; New Caledonians, 42; North American Indians, 530; Tasmanians, 70
Deer-hunting among the Ostiaks, 231
Delawares, 537, 538
Denmark and Danes, 481, 485
Dhuramoolan, 62, 64
Dinka, 350, 351
Dinner party of Moors, 408
Discovery of Australia, 67, 68
Disposition of the:—Admiralty Islanders, 36; Afghans, 212; Afridis, 214; Akka, 274; Albanians, 436; Amharans, 377; Anamites, 106; Andaman Islanders, 170; Apono, 339; Arabs, 241, 242; Armenians, 260, 261; Ashango, 342; Ashanti, 363; Australians, 66, 67; Austrians, 453; Bakhtians, 238; Bakongo, 331; Baluchis, 216; Bantu, 332;

Barabra, 402; Batwa, 278; Bechuanas, 302; Berbers, 403; Bhils, 184; Bosnians,449; Brahmans,206; Bulgarians, 440; Buriats, 224; Cambodians, 108; Chekhs, 454; Chinese, 126, 128; Chins, 113; Circassians, 420, 422; Congo tribes, 331; Croats, 454; Danakil, 371; Danes, 482, 483; Dinka, 351; Druses, 248; Dutch, 488; Dyur, 352; English, 491, 492, 494; Eskimo, 522, 524; Fans, 348; Fijians, 6, 7, 8, 17; Finns, 423; French, 472, 473, 474; Fulah, 391; Fur Negroes, 394; Gadabursi, 374; Georgians, 420; Germans, 460; Greeks, 260, 434; Guianas, 559; Gypsies, 456; Hairy Ainu, 155; Haussa,392; Hebrews, 250; Hereros, 298; Herzegovinans, 452; Hill people of India, 179; Icelanders, 432; Irish, 499, 500; Isa, 374; Italians, 469; Japanese, 147, 148; Jats, 192; Kaffirs, 299; Kafiristans, 216; Kalmuks, 224; Kamchadales, 235; Kanuri, 394; Karens, 119; Kashmiris, 196; Khas, 104; Khasis, 197; Kikuyu, 343; Koreans, 156; Koriaks, 234; Lango, 360; Lapps, 426; Lesghians, 419; Liu-kiu, 160; Luris, 238; Magyars, 455; Makua, 313; Malays, 28, 74; Mandingo, 361; Mashonas, 308; Mongols, 144; Montenegrins, 447, 448; Moors, 405; Negritos, 87; Negroes, 293; New Guinea natives, 26; New Ireland natives, 45; Niam-niam, 346; Njempsians, 358; North American Indians, 547; Norwegians, 428; Parsis, 196; Persians, 236; Poles, 454; Polynesians, 10; Portuguese, 480; Rajputs, 192; Rumanians, 441; Russians, 409, 410, 411, 412; Sakais, 88; Samoans, 17; Samoyedes, 229; Scotchmen, 495; Servians, 444, 446; Shangallas, 38; Shans, 102; Siamese, 98; Somali, 372, 373; Spaniards, 476, 478; Suahili, 290; Svans, 417; Swiss, 463, 464; Tajiks, 222; Tibetans, 161; Todas, 188; Tuaregs, 388; Tunguses, 225; Turki, 217; Turks, 256, 257, 438; Usbegs, 221; Veddas, 174; Wagogo, 317; Wakamba, 321; Wankonde, 314; Wapokomo, 320; Wayao; 313; Wazaramo, 316; Welsh, 494, 495; Yakuts, 231

Division of:—Borneo people, 77; Eskimo, 508; Guianas, 558; Indian races, 177; Italian nation, 468; Malay races, 73, 74; North American Indians, 534; Swiss nation, 462

Dobos (or tree-houses), 28

Doko, 280, 374

Dongolawi, 402

Dravidians, 177, 178, 180, 186

Dress of the:—Ababdeh, 402; Abyssinians, 377, 378; Admiralty Islanders, 35; Albanians 433; Andaman Islanders, 170; Arabs, 242, 244; Armenians, 262; Ashira, 337, Australians, 52; Bantu, 333; Batwa, 276; Bechuanas, 303; Berbers, 403, 404; Berikimo, 281; Bongo, 352; Bosnians, 449; Bulgarians,440; Bushmen of South Africa, 268; Chinese, 124; Chins, 112; Copts, 396; Croats, 454; Dahomeyans, 364; Danakil, 371; Dinka, 351; Dyas, 78; Dyur, 352; Egba, 368; Eskimo, 510, 511, 512, 516; Fanti, 363; Fellahin, 397; Fijians, 2; Finns, 423; French peasant, 474; Fuegians, 576; Gallas, 370; Gauchos, 370; Giliaks, 232, 234; Gonds, 186; Greeks, 434; Guianas, 560; Hairy Ainu, 154; Haussa, 392, 393; Hereros, 298; Herzegovinans, 452; Hill people of India, 179; Hottentots, 295; Icelanders, 432; Ishogo, 338; Japanese, 148, 150; Juangs, 184; Kaffirs, 299; Karens, 119; Khasis, 198; Kikuyu, 343; Kirghiz-Kazaks, 218; Koreans, 158; Kotas, 189; Lango, 360; Lapps, 426; Latuka, 354; Lesghians, 419; Liu-kiu, 160; Magyars, 455; Malagasi, 286; Masai, 356; Matabili, 306; Monbuttu, 328; Moors, 405, 406; Negroes, 290; New Caledonians, 41; New Guinea natives, 26; New Ireland natives, 32; New Zealand Maoris, 42, 44; Niam-niam, 346; Nilotic group, 359; Njempsians, 358; North American Indians, 541, 542, 543; Norwegians, 428; Nyasaland natives, 312; Obongo, 271; Ostiaks, 230; Patagonians, 573, 574; Persians, 236; Philippine Islanders, 86; Rumanians, 441, 442; Russians, 415; Saetersdal people, 430; Sakais, 88; Samoans, 17; Samoyedes, 228; Shans, 102; Society Islanders, 22; Solomon Islanders, 37; Sumatra natives, 84, 86; Svans, 417; Swedes, 431; Tibetans, 162, 164; Todas, 188; Tuaregs, 388; Tunguses, 225; Turks, 258, 438; Veddas, 173; Waganda, 325; Wagiryama, 319; Wagogo, 317; Wakamba, 321; Wankonde, 312; Wanyamwezi, 315; Wanyoro, 327; Wapokomo, 320; Wasagara, 317; Wasoga, 326; Wazaramo, 316; Welsh, 495; Zulus, 304.

Drinking Habits among the:—Abyssinians, 378, 380; Admiralty Islanders, 34; Apono, 339; Australians, 58; Berbers, 404; Bulgarians, 440; Buriats, 224; Dutch, 488; Fijians, 4; Georgians, 420; Icelanders, 432; India natives, 178; Ishogo, 338; Kotas, 189; Mongols, 144; Moors, 408; New Caledonians, 42; New Guinea people, 28; Niam-niam, 347; Rumanians, 442; Russians, 415; Samoyedes, 230; Siamese, 98; Society Islanders, 20; Todas, 180; Wapokomo, 320

Druses, 248

Duke of York Islands, 31

Dutch, 488—490

Dwellings of the:—Ababdeh, 402; Abyssinians, 378; Admiralty Islanders, 35; Andaman Islanders, 170; Apono, 339; Arabs, 244; Ashanti, 363; Asia Minor peoples, 258; Australians, 56, 57; Bantu, 333; Bechuanas, 303; Berbers, 404; Bhils, 186; Bongo, 352; Bosnians, 450; Bulgarians, 440; Bushmen of South Africa, 269; Chins, 112; Dinka, 351; Doko, 280; Dyas, 79; Egba, 368, 369; Equatorial pygmies, 277; Eskimo, 518, 520, 521; Fans, 348; Fanti, 363; Finns,423; French peasant, 474; Fuegians, 576; Gallas, 370; Guianas, 563; Hairy Ainu, 153, 154; Haussa, 393; Hereros, 298; Herzegovinans, 452; Hottentots, 295; Ishogo, 338; Juangs, 184; Kaffirs, 300; Kanuri, 394; Kikuyu, 344; Koreans, 156; Kurumbas, 190; Lapps, 427; Latuka, 354; Malagasi, 286; Masai, 357; Mashonas, 308; Matabili, 306; Monbuttu, 328; Mongols, 142, 143; Montenegrins, 447; Moors, 406; Negroes, 292; New Guinea natives, 28; New Ireland natives, 32; Niam-niam, 346; Njempsians, 358; North American Indians, 542, 543; Obongo, 271, 272; Patagonians, 575; Rumanians, 442; Sakais, 91; Servians, 444; Shangallas, 381; Tasmanians, 68; Tibbus, 386; Todas, 188; Tuaregs, 390; Tunguses, 226; Turks, 438; Veddas, 173; Waganda, 325; Wagiryama, 319; Wagogo, 317; Wakamba, 321; Wankonde, 314; Wanyamwezi, 315; Wanyoro, 327; Wasoga, 326; Wazaramo, 316; Wito, 384; Yakuts, 232

Dya head-hunters, 75, 76

Dyas, 78

E

Ear ornaments (*see* Ornaments)

Education among the:—Belgians, 487; Danes, 483, 484; French, 473, 474; Germans, 258, 259, 260; Servians, 446; Swiss, 463

Egba (or Egbado), 368

Egg (or life), 64

Egypt and Egyptians, 396—400

Elephant-hunting among the Mashonas, 308

Emperor of China, 129

England and Englishmen, 490—494

Equatorial Negroes, 265, 294, 343

Equatorial pygmies, 277

Erromanga (New Hebrides), 39

Eskimo (or Innuit, Yuit, or Karalit), 505—528

Eskimo dogs, 518

Eskimo sledges, 518

Ethiopia, 374

Ethnological division of mankind, 122

Etiquette of the:—Andaman Islanders, 170, 171; Arabs, 242; Eskimo, 528; Fijians, 4; Koreans, 156; Malays, 74; Moors, 408; Norwegians, 430; Siamese, 98; Solomon Islanders (Tahiti), 22

Etruscans, 468

Evil eye and Turks, 438

Ewe tribes, 363, 364—368

Eyes of Mongolians, 124

Eye-tooth (extraction of, in Formosa), 158

F

Fakirs, 211

Falam chiefs, 113

Falashas, 374, 382

Fanaticism, 210, 211

Fans (Negroes), 294, 343, 347—350

Fanti, 363

Feasts of Chins, 112

Features (*see* Appearance)

Fellahin, 396, 397

Fetishism, 200, 293, 312, 314, 319, 332, 337, 339, 342

Fiji Islands, 1—8

Finger-rings (*see* Ornaments)

Fingo, 300

Finland and Finns, 422—424

Finnow, king of Tongans (death), 14, 15

Fire-worshippers, 196, 263

Fishing by Hairy Ainu, 155

Flemings, 485

Folk-lore of:—Bushmen of South Africa, 270; Hottentots, 296

Food of the:—Ababdeh, 402; Abyssinians, 378; Admiralty Islanders, 35; Anamites, 106; Andaman Islanders, 170; Arabs, 244; Ashira, 337; Australians, 56, 58; Bantu, 334; Bechuanas, 303; Berikimo, 281; Bongo, 353; Bosnians, 449; Bushmen of South Africa, 269; Dinka, 351; Doko, 280; Dutch, 488; Eskimo,513,514; Fellahin,398; Fijians, 4; French peasant, 474; Fuegians, 576; Gallas, 370; Giliaks, 232; Guianas, 559; Icelanders, 432; Irish, 502; Italians, 470; Kanuri, 394; Kirghiz-Kazaks, 218; Kotas, 189; Kurumbas, 190; Malagasi, 287; Maoris, 44, 46; Masai, 357; Monbuttu, 328; Mongols, 142; Moors, 406, 408; Negritos, 87; Negroes, 292; New Guinea people, 28; Niam-niam, 347; Njempsians, 358; North American Indians, 546, 547; Norwegians, 430; Ostiaks, 230; Patagonians, 575; Persians, 237; Portuguese, 480; Pygmies, 278; Rumanians, 442; Russians, 415, 416; Sakais, 90; Sakalava, 287; Shangallas,381; Society Islanders, 22; Somali, 373; Swedes, 431; Tibbus, 386; Turks, 257; Veddas, 173; Waganda, 325; Wakamba, 321; Wanyamwezi, 315; Wapokomo, 320; Wasoga, 326

Formosa, 158
Foster-brothering (a Swedish custom), 431
France and French, 458, 470—475
Friendly Islands (*see* Tonga)
Fuegians, 576
Fulah, 391
Funeral rites (*see* Burial Customs)
Fur Negroes, 394

G

Gadabursi, 374
Galician, 478
Gallas (or Oromo), 265, 370
Gambling amongst:—Malays, 75; Philippine Islanders, 86
Games (*see* Amusements)
Ganguella, 330
Gauchos, 570
Gauls, 470, 490
Gaza, 308, 309
Gelele (king of Dahomey), 364
Georgians, 419, 420
Germans, 453, 457—462
Gersau (annual ceremony in), 466
Ghegs, 436
Ghez (a Semitic language), 376
Ghoorkas, 196
Ghost dance (religion of North American Indians), 550
Giao-shi (or Anamites), 106
Gilbert Islanders, 11
Giliaks, 232
Gonds, 186
Gondwana, 186
Government of:—Abyssinia, 381; Ashanti, 363; the Berbers, 404; Burma, 110; the Bushmen of South Africa, 269; China, 128; Germany, 458, 459; Isle of Man, 504; Italy, 469; Lango nation, 360; the Masai, 357, 358; the Monbuttu, 328; Montenegro, 447; the Moors, 408; Spain, 476; Switzerland, 463, 464, 466; Uganda, 325; Wanyoro, 327; Wakamba, 322
Great Britain and Ireland, 490, 504
Grebo (or Kru), 362
Greece and Greeks, 258, 433—436
Guadalcanar Island, 37
Guaranian, 567
Guebres, ancient fire-worshippers, 238
Guianas, 558—566
Guinea Negroes, 265, 292, 294, 363—369

H

Hababs, 376
Habits of the:—Admiralty Islanders, 36; Afghans, 212; Akka, 274; Albanians, 436; Anamese, 106; Andaman Islanders, 170; Apingi, 339; Arabs, 241; Armenians, 262; Bakwando, 271; Berikimo, 281; Betsileo, 284; Bosnians, 449; Brahmans, 206, 208; Buriats, 224; Celebes, 77; Circassians, 420, 422; Doko, 280; Druses, 248; English, 491; Eskimo, 521, 522, 524, 528; Falashas, 382; Fellahin, 398; Fijians, 1; Finns, 423; French, 472, 473; Fulah, 391; Georgians, 420; Germans, 460; Greeks, 260, 434; Guianas, 561, 564; Gypsies, 453; Hebrews, 250; Herzegovinans, 452; Hill people of India, 179; Icelanders, 432; Italians, 470; Japanese, 150; Kamchadales, 235; Khas, 104; Kirghiz-Kazaks, 218, 220; Koreans, 156; Kurds, 238; Lango nation, 360; Lapps, 426; Lesghians, 419; Liu-kiu, 160; Magyars, 455; Maoris, 42; Mongols, 142, 144; Montenegrins, 447, 448; Moors, 405; Negritos, 87; Negroes, 293; New Guinea natives, 28, 30; New Ireland natives, 32; North American Indians, 549; Norwegians, 428; Obongo, 271; Polynesians, 10; Portuguese, 480; Russians, 409, 410, 411, 412; Sakais, 90; Servians, 444—446; Siamese, 98; Sioux, 538; Spaniards, 478; Swiss, 463, 464; Tasmanians, 70; Tibbus, 386; Todas, 186, 188; Tongans, 16; Tunguses, 226; Turki, 217; Turks, 257; Usbegs, 222; Veddas, 174
Habr Awal, 374
Habr Gahr-Haji, 374
Hadendowa, 402
Haggars, 386
Hai (chief god of Gilbert Islands), 11
Hai, Haik, or Haiken (national name of Armenians), 260
Hair of the:—Ababdeh, 402; Abyssinians, 376, 378; Admiralty Islanders, 34; Akka, 274; Anamites, 106; Andaman Islanders, 170; Apono, 339; Arabs, 241; Armenians, 260, 262; Australians, 49, 50; Bakongo, 331; Bantu, 332; Bara, 284; Battas, 84; Batwa, 276; Berbers, 404; Betsileo, 284; Buriats, 224; Burmese, 110; Bushmen of South Africa, 208; Chinese, 124; Chins, 112; Croats, 454; Dahomeyans, 364; Dinka, 351; Doko, 280; Dyur, 352; Egba, 368; Eskimo, 509, 510; Fanti, 363; Fellahin, 397; Fijians, 1; Fulah, 391; Gallas, 370; Giliaks, 232; Gonds, 186; Guianas, 560; Guinea natives, 363; Hairy Ainu, 153; Hamrans, 400; Haussa, 393; Hereros, 298; Hottentots, 295; Hova, 284; people of India, 176; Irish, 499; Ishogo, 338; Italians, 469; Japanese, 147; Kaffirs, 299; Kanuri, 394; Kikuyu, 343; Kols, 184; Koreans, 156; Magyars, 455; Malays, 73; Maoris, 42; Masai, 356, 357; Melanesians, 25, 26; Monbuttu, 328; Negritos, 87; Negroes, 289; New Caledonia, 41; New Hebrides, 40; New Ireland, 32; Niam-niam, 346; North American Indians, 530, 532; Nyasaland natives, 312; Obongo, 271; Persians, 236; Polynesians, 10; Sakais, 88, 89; Siamese, 98; Solomon Islanders, 37; Somali, 372; Tajiks, 222; Tasmanians, 68; Todas, 186; Tuaregs, 388, 390; Wahuma, 324; Wanyamwezi, 314; Wapokomo, 320; Wasagara, 317; Wazaramo, 316; Wito, 384
Hairy Ainu, 147, 152—158
Hakas, 113—117
Hamites, 322, 344, 353, 360, 361, 372, 401, 403
Hamitic (division of Caucasian race), 265
Hamrans, 400
Hantus, 92
Haratin (or Black Berbers), 361, 403
Hare Indians, 536
Hasiya, 374
Hassanieh, 401
Haussa, 392, 393
Hawija, 374
Head-hunting among the:—Celebes, 77; Dyas, 76; Malays, 75; Maoris, 46
Hebrews, 249—254, 458
Height of South African Bushmen, 208
Hellenic, 248 (*see also* Greeks)
Hereros, 296, 298
Hervey (or Cook) Islands, 20
Herzegovinans, 452
Hiding capacity of the Bhils, 184
High Germans (or Swabians), 457
Highlanders of Scotland (or Celts), 495
Hill Damara, 296
Hill people of India, 179
Hindus, 178, 180
Hiro, a sea-god, 11
History of:—the Armenians, 261; the Hebrews, 251, 252; Holland, 488, 489; Ireland, 500—502; Italy, 468; the Mongols, 140, 141; Spain, 476; Switzerland, 466; the Tasmanian blacks, 68, 69, 70; Wales, 494
Hitomo (a Japanese under-garment), 150
Holland and Dutch, 488—490
Honolulu (capital of Sandwich Islands), 24
Hopi, 551
Hora (a Rumanian dance), 443, 444
Horses of North American Indians, 547; Argentina people, 570, 572
Hottentot Negroes, 294—296
Hottentots, 268
House-horns of Malagasi houses, 287
House-moving among Berbers, 404
Houses (*see* Dwellings)
Hova, 265, 283, 284
Hungarians, 454
Hunting among the:—Bongo, 353; Bushmen of South Africa, 269; Eskimo, 522; Fans, 350; Forest pygmies, 277; Guianas, 562, 563; Hamrans, 400, 401; Hottentots, 295; Jungle folk, 190; Obongo, 272

I

Iberians, 468, 470, 476, 490
Iceland and Icelanders, 432
Ikongo, 286
Incas, 554, 569
India, 176—211
Indian Armenians, 262
Indios, 84
Industries (*see also* Manufactures) *of the*:—Abyssinians, 380; Apono, 339; Bantu, 333; Bechuanas, 303; Belgians, 487; Berbers, 404; Bongo, 353; Danakil, 371; Eskimo, 517; Falashas, 382; Fans, 348, 350; Gallas, 371; Gypsies, 456; Hereros, 298; Hottentots, 295; Ishogo, 338; Mashonas, 308; Negroes, 293; Nilotic group, 359; Portuguese, 480; Russians, 412; Swiss, 464; Wanyamwezi, 315
Infiêles, 84
Initiation of Australian youths, 62, 64
Intoxicating drink (*see* Drinking Habits)
Inxwala (a Matabili dance), 306—308
Iranians (or Persians), 196, 235, 238
Ireland and Irish, 498—504
Iroquoians, 537, 538
Isa, 374
Ishogo, 338
Islam, 247
Italy and Italians, 468—470

J

Jakuns, 88
Jalin of Khartum, 401
Japan and Japanese, 144—152
Jats, 192
Java, 83
Jews (*see* Hebrews)
Joshiwara, 148
Juangs of Orissa, 184
Jungle folk, 190

K

Kabinda, 330, 331
Kabras (a peace ceremony), 359
Kabyles (*see* Berbers), 403
Kachins, 111, 112
Kaffirs, 299, 300
Kafiristan, 216
Kalmuks, 223, 224
Kamasia, 354
Kamchadales, 235
Kamilaroi tribe of New South Wales, 66
Kanakas, 24, 41
Kandjur (the Lamaist sacred book), 166
Kanuri, 394
Karamoyo, 354
Karens, 118, 119
Karons, 25
Kashmiris, 196
Kavirondo (people of), 290, 326, 350, 351, 358—360

Kayak (an Eskimo canoe), 514, 516
Kelowais of Air, 386
Kethuba (a Hebrew marriage institution), 253
Khama (a chief), 302
Khas, 101, 104
Khasis, 196
Khoi-Khoi (or Hottentots), 294—296
Khonds, 191
Kikuyu Negroes, 294, 343
Kimono (a Japanese flowing robe), 150
Kirghiz-Kazaks, 218
Kismet, 439
Kite-flying by New Zealanders, 10
Kolarians (or Kols), 177, 183, 184 (*see also* Juangs and Bhils)
Korea, 156
Koriaks, 234, 506
Kotas, 189
Koumiss, 144, 218
Kraals, 295
Kru (or Grebo), 362
Kshatriyas (caste), 182, 183
Kuchins, 536
Kuki (hill men), 112
Kurds, 235, 238, 261
Kurumbas, 190

L

Lala (a Hawaiian game), 10
Lamaiserai, 166
Lamaism (a form of Buddhism) 138, 144, 164
Land tenure in Hebrides, 496—498
Lango nation, 360

Language:—Ababdeh, 402; Afghan, 213; Ashango, 342; Australian, 58; Basque, 478; Belgian, 486; Bulgarian, 440; Bushmen of South Africa, 270; Celebes, 77; Chekh, 453; Cymric, 495; Doko, 281; Erse, 500; Eskimo, 525; Finns, 423; Formosan, 158; Fuegian, 576; Fulah, 391, 392; Gallic, 496; Ghez, 376; Greek, 434; Gypsy, 456; Habab, 376; Haussa, 392; Hottentot, 296; Iceland, 432; Irish, 500; Ishogo, 338; Kikuyu, 344; Lango, 360; Lapp, 426; Malagasi, 288; Magyar, 455; Manx, 504; Maori, 48; Monbuttu, 328, 330; Njempsian, 358; North American Indian, 500; Palestine, 250; Philippine, 84; Rumonsh, 463; Sakais, 88; Scotch, 496; Shan, 102; Sorb, 458; Spanish, 479; Suahili, 318; Sumatra, 84; Swiss, 463; Tajiks, 222; Tasmanian, 70; Tibbus, 386; Turki, 218; Turkish, 257; Veddas, 176; Vei, 361; Wankonde, 314; Watwa, 282; Welsh, 494, 495; Wasania, 282
Lanney, William (a Tasmanian black), 70, 71
Laos, 101
Lapland and Lapps, 424—427
Lassa, 164
Latuka, 351, 353, 354
Leks, 235
Length of life of Eskimo, 510
Lepers' Island, 40
Lesghians, 417, 419
Letto-Lithuania, 458
Liberia, 362
Liku (a Fijian garment), 2
Lipans, 536
Liu-kiu Islands, 158
Lombards, 469
Loo-choo Islands, 158
Love story of Tonga, 16, 17
Low Archipelago, 20, 24
Low Germans (or Saxons), 457
Lowlanders of Scotland (or Saxons), 495
Loyalty Islands, 20
Luris, 235, 238
Lushai, 112

M

Macusis, 560
Madagascar, 82
Magic (*see* Superstition)
Magwangwara, 310
Magyars, 453, 454, 455
Makalaka, 308
Makassars, 77
Makololo, 310
Makua, 313
Malagasi, the, 286
Malay Peninsula, 88—96
Malays, 26, 73—96, 265, 266, 282
Malietoa (a Samoan chief), 18
Mana, 11
Manchu stock (*see* Tunguses), 225
Mandans, 540
Mandarins, 129
Mandars (inhabitants of Celebes), 77
Mandingo, 361, 362
Manu (laws of), 180
Manufactures (*see also* Industries) *of*:—Anamites, 106; Dyur, 352; Fijians, 1; Javanese, 83; Kotas, 189; Malagasi, 287; Monbuttu, 328; North American Indians, 546; Tibetans, 162
Manxmen, 504
Maoris, 42
Markets of Anamese, 107
Marquesas, 20
Marriage Customs (*see also* Courtship) *of the*:—Abyssinians, 380; Andaman Islanders, 171, 172; Arabs, 246; Ashira, 338; Australians, 53; Battas, 84; Bechuanas, 303; Bongo, 353; Bosnians, 450; Bushmen of South Africa, 269; Circassians, 422; Copts, 397; Dutch, 489; Dyas, 79; Eskimo, 525; Falashas, 382; Fans, 350; Fellahin, 398; Fijians, 2, 7; Florida Islanders, 38; French, 474; Greeks, 435; Guianas, 564; Hervey Islanders, 20; Hebrews, 253, 254; Hottentots, 296; Hungarians, 455; Ilongotes, 75; Irish, 502; Karens, 119; Khonds, 192; Kirghiz-Kazaks, 220; Kotas, 189; Kurumbas, 190; Latuka, 354; Masai, 357; Negritos, 87; New Britain people, 31; New Guinea natives, 29; New Hebrides natives, 40; New Irelanders, 32; Niam-niam, 347; North American Indians, 549; Papuans, 29; Queen Charlotte Islanders, 48; Russians, 416; Samoans, 18—20; Santa Cruz people, 41; Shans, 102; Siamese, 100; Solomon Islanders, 37, 38; Somali, 373; Tahiti (Society) Islanders, 23; Tasmanians, 71; Tuaregs, 390; Turks, 438, 439; Upper Congo inhabitants, 334; Veddas, 176; Wanyamwezi, 315; Wanyoro, 327; Wapokomo, 321
Masai tribe, 354
Mashonas, 308, 309
Masi, 2
Massacres of Armenians, 261
Matabili, 306
Mayan civilisation, 555, 556
Mayas, 529
Mazurs, 458
Medicine-men of:—Australia, 60; Polynesia, 11, 12
Mekhitar, 263
Melanesia, 25
Mendi, 362
Middle Congo natives (*see* Bantu)
Military System (*see also* Army) *of the*:—Fulah, 391; Tuaregs, 390
Mining in Bosnia by Gypsies, 456
Mirdites, 436
Missionary Work among the:—Buriats, 224, 225; Chinese, 140; Fijians, 8; Formosans, 158; Giliaks, 234; in India, 198; Japanese, 152; New Guinea people (Papuans), 30, 31; New Hebrides people, 39; Nilotic group, 359; Philippine Islanders, 86; Sandwich Islanders, 24; Society Islanders, 20, 22; Solomon Islanders, 37; Tongans, 16; Waganda, 325; Veddas, 174
Mohawks, 538
Moluche, 570
Monasteries of Armenia, 263
Monbuttu Negroes (or Mangbattu), 294, 327
Money of the:—Fans, 350; Haussa, 393
Mongolia, 140—144, 176, 265
Mongols, and American Indians, 583
Monolithic dwellings and columns of Abyssinia, 378
Montaignais, 537
Montenegro and Montenegrins, 447—449
Moors and Algerians, 403—408
Morals of the:—Abyssinians, 380; Andaman Islanders, 172; Australians, 67; Chins, 118; Eskimo, 524; Gypsies, 456; Irish, 500; Maoris, 46; Nilotic group, 359; Veddas, 174
Moravians, 454
Moros, 84
Mortlock Islands, 11
Moslem religion, 240
Mostahill (law of), 398
Mound-builders of America, 551
Mushikongo, 330
Music of the:—Admiralty Islanders, 36; Bantu, 333; Eskimo, 522; Germans, 460—462; Mashonas, 308; North American Indians, 547, 548; Sakais, 92; Scotch, 496; Siamese, 101; Welsh, 495
Muskhogean stock, 540
Muyscas, 568

N

Nails (length of, in Siam), 98
Namaqua, 294, 295, 296, 298
National cohesion of the Chinese, 122
Nats (a guardian spirit), 103
Navajos, 536
Necklets (*see* Ornaments)
Negritos (or Aëtas), aboriginal inhabitants of Philippine Islands, 87
Negro (of Africa), 265
Negro race, 289
Negroes (of America), 505
Negroids, 370
Neolithic, 458, 490
Nestorians (or Nasranee), 238, 263
New Britain, 31
New Caledonia, 41
New Guinea, 25
New Hebrides, 39
New Ireland, 32, 34
New Zealand (*see* Maoris), 42
New Zealand flax mats, 44
Niam-niam Negroes (or Azandeh), 294, 343, 344, 346, 347
Nilotic Negroes, 265, 294, 326, 350—360
Nirvana (state of everlasting rest), 164
Njempsians, 350, 358
Normans, 472
North America, 529—552
Norway and Norwegians, 427—431
Nuba, 402
Nubians, 400—403
Nushegagmuts, 514
Nuy-ko (or Chinese privy council), 129

O

Oath-taking with Chins, 118
Obongo, 271
Okanda, 337
Old Age with the:—Aëtas, 87; Fijians, 6, 7; Guianas, 564; Koriaks, 235; Siamese, 100
Oneidas, 538
Onondagas, 538
Opium-smoking:—Malays, 75; Siamese, 98
Orang Benua, 73, 88
Orang Laut, 73

Orang Malayu, 73
Ordeals (trial by) among the Apingi, 340; Somali, 373
Origin of the:—Abyssinians, 374, 376; Afghans, 202; Australians, 50; Belgians, 485; Bogo, 376; Brahmans, 203; Chinese, 122; Chinese pig-tail, 125; Danakil, 372; Dutch, 488; English, 490, 491; Eskimo, 506; Falashas, 376, 382; French, 470; Gypsies, 456; Hottentots, 295; Italians, 468; Japanese, 144; Kikuyu, 344; people of Madagascar, 282, 283; Maori nation, 42, 44; Njempsians, 358; Parsis, 196; Portuguese, 480; Russians, 412, 414; Somali, 372; Suahili, 318; Tasmanians, 72; Tibetans, 161; Turks, 255; Wahuma, 322
Ornaments of the:—Ababdeh, 402; Abyssinians, 378; Admiralty Islanders, 34; Arabs, 244; Arabs of North Africa, 405; Ashango, 342; Australians, 52; Bantu, 333; Bara, 284; Batwa, 276; Berbers, 404; Berikimo, 281; Bongo, 352; Bushmen of South Africa, 268; Dahomeyans, 366; Dinka, 351; Dyas, 78; Dyur, 352; Egba, 368; Eskimo, 513; Fellahin, 397; Fijians, 2, 4; Formosans, 158; Guianas, 561, 562; Hairy Ainu, 154; Haussa, 393; Hereros, 298; Hill people of India, 179; Hottentots, 295; Ishogo, 338; Kaffirs, 299; Khasis, 198; Kikuyu, 343; Latuka, 354; Malagasi, 286; Masai, 356, 357; Monbuttu, 328; Moors, 406; Nilotic Negroes, 359; Negroes, 290; New Guinea natives, 28; New Zealand natives, 32, 34; Niam-niam, 346; Njempsians, 358; North American Indians, 544; Nyasaland natives, 312; Patagonians, 575; Sakais, 88; Sakalava, 286; Siamese, 98; Solomon Islanders, 37; Tibbus, 386; Todas, 188; Tuaregs, 390; Veddas, 173; Waganda, 325; Wagiryama, 319; Wagogo, 317; Wakamba, 321; Wapokomo, 320
Oromo, 370
Ostiaks, 230
Ovampo, 299

P

Painting bodies of Sakais, 89
Palestine, 249
Panches, 568
Pantheism, 11
Pantshen Lama, 165
Papuans, 25—48 (*see also* New Guinea)
Pariahs (or outcasts), 182
Parsis, 196, 238
Patagonians (or Tehuelches), 572
Pathans (or Afghans), 213
Patuas (*see* Juangs), 184
Paumota, 20
Persia and Persians, 235—240
Peruvians, 529
Petele (a Bantu ornament), 312
Philippine Islands, 84, 86
Pictures (*see* Art)
Picture-writing of Bushmen of South Africa, 269; of North American Indians, 546
Pigtail or queue of Chinese (origin of), 125
Pilanjana, or palanquin (a Malagasi vehicle), 287
Pitcairn Island, 23
Plongge (a knotted stick, used as an Australian magic wand), 61
Poisoned arrows of Bushmen of South Africa, 269, 278
Pokomo (*see* Wapokomo)
Poles, 454, 458
Polygamy with the:—Abyssinians, 380; Anamese, 106; Bongo, 353; Fellahin, 398; Hottentots, 296; Latuka, 354; Monbuttu, 328; New Ireland natives, 32; Nilotic group, 359; North American Indians, 549; Sakais, 91; Samoans, 19; Siamese, 100; Solomon Islanders, 37; Somali, 373; Veddas, 176; Wasoga, 326
Polynesians, 8—24
Pondo tribe of Kaffirs, 300
Population of:—Ababdeh, 402; Afridis, 214; Algonquians, 537; Anam, 104; Arabia, 241; Armenians, 260; Australians, 51; Austria-Hungary, 453; Bakhtians, 238; Basuto, 304; Belgium, 483; Bhils, 186; Bokhara, 221; Borneo, 77; Brahmans, 210; Bulgaria, 439; Buriats, 223; Bushmen of South Africa, 266; Caucasia, 417; China, 122; Chippewas, 537; Chukchis, 234; Circassians, 420; Crees, 537; Druses, 248; Egba, 368; Eskimo, 508, 509; Fakirs, 211; Falashas, 382; Fiji, 1; Finland, 422; Formosa, 158; France, 470; Germany, 457; Giliaks, 232; Gonds, 186; Greece, 433; Hairy Ainu, 153; Hereros, 298; Holland, 488; Hottentots, 294; India, 177; Ireland, 498; Isle of Man, 504; Japan, 144; Java, 83; Kalmuks, 223; Kamchadales, 235; Kara-Kirghiz, 218; Khasis, 197; Korea, 156; Koriaks, 234; Kotas, 189; Lapland, 424; Lesghians, 418; Luris, 238; Maoris, 42; Mashonas, 308; Monbuttu, 328; Mongolians, 140; Montenegro, 447; Nestorians, 238; New Hebrides, 39; Norway, 428; Ostiaks, 223; Ovampo, 299; Palestine, 250; Persia, 235; Philippine Islands, 84; Pondo, 300; Portugal, 479; Pueblo Indians, 551; Rumania, 441; Russia, 409; Sakais, 88; Samoa, 18; Samoyedes, 223; Sandwich Islands, 24; Scotland, 495; Servia, 444; Siam, 97; Siberia, 222; Spain, 475; Straits Settlements, 96; Sumatra, 83; Sweden, 431; Switzerland, 462; Syria, 248; Tahiti, 20; Tibet, 161; Tonga of South Africa, 304; Tunguses, 223; Turkestan, 217; Turkey, 436; Turkomans, 220; Uganda, 324; Wales, 494; Yakuts, 223
Porro (or secret societies of West Africa), 362
Portugal and Portuguese, 479, 480
Powhatans, 538
Praying-wheels of Tibetans, 168
Present-making of Society Islanders, 22
Priests of Polynesians, 11
Proverbs of Malays, 77
Pueblo group of North American Indians, 534
Pueblo Indians, 551, 552
Pueblo structures, 551
Puelche, 570
Pygmies, 265, 266, 280

Q

Qajar (*see* Persia), 235
Quechuas, 568
Queue or Chinese pig-tail (origin of), 125

R

Raids of Angoni, 310
Rajput caste, 182, 192, 208
Rank among the:—Anamese, 107; Australians, 58; Burmese, 110; Chinese, 129; Danes, 484, 485; Eskimo, 524, 525; Germans, 460; Malagasi natives, 288; Maoris, 46; Persians, 236; Siamese, 98; Society Islanders, 22; Solomon Islanders, 37; Swiss, 464; Tasmanians, 71
Red Karens, 119
Redeeming the first-born (custom of Jews), 252
Reincarnation of a Lama spirit, 165, 166
Reindeer and Lapps, 427
Religion among the:—Ababdeh, 402; Abyssinians, 380, 381; Anamese, 107; Arabs, 247; Armenians, 263, 264; Aryans, 200—212; Ashango, 342; Ashanti, 363; Australians, 64, 65; Austro-Hungarians, 455; Aztecs, 555; Bakongo, 332; Baluchis, 216; Batwa, 280; Belgians, 487; Berbers, 404; Bosnians, 452; Bulgarians, 441; Buriats, 224, 225; Bushmen of South Africa, 270; Cássubs, 458; Chinese, 136—140; Chins, 114; Copts, 396; Danes, 485; Dutch, 490; Druses, 249; Egba, 369; Eskimo, 526; Ewe, 364; Falashas, 382; Fanti, 363; Finns, 423; French, 475; Fur Negroes, 394; Gallas, 371; Germans, 462; Gypsies, 456; Hairy Ainu, 155; Haussa, 393; Herzegovinans, 452, 453; people of India, 198, 199; Irish, 504; Italians, 470; Japanese, 152; Kaffirs, 300; Kalmuks, 223; Kamchadales, 235; Khonds, 192; Kikuyu, 344; Kirghiz-Kazaks, 220; Kols, 184; Koriaks, 235; Kotas, 189; Lapps, 42; Lesghians, 419; Letto-Lithuanic people, 458; Liu-kiu, 160; Malagasi natives, 287; Masai, 357; Mayan, 556; Mazurs, 458; Mongols, 143; Moors, 408; Negritos, 87; Negroes, 293; New Guinea natives, 28; Njempsians, 358; North American Indians, 550, 551; Norwegians, 431; Obongo, 272; Ostiaks, 231; Parsis, 196; Persians, 240; Polynesians, 10; Russians, 416; Sakais, 92; Samoans, 18; Samoyedes, 229, 230; Scotch, 498; Servians, 446, 447; Shangallas, 381; Shans, 103; Sikhs, 192; Somali, 373; South American Indians, 554; Suahili, 318; Svans, 417; Swiss, 466, 468; Syrians, 248; Tasmanians, 72; Tibetans, 164, 168; Tongans, 16; Tuaregs, 391; Tunguses, 226; Usbegs, 222; Veddas, 476; Waganda, 325; Wagiryama, 319; Wakamba, 322; Wanyoro, 327; Wapokomo, 320, 321; Welsh, 495; Yakuts, 232
Religious festivals of the:—Ashango, 342, 343; Belgians, 487; Kalmuks, 223; Tongans, 13
Rhætians, 463
Riffs, 403
Ring (*see* Ornaments)
Ritual of Armenian Church, 264
Robinson (Augustus) and Tasmanian blacks, 69
Rosary of Tibetans, 168
Rumania and Rumanians, 441—444, 453
Russia and Russians, 409—416
Russian post-car, 411, 412
Ruthenians, 454

S

Saans (*see* Bushmen), 266
Saba (or North British Borneo), 77
Sacred animals (killing of, by Hindus), 211, 212
Sacrifices with the:—Chins, 114, 116; Dahomeyans, 366, 367; Fijians, 6, 7; Khonds, 191; Negroes 294; Polynesians, 11; Sakalava, 287; Waganda, 325; Wanyoro, 327
Saetersdal (people of valley of, Norway), 430
Sakais, 88
Sakalava, 283, 286, 287
Sahara and Soudan, 385—394
Samoa, 17—20
Samoyedes, 226—230
Sandwich Islands, 24
Santa Cruz (or Queen Charlotte) Islands, 41
Santhals, 190
Sarakole, 361

Sarawak (Raj of), 77
"Sarongs," 88
Saxons (or Low Germans), 457
Scandinavians, 422, 458, 472, 481, 491, 495
Scars self-inflicted by the Fijians, 2 (*see also* Tattooing)
Scotland and Scotchmen, 495—498
Sealing by Eskimo, 516, 522
Semangs, 88, 94
Semitic, 248, 250, 266
Serers of Senegal, 361
Servia and Servians, 444—447
Senecas, 538
Shamanism, 138, 224
Shangallas, 374, 381
Shans, 97, 98, 101
Sheikh (a head of an Arabian tribe), 245
Shereefs, 245
Shiah sect, 240
Shilluk, 351
Shintoism, 152
Shoho, 374, 380
Shops in Bosnia, 449, 450
Shoshonean stock, 540
Shulluhs, 403
Siam and Siamese, 97—104
Siberia, 222, 235
Sikhs, 192
Singpos, 111, 112
Siouan group of North American Indians, 534, 537, 538
Siva ("the destroyer"), 204, 205
Siyins, 113
Slaves and Slavery among the:—Arabs, 246; Burmese, 110; Laos, 101, 102; people of Madagascar, 288; Maoris, 46; Negroes, 293; Russians, 414, 415; Tuaregs, 390, 391; Turkomans, 220
Slavs, 453, 454, 458
Slovaks, 454
Slovenes, 454
Smoking in Russia, 416
Society Islands (or Tahiti), 20
Solomon Islands, 37
Somali, 265, 372—374
Sorcery (*see* Superstitions)
So-sin (ceremony of sacrifice), 367
Soudanese Negroes, 361, 362
Souruka (a Solomon Islander's dance), 38, 39
Southern Chili and Argentina, 569—575
Spain and Spaniards, 475—479
Stahr (a housetop of Moorish houses), 406
State of Fulah, 392
Straits Settlements, 96
Suahili, 317
Sudras (caste of), 182
Suicide among the:—Chinese, 134; Maoris, 46
Sumatra, 28, 83
Superstitions among the:—Australians, 60, 61; Bhils, 186; Chins, 116, 117, 118; East African peoples, 312; Fijians, 8; Finns, 423, 424; Giliaks, 234; Hereros, 299; Irish, 502; Kikuyu, 344; Lapps, 427; Manxmen, 504; Mongols, 143; Moors, 408; Niam-niam, 347; North American Indians, 550; Scotch, 496; Spaniards, 478; Svans, 417; Tasmanians, 72; Tuaregs, 391; Turks, 438; Wagiryama, 319
Surf-swimming of Polynesians, 10
Surgical operations and the Apingi, 339, 340
Sus, 403
Suttee, 202
Svans (or Svanithians), 417
Swabians (or High Germans), 457
Sweden and Swedes, 431
Switzerland and Swiss, 462—468
Syria, 247

T

Taboo (or tapu), 48, 509
Tagal (one of the chief tribes of the Philippine Islands), 84
Tahiti (Society Islands), 20, 22, 23
Tai, 98, 101
Taisaka, 283
Tajiks, 222, 235
Taksatte (or Chassad Kukis), 116
Tamein (or skirt), 119
Tanala, 283, 287
Tanisi, 283
Taoism, 137
Tartars, 122
Tasmania, 67—72; discovery of, 67
Tattooing and Cicatrisation among the:—Admiralty Islanders, 34: Apono, 339; Australians, 52, 53; Bangala and Bateke, 333; Bantu, 332; Bayansi, 333; Betsileo, 286; Dahomeyans, 364; Dinka, 351; Egba, 368; Eskimo, 513; Fellahin, 397; Fijians, 2; Formosans, 158; Friendly Islanders, 12—17; Gonds, 186; Guianas, 562; Hairy Ainu, 154; Ishogo, 338; Japanese, 150; Kanuri, 394; Latuka, 354; Liu-kiu, 160; Malays, 75; Maoris, 44; Negroes, 290, 292; New Ireland people, 32; New Guinea natives, 30; Niam-niam, 346; Samoans, 17; Society Islanders, 22; Solomon Islanders, 37; Tibbus, 386; Todas, 188; Tongans, 12—17; Wanyoro, 327
Tehuelches (*see* Patagonians), 572
Temples of Admiralty Islanders, 36
Teutonic, 453, 457, 462, 472, 491, 498
Thieving among the Bhils, 184
Tibbus, 385, 393
Tibetans, 161, 196
Tierra del Fuego, 576
Tien-Tsze (title of Chinese Emperor), 129
Tigrians, 376, 382
Timni (or Timneh), 362
Timor Laut (Eastern Archipelago), 73, 76
Tindalos (sorcerers), 39
Titles in Germany, 460; Persia, 236
Tobas, 576
Todas, 186
Tonga, 304, 309
Tongking, 104
Tortures and Punishments among the:—Abyssinians, 381; Chinese, 132
Tosks, 436
Totems, 58, 302, 348, 349, 364
Tow-Tow (a Tongan religious festival), 13, 14
Trading of the:—Congo tribes, 331; Wakamba, 321
Truganina (a Tasmanian black woman), 70
Tshi, 363, 364
Tsongkapa (one of the heads of Lamaism), 165
Tuaregs, 385, 386—391
Tubuai, 20
Tunguses, 225
Tupi, 567
Turkana, 351, 354
Turkestan, 217—221
Turkey and Turks, 256, 436—439
Turkomans, 217
Tuscaroras, 528
Tushilange (*see* Bashilange)
Tynwald (legislature of Isle of Man), 504
Tziganes, 456

U

Uganda (king of), 324, 325
Uled-Naïl, 405
Umiak (an Eskimo canoe), 516
Usbegs, 221

V

Vaïshyas (caste of), 182
Valencians, 478
Vapour baths of Russians, 409, 410
Vaudois, 464
Vazimba, 286
Vedas (hymns), 200, 202, 205
Veddas of Ceylon, 172
Venezuelan people, 558—566
Vishnu ("the preserver"), 204, 205
Vodka (a Russian drink), 415

W

Wadai people, 394
Wadoa, 316
Waganda, 265, 324, 326
Wagiryama, 318
Wagogo, 317
Wahuma, 322, 326
Wakamba, 321
Wake (an Irish funeral custom), 502
Wakhutu, 316
Wakisesa, 359
Wakwafi, 358
Wales and the Welsh, 494, 495
Walloons, 458, 485
Wambuttu, 275
Wanderobbo, 282
Wangindo, 310
Wankonde, 313, 314
Wanyamwezi, 314, 315
Wanyoro, 326
Wapianas, 558
Wapokomo, 319
War Customs with:—Australians, 54; Samoans, 18 (*see also* Army and Military system)
War with Tasmanian blacks, 69
Warraus, 558, 559
Wasagara, 316
Wasania, 282
Wasoga, 326
Watuta, 310
Watwa, 282
Wayao, 312, 313
Wazaramo, 315, 316
Wazimba, 266
Weapons of the:—Abyssinians, 378; Apono, 339; Arabs, 244; Ashango, 342; Australians, 54, 55; Bakwando, 271; Bantu, 333; Bara, 284; Bechuanas, 303; Berbers, 404; Berikimo, 281; Bongo, 352; Bushmen of South Africa, 268; Dinka, 351; Dyas, 79; Dyur, 352; Eskimo, 516, 517; Fijians, 1; Gallas, 370; Guianas, 563; Haussa, 393; Hereros, 298; Hottentots, 295; Ishogo, 338; Kaffirs, 300; Kanuri, 394; Kikuyu, 343, 344; Lapps, 426, 427; Latuka, 354; Malagasi, 286; Masai, 357; Monbuttu, 328; Negritos, 87; Negroes, 292; New Caledonians, 41; New Guinea natives, 28; New Ireland natives, 32, 34; Niam-niam, 346; Nilotic Negroes, 359; Njempsians, 358; North American Indians, 544, 545, 546; Obongo, 272; Papuans, 28; Patagonians, 575; Sakais, 90; Solomon Islanders, 37; Somali, 373; Svans, 417; Tasmanians, 70; Tibbus, 386; Tuaregs, 390; Veddas, 174; Waganda, 325; Wagogo, 317; Wakamba, 321; Wanyamwezi, 315; Wanyoro, 327; Wapokomo, 320; Wazaramo, 316; Zulus, 306
Widows in:—Australia, 53; Fiji, 7
Wito, 384
Wolf-reared children, 193
Women of:—the Anamites, 106; the Arabs and Arabia, 245, 246; the Arabs of North Africa, 405, 406; the Armenians, 260, 262, 263; the Ashango, 342; Australia, 54; the Batwa, 278; the Berbers, 403; the Bongo; 352; Burma, 110; China, 124; the Chins, 112; the Croats, 454; the Dinka, 351; the Druses, 249; the Dyur, 352; the Fellahin, 397, 398; Fiji, 7; Formosa, 158; the Gallas, 370; Germany, 462; the Giliaks, 234; the Golds, 234; the Gonds, 186; the Guianas, 563; India, 198; Ireland, 500; the Juangs, 184; Kashmir, 196; the Khasis, 197; the Kirghiz-Kazaks, 220; Korea, 156; the

Kotas, 189; the Lango, 360; the Latuka, 354; the Malays, 76; the Monbuttu, 328; the Mongols, 142; Montenegro, 447, 448, 449; the Moors, 405, 406; New Guinea, 29; Persia, 237; Rumania, 442; Samoa, 18; Siam, 100; the Somali, 373; Spain, 478; squaws of North American Indians, 547; the Todas, 188; Tonga, 14; the Tuaregs, 388—390; Turkey, 438; the Wambuttu, 275; the Wapokomo, 321; the Wito, 384

Y

Yahgans, 576
Yakkos, 172
Yakuts, 231
Yao, 310, 312, 313
Yoruba people, 363, 368

Z

Zambesi tribes, 292
Zandey (*see* Niam-niam), 344
Zulus, 304—306

NOTE

The Editor (Rev. H. N. Hutchinson) wishes to offer his sincere thanks to those travellers, ethnologists, and others who have helped him to carry out his scheme. Without their kind co-operation the work of collecting photographs from all parts of the world could not have been done in the time. The pictures reproduced in this book are but a selection from the large collection which has been formed—probably the most complete collection at present existing in Great Britain. By submitting proofs of photographs to ethnologists before going to press, the Editor has been able to eliminate not a few mistakes made by photographers, owing to the careless way in which they put titles to their photographs, regardless of scientific accuracy. Half-castes are a trouble to collectors of types. The Editor's special thanks are due to Professor Keane, F.R.S., for general supervision of much of the text and titles of photographs, and to Mr. William Crooke, author of "The Tribes of the North-west Provinces," etc., for similar kind help in the chapters dealing with India.

When travelling abroad in search of photographs, the Editor received much kind help from travellers, professors, and others. In Paris Prince Roland Bonaparte was kind enough to show his very fine collection of photographs, and to give permission to reproduce some of his types of North American Indians. In the same city, Prof. Hamy, Dr. Vernaux, Prof. Gaudry, and Dr. Topinard all rendered valuable assistance. Dr. J. Szombathy, of Vienna, most kindly sent the Editor a number of his valuable photographs of Samoyedes; Drs. Paul and Fritz Sarasin also sent some of their unique photographs of the Veddas of Ceylon; Prof. Gustav Fritsch has sent some rare photographs of Bushmen; Dr. Paul Hyades (editor of the "Mission Scientifique du Cap Horn") has sent many Fuegian types; Dr. Ehrenreich, photographs from South America; Dr. A. B. Meyer, of Dresden, supplied most valuable Papuan types from his well-known albums. The Editor is also indebted to Dr. von Luschan and Dr. Stuhlmann (Berlin); Dr. Schmeltz (Leyden); Dr. Amel (Budapest); M. Labbé and M. le Baron de Baye (Paris); and the Anthropological Collection of the Muséum de Paris; Dr. Obst (Leipzig); Prof. Brinkmann and Herr Karl Hagenbeck (Hamburg).

In England special thanks are due to the Anthropological Institute, the South American Missionary Society, Dr. Grenfell of the Mission to Deep Sea Fishermen, the London Missionary Society, the S.P.G., and the Universities' Mission to Central Africa. Sir Hugh Low, K.C.M.G., most kindly lent his unique collection of Dyaks from Borneo. The Royal Geographical Society kindly gave permission to make use of their large collection, from which the Editor selected a number of valuable types from Central Asia, collected by E. Delmar Morgan, Esq., F.R.G.S. Messrs. Spencer and Gillen kindly allowed the Editor to select some examples from their large and unique collection of Central Australians. Dr. R. W. Felkin, F.R.G.S., kindly lent the whole collection of invaluable photographs taken by the late Mr. Richard Buchta in the region of Khartum. Mr. Henry Balfour, of Oxford, has also helped the Editor in many ways.

The following ladies and gentlemen have all contributed photographs. In the case of professional photographers their names are all given under the photographs reproduced:—

Admiral Sir William Acland, Bart.
Mr. J. Alldridge.
Mr. Stowell Ashwell (Antananarivo).
Mr. James Baker (Clifton), F.R.G.S.
Dr. Beddoe, F.R.S.
Mrs. Theodore Bent.
Mr. W. R. Bland.
Mrs. E. T. Cook.
Mr. Thomas Child.
Mr. H. Z. Darrah.
Rev. A. B. Fisher.
Mr. Ernest Gedge, F.R.G.S.
Dr. F. H. H. Guillemard, F.R.G.S.
Sir W. C. Hillier, K.C.M.G.
Mr. H. C. V. Hunter, F.R.G.S.
Sir Harry Johnston, K.C.B.
The late Miss Mary Kingsley.
The Rev. W. G. Lawes (New Guinea).
Mr. J. J. Lister (Cambridge).
Mr. G. C. Morant, F.R.G.S.
Rev. E. E. Nickisson.
Miss Palmer.
Mr. R. Phillips (Bristol).
Mr. J. G. Reid (Lima).
Mr. E. J. Robertson.
Mr. W. J. Roland.
Mr. H. W. Rolfe.
Colonel Sir Edward Ross, K.C.M.G.
Mr. H. Warington Smyth, F.R.G.S.
The Bishop of Tasmania.

SAINT MARY'S COLLEGE LIBRARY
0 7000 004 565 647

Date Due

APR 28
MAY 21 '48

4460 v.5